





# PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 24

*Jing Wu Hen*

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

# Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

# Synopsis

---

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

# Acknowledgement

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 2299: Drunk and Sobering Up

---

Was Lin Feng going to come back?

Lin Feng was obviously going to come back. He had contacted all his friends, how could he not come back? Of course, only someone Lin Feng could make all those people return.

They had been separated for such a long time, gathering again was a good thing. In the future, he was going to go through many hardships, more hardships. He needed to become much stronger to put pressure on all the Shrines. It was going to be dangerous. If the Life Shrine hadn't helped him, he would have died already.

As everybody was wondering when Lin Feng would come back, a young man arrived at Champion University. He looked ordinary, his Qi was ordinary. He didn't draw anyone's attention. Even those who were waiting for him didn't know he had arrived at Champion University. He even passed next to people who would have recognized him.

People didn't expect Lin Feng's comeback to be like that, he didn't draw anyone's attention.

---

The celestial Qi was still incredible at Champion University. Tiantai's headquarters were now in a park. There was a waterfall made of Qi. It was isolated from the outside world. People who were practicing cultivation weren't disturbed by anything there.

There were many people in the park right now.

Lin Feng opened the secret door to the park and entered. In the park, many people were walking, many others were seated cross-legged practicing cultivation. Many people looked at Lin Feng. He was in his real form again, smiling widely.

Behind him was a beautiful woman, Tang You You.

“You’re back!” shouted someone, breaking the calm. Lin Feng turned around and saw two people in a pavilion, Emperor Shi and Emperor Yu!

“Teachers, I’m back,” said Lin Feng, grinning happily.

“It’s good that you came back! It’s good!” said Emperor Yu, nodding continuously. Lin Feng realized that even though he had become stronger, Emperor Yu didn’t look so young anymore. He had many wrinkles. Lin Feng glanced at the crowd, remembering what everybody had gone through because of him in Ba Huang Province. He also remembered the old man from the Palace of the Medicinal Kings, who had made Emperor Yu kneel down. When he thought about that, he was suddenly furious again. Nobody could understand what it felt like.

He looked like a child when he thought about that. He remembered the good old days when his two teachers taught them cultivation. He thought of the catastrophes in Ba Huang.

Emperor Yu saw that their disciples had grown up. They were all very strong. He was very happy now, happy to see all his disciples. He wanted to shout: THEY ARE MY BELOVED DISCIPLES!

Mu Chen was extremely happy too. Emperor Yu and Mu Chen kept beaming, as if their faces might split.

Lin Feng looked over at Jun Mo Xi, Lang Ye, Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, Ruo Xie, Jiang Mang, Tantai, Huang Fu Long, and he said, “You You, do you have alcohol?”

“It’s ready for you!” said Tang You You, laughing. She took out bottles one after another.

Lin Feng took them and announced to everybody, “Today, we’re going to drink!”

“Let’s drink!” agreed Jun Mo Xi, walking forwards. He glanced at Lin Feng, Tang You You, and Huang Fu Long, “Unfortunately, we never found Fei Yang.”

“He must be fine,” Lin Feng smiled. He threw bottles of alcohol at everybody. Everybody caught at least one.

The bottles all broke open. Huang Fu Long downed his alcohol, his cheeks turned red and he said, “Time flies, so many years have passed. Let’s drink!”

All those years had passed in the twinkling of an eye. He remembered, back in the days when he hoped he’d get married to Tian Chi Xue. Now, he felt old. Time was cruel and spared nobody.

“Let’s drink!” echoed Jun Mo Xi, raising his bottle and downing his alcohol. His cheeks felt numb. “How awesome,” said Jun Mo Xi. So much time had passed, he hadn’t allowed himself to rest for a very long time. He had focused on becoming stronger.

Lang Ye looked at all his friends and smiled. He downed his alcohol without saying anything.

Very quickly, everybody was drunk and it smelled like booze everywhere. Bottles popped one after another. Tang You You kept throwing bottles at people.

—

Time passed. People didn’t talk so much, simple glances were enough. Empty bottles covered the ground. Huang Fu Long raised his head and laughed frantically, “We finished all the alcohol!”

“There’s always alcohol left!” said Jun Mo Xi laughing loudly, “To Tiantai!”

“Haha, Jun Mo Xi, you and Lang Ye should join Tiantai! To Tiantai!” said everybody, raising more bottles and downing them, then throwing the bottles on the ground.

Lin Feng looked at everybody, he was seated on the ground. Mu Chen and Emperor Yu were seated on the ground, too. Lin Feng smiled and said owlishly, “Teacher, that alcohol is strong, isn’t it?”

“It’s quite strong, indeed,” said Mu Chen nodding and smiling.



He was drunk already.

“Have a good rest, don’t worry about anything,” said Lin Feng smiled, before laying down on the grass and looking up at the sky. There were white clouds, the waterfall was filled with celestial Qi. Everything was perfect. He was smiling happily. Today was carefree, they just got drunk and forgot their worries.

“Sleep!” everybody finally laid down. Everything was spinning, everybody closed their eyes and started sleeping.

They could hear the sound of the waterfall. It became cooler outside and calm. Jing Xiao Yue was lying in Mu Chen’s arms, Tang You You walked over to Lin Feng and smiled. She glanced at Yun Qing Yan, who had tried to get Hou Qing Lin and Ruo Xie drunk, but now she was drunk, too.

They had a perfect day. All these people were the pride of Champion University. If anyone had seen all them all lying around drunk, they would have been flabbergasted.

---

The next day, early in the morning, it was quite chilly. Lin Feng opened his eyes and glanced around. Most people were still sleeping. Jun Mo Xi was seated on a stone chair.

“Mo Xi, why didn’t you bring Xiao Die?” Lin Feng asked Jun Mo Xi.

Jun Mo Xi smiled wryly and said, “Lin Feng, how long will we need to live to reach the very top of cultivation?”

Lin Feng was surprised and asked, “Did anything happen?”

“Xiao Die and I have been in love for a long time. But because of cultivation, I don’t keep her with me, we only meet once in a while. As I become stronger, the distance between her and me gets more and more important. Even though she loves me, a certain distance is created,” murmured Jun Mo Xi sighing.

Lin Feng was impressed and said, “Xiao Die is a good girl.”

“Yes. And she doesn’t want to make me feel tired. She’s sad. I wish she were strong, she’d be able to travel with me that way,” said Jun Mo Xi slowly, “I’ve thought of giving up cultivation for her, and living an ordinary life with her in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. But I can’t. My dream is to become a strong cultivator. If I bumped into someone strong and I couldn’t protect my close ones? How can you live if you’re weak anyway?”

“Do your best to give up everything and quickly reach the top, and then you can meet her again. Then, you’ll be free and unfettered,” said Mu Chen, standing up slowly, “It’s your best choice, you can’t do like me and give up cultivation.”

“Maybe,” said Jun Mo Xi with a smile. Lin Feng said nothing. Everybody had different purposes in life. Jun Mo Xi had to make his own decisions.

People gradually woke up. They had sobered up a little.

“Teacher, I want to create a sect in the Holy City and call it Tiantai,” Lin Feng said to Mu Chen and Emperor Yu.

“Now?” Emperor Yu was stupefied, “Is it the right time?”

“Yes. Tiantai is strong already. We have many great emperors. We can’t expand without doing so. Besides, I will get rid of some obstacles, and Champion University will support us,” Lin Feng smiled.

Emperor Yu and everybody else were astonished. How scary and wild an idea!

“I’m going to see the Ancestors of Champion University to tell them about this. The Holy City will become our headquarters,” Lin Feng grinned. He had always wanted Tiantai to reign over the world!

# Chapter 2300: Hunting!

---

In the Holy City, the Ji Clan, the Ying Clan and the other Ancient Holy Clans had suffered losses back in the days when Lin Feng had killed some of their people, but they were still among the strongest groups of the city.

However, behind the scenes, they felt under pressure. For example, the Ying Clan was going through difficult times because of Xiao Wu Tian, who kept oppressing them and chasing Ying Cheng.

Ying Cheng had already become a Celestial Emperor. He was strong, but Xiao Wu Tian had become a Saint Emperor. He could easily oppress Ying Cheng.

Of course, the Ying Clan had chased Xiao Wu Tian many times, but a Saint Emperor wasn't easy to kill. Therefore, Xiao Wu Tian wasn't dead, and he continued hunting Ying Cheng. He had nearly killed him a few times, too. Luckily, the Ying Clan had granted Ying Cheng some life-saving items.

The Ji Clan was also going through difficult times. They remembered Lin Feng hated them. It had started with Ji Wuyou, and then had continued getting more and more intense. They had even sent some strong cultivators to kill Lin Feng back then.

Nowadays, the Ji Clan didn't really care about Lin Feng. They still had some people who paid attention to him, and kept track of his whereabouts regularly. They were scared of him now. They knew that he had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They also knew that he had become a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine, which terrified them.

After that, they had lost track of him. He had disappeared. They could only hope that he had died abroad. Lin Feng's statue in Champion University only reminded them that Lin Feng could come back someday.

Many people appeared in their territory. They weren't from the Holy City. They had appeared there during the night. But because they dared mix with the crowd, they drew people's attention. They were everywhere in the territory of the Ji Clan.

—

A few people were chatting in a restaurant.

“The Ji Clan is like that too. They're an Ancient Holy Clan, but are they among the strongest groups?” asked someone. There were some young people from the Ji Clan there drinking. The young man was making fun of them.

The members of the Ji Clan looked at him coldly and swore, “Who are you, Your Excellency? How dare you humiliate the Ji Clan?”

The young man who spoke was wearing black clothes, he said indifferently, “I humiliate the Ji Clan, so what?”

The restaurant became eerily silent. Someone dared humiliate the Ji Clan there. Why provoke them?

The members of the Ji Clan stood up and slowly walked towards him, releasing an ice-cold Qi.

“Kneel down and apologize!” demanded one of them coldly.

“You want me to kneel down?” the young man frowned. Demon lights glittered in his eyes. His Qi was terrifying. The young people of the Ji Clan suddenly felt cold and scared. The people next to that young man in black clothes didn't even raise their heads.

“If you don't kneel down, we'll kill you!” vowed the member of the Ji Clan. He released oppressive Qi. At the same time, the young people at the table raised their heads, their eyes filled with murder. The members of the Ji Clan were suddenly terrified.

“Die!” said all the people at the same time. They released Death intent together. The faces of the young people of the Ji Clan turned

grey. They all released as much Qi as they could.

A strong wind started blowing. The young man in black clothes moved swiftly. At the same time, the other people released death cosmic energies. Energies began to conflict loudly. The skull of a young man of the Ji Clan exploded, he died instantly. The young man in black clothes looked as if nothing had happened. He sat down again.

At that moment, the atmosphere became as cold as death.

In the blink of an eye, a young man of the Ji Clan had been killed.

The other young people of the Ji Clan were astonished. They wanted to kill these people. They all jumped forwards to attack.

“Die!” said a voice coldly. Very quickly, many corpses appeared in the restaurant. They were from the Ji Clan. There were a lot of them, but they were now softly lying on the ground, dead. Only one of them hadn’t fought, he was trembling in fear.

They were all dead. None of them were left.

He looked at the young man in black clothes before turning around and running away. He was thinking he had to run away quickly, otherwise, these people would kill him to prevent him from talking. But he overestimated himself.

“Those people are audacious!” The crowd was astonished and shaken. Who were these people in black clothes? They were very strong, they could easily kill people of the Ji Clan who had the same cultivation level, and they weren’t scared of the Ji Clan and the consequences.

“If they don’t run away quickly, some strong cultivators from the Ji Clan will come and avenge those young people,” said someone in the restaurant. But the people in black didn’t seem to feel unsafe. They were still sitting there, motionless.

As the crowd had expected, some great emperors from the Ji Clan arrived quickly and destroyed the restaurant from the top down.

Destructive Dao invaded the atmosphere.

“Who are you? Talk!” demanded a great emperor of the Ji Clan of those emperors in black clothes. Those people just raised their heads and looked at them, remaining silent.

“You want to die!” shouted the great emperor furiously. He descended from the sky.

A silhouette rose up instantly to counter, his fist raised.

“Great Punch of Destruction!” shouted the strong cultivator of the Ji Clan. However, a pitch-black demon Dao fist destroyed his Destructive Dao, and continued moving towards him. He shouted desperately as the fist crashed onto his body and blew him apart. He died instantly.

Everybody was astonished. The one who had just killed the great emperor went back to his seat. He looked undisturbed, as if nothing had happened.

“We’re in the territory of the Ji Clan here,” thought the crowd. They were speechless. How arrogant! They understood that this wasn’t over. The Ji Clan just hadn’t thought that a great emperor would die so quickly against these people. Their foes weren’t weak this time!

As they thought that, in the distance, more Qi was coming in waves. A group of strong cultivators appeared, their Qi rising to the skies.

The group of people in the restaurant rose up into the air and released bestial Qi. The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan stopped instantly. They shouted, “Who are you?”

Clouds surged up, and white wings appeared. The crowd couldn’t see the strong cultivators of the Ji Clan anymore. Those wings covered the sky. People’s hearts started pounding.

“Ah!...” someone screamed. Blood splashed. The beasts moved in all directions and all the strong cultivators of the Ji Clan

disappeared.

The crowd was astonished and shaking. The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan didn't even have time to react. They finally realized that those people hadn't killed some of their people randomly, it was a plan! They had come to slaughter people from the Ji Clan!!!

People's hearts pounded violently when they realized that these people had come to hunt people from the Ji Clan, an Ancient Holy Clan!

They were terrifyingly strong. Who were they? What was really happening?

# Chapter 2301: Who Wants to Destroy the Ji Clan

---

By the time everybody realized what was going on, the beasts in dark clothes had already disappeared.

That place was the territory of the Ji Clan. In every restaurant in their territory, there were traces of the dark fighters. In several places, people were being or had been slaughtered. Quickly, everybody knew about it.

Many people in charge of managing the clan reported it to those higher up in the hierarchy. Groups of people kept coming into the main hall of the Ji Clan.

Someone rushed in, looking alarmed and bowed hurriedly.

“Speak,” said Ji Yuan coldly.

That person raised their head and said to Ji Yuan, “Ji Feng Shi’s group has been killed, none remain.”

Ji Yuan looked glum. Their people were getting slaughtered all around their territory. Some Celestial Emperors had even been killed! Ji Yuan was extremely worried.

“Has anyone assessed the situation?” asked Ji Yuan coldly.

The one who had just arrived pulled a long face.

“Speak!” said the leader of the Ji Clan.

“It’s a group of cruel murderers. They came here to kill our people. They are terrifyingly strong, but we don’t know who they are. They are brutal and violent. They’re already everywhere in the Ji Clan’s territory,” he answered, lowering his head. Ji Yuan was furious, his Qi emerged from his body.

“You’re saying that a very strong group wants a war against the Ji Clan?” said Ji Clan. He didn’t even dare think about that. The Ji



Clan had existed in the Holy City for such a long time. Someone wanted to start a war against them?

Nobody dared imagine the consequences.

That person lowered his head, he didn't dare speak. But from what he had witnessed, that was the case. It was impossible to know who those people were, and they hadn't left. Worse, there were more and more of them in the Ji Clan's territory. They were everywhere, slaughtering people from the Ji Clan.

A strong wind started blowing. A silhouette flickered and appeared in the main hall. Ji Yun Cong looked at Ji Yuan, "I've heard something terrible was happening?"

"Uncle." Ji Yuan's looked at him, his mouth wide open. He was nervous and finally said, "Some mysterious group has encircled our clan. Many people have died already."

"What did you say?" Ji Yun Cong was astonished. Some people had encircled their clan?

"A few Celestial Emperors have died, too," continued Ji Yuan, lowering his head.

Explosive Qi emerged from Ji Yun Cong's body. "Inform Ancestor Dang Tian, make the gong clang. Call everyone who's outside back. Activate the great deployment spell!"

Ji Yuan's face stiffened, he said, "Uncle, is it that bad?"

The gong could be heard in all the small worlds of the Ji Clan. It could also wake everybody up, even those who were practicing in isolation. The great deployment spell could defend against invaders.

"Ji Yuan, those people have encircled the Ji Clan, an Ancient Holy Clan, do you think they're here to play games?" said Ji Yun Cong. It was an unparalleled catastrophe!

Ji Yuan's mouth twitched. Ji Yun Cong's way of dealing with the

situation was natural. But how many people dared think that they were really in danger? They were an Ancient Holy Clan, and had been in the Holy City for such a long time, who would dare think they could destroy them?

“Go now!” said Ji Yun Cong. Ji Yuan nodded and left. After a short time, the gong clanged, and everybody heard it in the Ji Clan. All the small worlds of the Ji Clan trembled.

—

A very old senior official of the Ji Clan was in his own small world, practicing cultivation. At that moment, the gong made all the small worlds tremble. He suddenly opened his eyes and golden empty space energies flashed. He suddenly looked stupefied. \*The alarm gong just clanged? It hasn’t clanged for so many years...”

At the same time, in another small world, an old man with white hair sleeping in the grass suddenly opened his eyes. He had many wrinkles, he was very old, but his Qi was terrifying. His eyes looked as sharp as swords. He had lived for a long time, and he hadn’t managed to become a Saint. Now someone was attacking his clan...

Everybody in the Ji Clan was panicking.

At that moment, the other clans of the Holy City didn’t know anything, because everything had happened so suddenly. Powerful clans were confident and less vigilant. For example, did the Shrines need to think about what would happen in case of sudden attack?

No. Therefore, when someone else attacked suddenly and by surprise, it was difficult to react quickly.

A few hours later, many people were panicking because there were corpses everywhere, and nobody was picking them up. After people were killed, nobody came to avenge them. It was something unimaginable.

The Ji Dang Tian's Ancestor, Ji Dang Tian, looked glum. A short time before, a Saint Emperor of the Ji Clan had gone on a trip and had been killed. He had sensed bestial Qi. Now everybody sensed bestial Qi within the Ji Clan. The one who had killed the Saint Emperor and those who were slaughtering their people on their territory were probably from the same group.

But the Ji Clan didn't understand who their enemies were, was under great pressure.

Finally, Qi enveloped the whole clan. Everybody sensed a terrifying bestial Qi and death strength. They had the impression they were all going to die...

"Who dares offend the Ji Clan?" shouted Ji Dang Tian, extremely loudly. Everybody heard him within the territory of the Ji Clan. They didn't even know who their enemy was.

A silhouette rose up in the air after a short time, accompanied by faint rumbles of thunder. That person's face was pitch-black. He looked expressionless while slaughtering people from the Ji Clan with explosive bursts of power.

It was an incredible thing to see, the buildings of the Ji Clan were turning to ashes one after another. Someone was trying to wipe the Ji Clan off the map of the Holy City.

At the same time, strong cultivators had sealed the whole territory. Nobody could enter or leave.

The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan saw that, of course, and their hearts were pounding. How terrifying! Something horrible was happening in the Ji Clan! The enemies wanted to destroy them!

"Oh my! What is going on?," murmured a Celestial Emperor. He released his godly awareness and inspected the region. He couldn't believe his eyes.

All the members of the Ji Clan were trembling. Had the Ji Clan

offended some terrifying cultivators? Why did these people want to destroy them?

Ji Dang Tian ordered some strong cultivators to protect the inner palaces. He glanced around and looked at the faces of the members of the Ji Clan, feeling extremely sad. His poor kin... they might be destroyed for real...

Their enemies were extremely fast. They had already destroyed everything across huge distances. Now they were moving towards the depths of the clan.

Finally, Ji Dang Tian saw them. He rose up into the air and asked, "Who wants to destroy our clan? Can we at least know that before fighting?"

"Continue killing them," ordered another voice coldly. Their enemies started entering the castles. Ji Dang Tian gazed into the distance and saw someone in black clothes, he couldn't see his face.

"Activate the great deployment spell!" said Ji Dang Tian coldly. Dazzling lights filled the air. The inner city of the Ji Clan was shining brightly. Destructive strength rolled forth.

Ji Dang Tian shouted, "Let's kill them!"

—

The battle suddenly became explosive. It was a great war. As it started, the other clans of the Holy City finally started hearing about it. A mysterious group had started a war against the Ji Clan, they wanted to destroy the Ji Clan!

Many people from different Ancient Holy Clans gathered together. Among them, some people who had tried to kill Lin Feng back in the days were present: Yu Wen Tai Shan, Ying Zi Chu, and Pei Chong Yang.

"Do you know who the intruders are?" asked Ying Zi Chu.

"We don't, the territory has been sealed. A great battle is taking

place in the inner part of the Ji Clan. The atmosphere is sealed so we can't hear anything, but a terrifying group wants to destroy the Ji Clan," reported Pei Chong Yang, looking grave and stern. If the invaders could pose a threat to the Ji Clan, they could pose a threat to their Ancient Holy Clans, as well!

Who wanted to destroy the Ji Clan?

And did they intend to destroy the Ji Clan only? Or were other people in danger?

# Chapter 2302: The Ji Clan's Destruction

---

The battle in the Ji Clan was explosive. The weakest people on the battlefield were high-level emperors, the Ji Clan had sent any people weaker than that to the small worlds. They would have died instantly otherwise.

Their mysterious enemies were divided into two groups. One of the armies looked like a group of gods from Hell, their death strength was incredible, their death cosmic energies killed many people instantly. The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan didn't even have time to fight against them, because each time they got close, the death strength killed them instantly. Lin Feng knew what it felt like to face such an army because he had experienced it in the Celestial Country on the battlefield.

The other army was an army of beasts. Bestial Qi dashed to the skies around them. They didn't use spells or techniques, they just crushed their enemies with pure strength. Both armies were complementary.

The Ji Clan had existed for a very long time, and was strong, that went without saying. Their great deployment spell was destructive, and they also controlled Destructive Dao. Within the great deployment spell, their strength was intensified. But even with the help of the deployment spell, at the same cultivation level, the members of the Ji Clan realized that their efforts were still in vain. The great deployment spell didn't gain them the advantage. It made them realize that even Ancient Holy Clans were not invincible!

Everybody in the Holy City considered the Ji Clan extremely strong, but when facing such an army, they felt extremely weak!

The army of gods of hell was composed of geniuses Lin Feng had captured in the Celestial Country, then turned into Demon Puppets. They were the most talented geniuses of the Celestial

Country. After capturing them, Lin Feng had made them study all sorts of Ancient scriptures, including the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. Lin Feng hadn't spared any efforts; since great emperors couldn't go to the Celestial Country anymore, Lin Feng had made his Demon Puppets practice in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Regarding the bestial army, it was composed of heroic beasts of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world. They were terrifyingly strong. Of course, Lin Feng hadn't brought the best of the best, such as Saint Emperors, he made them go to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds because his clone had already heard that the Fire Shrine wanted Qing Feng to get married to one of their members. He had also informed the Fortune Shrine that those people were coming, and that they had to get prepared. The people he had taken to the Holy City were enough to do what he wanted there.

Great emperors kept dying, even some great emperors in Lin Feng's army. However, he looked unmoved. He wanted the strongest heroes, and those who survived were the strongest ones. He needed to have heroes on his side so that he'd be able to deal with the Shrines someday.

Someone prevented Ji Dang Tian from attacking Lin Feng. The strong cultivators on Ji Dang Tian's side were also under control. However, Ji Dang Tian was staring at Lin Feng, who he believed was the leader of the invading troops.

At that moment, Lin Feng finally moved, he turned into a beam of light and Death intent filled the air around him.

People exploded one after another. Great Emperors, Celestial Emperors, all were surrounded by death strength, and then they turned into corpses and fell from the sky. As they fell, other intruders crushed their bodies to mush.

"That's perfect Dao strength?" Ji Dang Tian's face turned

deathly pale. The mysterious cultivator in black clothes had finally attacked, and killed so many people at once!

“Ancestor, kill him!” shouted Ji Dang Tian furiously. In the distance, an old man with white hair and many wrinkles came out of a castle. When he looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng had the impression he was carrying the whole world on his shoulders.

“Perfect Destructive Dao!” Lin Feng frowned. That person’s Dao had reached the maximum level!

“Die!” said Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with Death intent, he stared at the old man. Death intent started corroding the old man’s life instantly; he was very old, already at the end of his life, death had already started corroding his body.

“Those who kill the members of the Ji Clan should die!” said the old man. After that, explosion sounds spread in the air. Beasts exploded one after another. His attack was terrifying.

That’s the trump card of the Ji Clan? An old man who’s about to die?, thought Lin Feng with a frown. He and a puppet threw themselves at the old man.

“Piss off!” shouted the white-haired old man. He punched out in the puppet’s direction. There was an explosion, and the puppet was smashed away. However, it didn’t explode, and it wasn’t injured, either.

“That’s...” the old man was astonished. But at that moment, Lin Feng landed in front of him and a perfect death Dao shot towards him, while a sword also appeared in front of him. The old man was startled; even though he was terrifyingly strong and controlled Dao at the highest level, he had failed to become a Saint, he was too old. He couldn’t endure much strength anymore. When he saw Lin Feng’s Death Dao and deadly sword, he felt desperate, and couldn’t dodge.

The old man shouted out and moved. However, Lin Feng’s



Ruler's Sword crashed onto his body and destroyed it thoroughly. However, his soul abandoned his body, and he escaped.

"I don't know how the Ji Clan offended such a strong cultivator as you, but I, Ji Yao Shan, will not let you destroy the Ji Clan that easily! Even if you're talented, today, you'll have to die!" said the blurry soul. Dao power filled the air. It was aimed at anyone who wasn't a member of the Ji Clan. It was an incredible thing to see.

"Ancestor!" Ji Dang Tian looked at the old man and shuddered with fear and despair. Who was this enemy? The old man had decided to sacrifice himself to kill their enemies.

The soul darted towards Lin Feng. The earth and the sky were trembling as Lin Feng sensed a terrifying soul strength surround him. Lin Feng raised his head and saw a gigantic and terrifying silhouette. The old man wanted to use his most powerful attack against him. It felt like the earth and the sky were attacking him.

"Die!" shouted the silhouette furiously. Lin Feng sensed his soul tremble; he hadn't underestimated the trump card of the Ji Clan!

Lin Feng flashed forwards, his Qi boiling. He released millions of death stamps. His enemy's soul had fused together with the earth and the sky, but Lin Feng could still attack him. The old man was taking a huge risk to try to kill Lin Feng!

Nine Words appeared around Lin Feng, and he turned into a demon. He stood his ground steadfastly, doing all he could to resist that terrifying destructive strength.

Boom boom boom!

Lin Feng coughed up blood, but continued attacking. He kept releasing death stamps. The atmosphere around him distorted, and everything around him smelled like death. His enemy was weak; he was too old, and was already approaching death before this battle.

Terrifying explosions echoed nonstop. Lin Feng sensed a

destructive punch move towards him. He shouted furiously and rose up into the air again. He called out with a sigh, “Rest in peace.”

The old man heard Lin Feng sigh. That sigh was the result of someone who had lived for a very, very long time, someone who had experienced all the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ lives and his own, and the countless ones he had dreamt of. Lin Feng condensed more strength, he used an attack he had created himself after reading the scriptures in the Fortune Shrine. He could see his enemy’s consciousness and soul. He wanted to destroy them thoroughly.

His enemy’s soul became much weaker. Millions of death stamps continued assaulting him. His destructive strength kept weakening. Finally, he sighed and asked, “Tell me who you are. Why do you want to destroy the Ji Clan?”

He knew that it was too late, that the Ji Clan was going to be destroyed no matter what. He also thought of his life, and when he was young. If he hadn’t been so old, he would have killed Lin Feng, but now it was too late. He couldn’t stop Lin Feng!

The Ji Clan was doomed!

“Who are you?” said Ji Dang Tian. He was injured too, and staring at Lin Feng. He looked furious and shouted, “Why do I have the feeling you’re from Champion University?”

“I told you, someday, if I became strong, I’d destroy the Ji Clan. Now, I came back for that reason,” said Lin Feng indifferently. The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan were staring at him, the man in black clothes.

Lin Feng raised his head and took off his costume. He threw it away and showed his real face.

“How is this possible?” Ji Dang Tian didn’t believe his eyes. He feared that Lin Feng would become strong in the future, but he

hadn't thought it would be in such a short time! How was this possible?

“Lin Feng!” The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan were all astonished and staring at him. Lin Feng, a moment before, had fought against the Ancestor of their clan!

“It's me, Lin Feng. Back then, the Ji Clan harassed me and tried to kill me. Today, I'm here to destroy the Ji Clan,” stated Lin Feng pitilessly.

# Chapter 2303: Opening a Sect

---

“Today, I’m here to destroy the Ji Clan,” said Lin Feng coldly. Ji Dang Tian was trembling. Things had happened so fast. Lin Feng’s allies all showed their real faces. Ji Dang Tian was astonished and said, “As expected, people from Champion University. Ancestor Shi Tian!”

“Back then, you encircled Champion University, you wanted to kill our disciple. Ji Dang Tian, do you remember that?” said Ancestor Shi Tian coldly. Ji Dang Tian was astonished. Champion University had come back to get their revenge, and helped Lin Feng settle accounts with them. Champion University hadn’t forgotten how humiliating that was.

“So the Ji Clan was the first one,” said Ji Dang Tian. He said, “You sealed the whole territory because you didn’t want the three other Ancient Holy Clans to join hands to fight against you. If some Saint Emperors show up though, Champion University is going to be in trouble.”

Ji Dang Tian shouted furiously, “Go and kill!”

He suddenly rose up in the air, but at that moment, the puppet reappeared and punched him. The earth and the sky trembled. Ancestor Shi Tian grunted coldly. He rose up into the air as well. Lin Feng released death stamps in an endless tide. His Death Dao also filled the air. Everything became black as death around them.

The wind howled furiously around Lin Feng. The Ji Clan’s Ancestor’s soul condensed into a silhouette again and headed towards Lin Feng. He was struggling not to die.

“You’re already about to die, why are you still here?” said Lin Feng coldly. A terrifying absorbing strength appeared, a dragon started chanting. The absorbing strength filled the air, the soul strength turned into a beam of light and penetrated into Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng coughed up some blood, but remained calm. He

absorbed the old man's soul thoroughly.

The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan looked desperate.

Lin Feng's Death Dao reached across the sky. The strong cultivators of the Ji Clan looked devastated, collapsing one after another. Back then, they had sent some great emperors to kill Lin Feng, and now he was killing them all. Nobody had thought such a thing would happen back then!

---

The Ji Clan was wiped off the map of the Holy City by a mysterious group of strong cultivators, in less than one day!

Ashes from bodies and burning buildings flew in the wind above the Holy City. Many people were standing on the former territory of the Ji Clan, but there was nothing left; no more lofty buildings, no more magnificent palaces, no more life. An Ancient Holy Clan had been destroyed between one day and the next.

"I can't believe it's true," said someone standing above the ruins. He downed a bottle of alcohol and burped. "Who could have destroyed an Ancient Holy Clan?"

Many people were shaking. In only one day, the Ji Clan had been destroyed. Everybody already knew about it in the Holy City. Many people couldn't believe it their eyes, though. Many people who lived far away even learned about that and came to check. Something incredible had happened in the Holy City!

Many people from all sorts of Ancient Holy Clans came to see the ruins. How scary... Many wondered aloud, "What could we do if that mysterious group of people attacked us? Would we end up like the Ji Clan?"

Many people felt a unseen pressure now.

---

A few ancestors gathered together in the celestial mountains. Six

people were playing chess.

“The Ji Clan has been destroyed,” said an Ancestor, putting down his piece. He sounded calm, but his voice also trembled a little.

“Shi Tian and Xuan Tian helped. I’ve heard that Lin Feng killed an Ancestor of the Ji Clan,” said another Ancestor. He was still shocked.

“First at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and in less than twenty years, he can kill Saint Emperors. Had any of you ever thought such a terrifying cultivator would study at Champion University someday?”

“Shi Tian said they will probably attack the three other Ancient Holy Clans. I think they want to do it faster this time, so they will just destroy all the obstacles,” said another Ancestor. Everybody was dumbstruck.

At that moment, someone threw a piece away, stood up, turned around, and stated, “I’m going to see Shi Tian.”

The others were startled. One of them stood up and said, “They must need people, Champion University can do things big this time.”

He also left.

Very quickly, only two Ancestors were left, Ancestor Zhu Tian and Ancestor Dong Tian. They were good friends.

“Zhu Tian, back in the day, you supported Ji Chang and you didn’t like Lin Feng that much,” said Ancestor Dong Tian. Ancestor Zhu Tian’s face stiffened. It was true. He just remained silent, though.

“Yesterday, I learned from Xuan Tian, after persisting, that they intend to do something for Lin Feng after the whole situation calms down,” said Ancestor Dong Tian. “Therefore, old buddy, think carefully. You missed an opportunity because you lack a

sense of judgement. Now it's an opportunity for Xuan Tian, and his friend, Lin Feng, is an opportunity."

Ancestor Dong Tian sighed and stood up. He gazed into the distance and said, "Admitting we were wrong is nothing shameful."

After that, he disappeared and left Ancestor Zhu Tian alone to just blankly look at the chessboard.

---

The Ji Clan had been destroyed for a few days already. Many Ancient Holy Clans were getting ready to be attacked. They also dispatched people to investigate that group of terrifying cultivators. However, that terrifying group was dangerous and cruel, each time they noticed someone was investigating them, they killed them mercilessly. The Ancient Holy Clans couldn't even avenge those they lost...

---

It was night, and many strong cultivators from Champion University entered the Yu Wen Clan, including some Ancestors. The Yu Wen Clan had already prepared.

They wiped out everything on their way. Very quickly, the Yu Wen Clan, who had joined hands with the Ji Clan in the past, was almost completely destroyed.

Yu Wen Tai Shan roared furiously and glanced around at the strong cultivators who were encircling him.

"Why? Who are you?" asked Yu Wen Tai Shan, all covered with blood. He kept shaking and shouting. The people in front of him looked mysterious, their faces were covered. When he saw some people behind them, he suddenly laughed frantically. "Oh my, that's the will of Heaven then! I never thought such a thing would happen! It's the will of Heaven! Come!"

A mighty Qi swept out and overwhelmed him. Very quickly, Yu

Wen Tai Shan's body disappeared. After destroying the Yu Wen Clan, some people cleaned up the mess and the others went straight to the Ying Clan. Like the wind sweeps away leaves on the ground, those cultivators swept away the Ancient Holy Clan's members.

---

Three days later, some news spread in the Holy City about the Ancient Holy Clans. The Ancient Holy Clans were still worried.

The Ji Clan had been destroyed, then some other Ancient Holy Clans had followed them. Such a thing had never happened in the Holy City!

Many people were starting to think that those mysterious people were backed up by Champion University, because the Ancient Clans which had been destroyed were the Ji Clan, the Pei Clan, the Ying Clan and the Yu Wen Clan. Those four Ancient Clans, many years before, had sent some Saint Emperors and had them encircle Champion University. Such a thing had been humiliating for Champion University!

However, a spectacular palace had appeared in the Holy City, and many people gasped with amazement when they saw it.

Four Ancient Holy Clans had been destroyed and now, suddenly, a new group had appeared out of nowhere. People were astonished. After a few days, the news that it was Tiantai's new headquarters spread through the city.

Tiantai had established itself in the Holy City! They used to be a small group in Champion University, and now they were a real sect!



# Chapter 2304: Nine Cauldrons For the Champion

---

Tiantai was now a genuine sect in the city!

The news astonished everybody in the Holy City. Four incredible Ancient Holy Clans had been destroyed by a mysterious group, and now Tiantai was rising in the Holy City. Many people were wondering whether there was a connection between those two things.

Cultivators really had the power to make things change if they were strong enough. Even though it was easier for them to destroy than to create, this time, Tiantai and Champion University could do something great. Creating a sect in a short time was no problem at all. These days, Tiantai had thousands of disciples. There were also many young people with diverse backgrounds who wanted to join Tiantai.

In only seven days, incredible buildings stood lofty at the top of mountains. There was a gigantic waterfall, forests, grass. Of course, they needed more buildings, a sect was like a small country. In countries, there were many small worlds, and if Tiantai wanted, they could also create their own small worlds.

On that day, Tiantai really started rising. Many people came to congratulate them... and many other people also came to see if anything bad was going to happen or not. Tiantai, a small group which had started in Champion University, now drew everyone's attention in the Holy City.

---

There was a celestial flight of stairs, Emperor Shi and Emperor Yu were standing there, their clothes fluttering in the wind. They both smiled.

Back in the day, they had created Tiantai in order to break free

from the small world; they had done all they could, and had taken great risks. There were some disciples from Tiantai who they had never found again. They had the feeling life was just a dream. They had gone through so much.

They had never thought that someday, Tiantai would become a powerful group in the Holy City, a legendary place to people in the small world.

All their disciples were standing under them on the flight of stairs. They all looked extraordinary: brave, outstanding, and experienced, especially those standing just under them from the first batch, the direct disciples. Some people were already great emperors.

The air whistled as someone arrived.

It was a group of people carrying cauldrons. Eight people carried one cauldron, each cauldron seemed to weigh millions of jin.

“Those are strong cultivators from Champion University, great emperors!” Many people were astonished.

“Monarchic Battle Cauldrons.” A strong cultivator from Celestial Godly University frowned. His eyes glittered sharply.

“Indeed, Monarchic Battle Cauldrons,” The people from Ancient University were astonished too.

“Monarchic Battle Cauldrons are symbols of Champion University, eighty-one Monarchic Battle Cauldrons have been created. People who receive Monarchic Battle Cauldrons have much higher positions than people who have their statues in Champion University or Champions. It’s a supreme honor. Even the Ancestors of Champion University haven’t received Monarchic Battle Cauldrons,” murmured someone. Few people knew about the Monarchic Battle Cauldrons, so when they heard that, they all shivered.

The Monarchic Battle Cauldrons had an incredible meaning, so

why had they taken them out today, the day of Tiantai's inauguration into the Holy City?

There were nine Monarchic Battle Cauldrons, and great emperors were carrying them...

"Tiantai appeared in Champion University, but now they are not really part of the university anymore. They are a sect in the Holy City. However, there should be a link between them and Champion University. Champion University is giving them Monarchic Battle Cauldrons to tell everyone that Tiantai is important for Champion University, it's almost a part of them," was many people's opinion. Since when was Tiantai so important to Champion University?

"Champion University congratulates Tiantai," proclaimed a loud voice. Everybody in the Holy City heard the words.

Seventy-two great emperors were carrying Monarchic Battle Cauldrons, and they all congratulated Tiantai. However, they didn't give the cauldrons as presents, they put them in nine different locations.

"Thank you very much, Champion University!" replied Mu Chen with a wide smile. He had never thought Champion University would be so kind to them. He was also astonished when he learned how important the cauldrons were.

"You're too polite. We're all here to congratulate you as expected," said a loud voice from the horizon.

A group of strong cultivators arrived. They all looked enigmatic and unfathomable: the Ancestors of Champion University! When the crowd saw them, they shivered. It was rare to see such people, especially at the same time, and now they were all here. What was going on?

"You're too kind, Ancestors!" said Mu Chen. He was dumbstruck. He couldn't believe his eyes. He hadn't thought they'd come and congratulate Tiantai personally.

The other universities were stunned; why was Tiantai so important?

“No need to pay attention to us old people, you can continue,” Ancestor Shi Tian smiled as he moved aside. Mu Chen and Emperor Yu looked at the crowd, their disciples, and then gazed into the distance.

“From now on, Tiantai is a sect in the Holy City!” declared Mu Chen and Emperor Yu loudly. They weren’t as strong as their disciples, but they were the founders of the sect. Nobody dared say anything about that.

—

Lin Feng was among the other disciples, but he didn’t come out.

Even though a long time had passed, and even though the probability that the Shrines had people in the lower world was small, he couldn’t show himself. He couldn’t give the Shrines an opportunity to find him.

But now everything was perfect: the Ancient Holy Clans who threatened him had been destroyed, and Tiantai had been created in the Holy City. Lin Feng was really happy.

Lin Feng knew some terrifying cultivators now. The Shrines remained vigilant. Lin Feng was convinced that the Shrines didn’t want to lose their people’s lives for nothing.

The members of the Fire Shrine wanted to use Qing Feng to find him, because she had accepted getting married to one of their members to help Lin Feng. Nobody could refute her promise.

—

The eight Ancestors glanced at one another. Ancestor Shi Tian stepped forward and said, “Today, we didn’t come just to congratulate Tiantai. We also came for Champion University’s students, for the ceremony of the Great Champion.”

“Ceremony of the Great Champion?” The crowd was astonished. Back then, Lin Feng could have been a Champion, but he hadn’t, and now they wanted to declare him a Champion?

“Since Lin Feng was first and foremost one of Tiantai’s disciples, and he became a student of Champion University afterwards, now that Tiantai is here, we’ll organize the ceremony here. Apart from Lin Feng’s statue in Champion University, we’ll also have another one made of him for Tiantai. Is that alright?” Ancestor Shi Tian asked, smiling at Emperor Yu and Mu Chen.

“Of course it’s alright!” answered the two, shaking their heads and smiling. They were extremely happy. Champion University was organizing a Champion ceremony for Lin Feng!

“Good!” smiled Ancestor Shi Tian. In the distance, some people rose up in the air. A gigantic statue appeared. Many students from Champion University were behind it.

“Where should we put it?” asked Ancestor Shi Tian to Mu Chen.

“There, if possible,” said Mu Chen pointing at the center of the main public square. He was a hero to Tiantai, so that place was perfect.

“Good.” Ancestor Shi Tian smiled and waved his hand. Champion University’s students took the statue to the plaza center and slowly put it down. It was a hundred meters high.

Lin Feng smiled wryly. He hadn’t thought Champion University would do this...

“Today is the ceremony, there will be no Champion Crown, only Monarchic Battle Cauldrons. The nine Cauldrons are Lin Feng’s crowns!” said Ancestor Shi Tian. The seventy-two cultivators put the nine cauldrons in front of the statue. Lin Feng looked like a peerless and heroic warrior.

“Champion University officially announces that Lin Feng is the Champion, the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!” said

Ancestor Shi Tian loudly. The crowd shivered. He had not said Champion University, he had said the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

The members of Celestial Godly University, Ancient University, and Four Seasons University all pulled a long face. Some smiled coldly on the inside. King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? How arrogant!

“How insolent!” spoke up someone instantly. How could Champion University decide who the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was?

Could Lin Feng be considered the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds just because he had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

# Chapter 2305: Pressure

---

Calling someone the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was a bit funny actually. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was extremely vast, who could be considered its King?

And now that Champion University dared call Lin Feng the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, it meant they considered everybody else beneath their notice!

Lin Feng was astonished too, he hadn't thought they'd proclaim him as both Champion and King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds! But since they did it, he just smiled indifferently. It was just a title on top of that, and Lin Feng didn't really care about titles. Besides, Lin Feng was more ambitious than that; he didn't care about being strong in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he wanted to be at the very top, he wanted to dominate the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

However, Lin Feng was surprised because Champion University had dared call him the Champion of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, didn't they care about the other universities? The other universities were angry about it, but Lin Feng didn't care about that. His state of mind had changed, they didn't scare him anymore.

"Tiantai is nothing. They're just a small group of disciples from Champion University. Tiantai is a tiny group in the Holy City. Champion University organizing such a ceremony is a bit over the top, aren't you afraid of losing your credibility?" spat a strong cultivator of Celestial Godly University coldly. Celestial Godly University also had an incredible cultivator: Chu Chun Qiu, but they didn't organize such an ceremony for him! Of course, if Chu Chun Qiu came back to Celestial Godly University, they would organize a great party, that was obvious.

"Does it have anything to do with you?" said Ancestor Shi Tian,

turning to him. “Today, it’s Tiantai’s creation. Anyone can come to watch, nobody forced anyone to come. People who are here are here to congratulate them. If you don’t like what you see here, piss off!”

The strong cultivator of Celestial Godly University was astonished, and grimaced. Champion University and Celestial Godly University were both universities in the Holy City, and Champion University was talking to Celestial Godly University that way because of Tiantai, it was extremely humiliating!

“Good, Champion University, good! Of course, what you do has nothing to do with me. But I was just worried about you because everybody in the Holy City is going to make fun of you! Lin Feng is not even here, and not only are you offering cauldrons in his honor, but you’re also proclaiming him King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds! Don’t you feel ashamed? Your ancestors must be alive, have they ever been called King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?” retorted the strong cultivator of Celestial Godly University coldly.

The members of Celestial Godly University were all staring at him. Ancestor Shi Tian said coldly, “Tiantai and Champion University are allies. If anyone dares insult and humiliate Tiantai again, Champion University will take it personally, and we’ll kill them.”

Energies started building up with whistles. Everyone was astonished. Champion University dared act that aggressively in front of Celestial Godly University!?

As expected, the strong cultivator of Celestial Godly University shut his mouth. He couldn’t fight against the eight ancestors of the Champion University.

Ancestor Shi Tian turned around and the ancestors landed on the ground. They appeared in front of Tiantai’s disciples in a line.

“Lin Feng, Champion University proclaims you a King today,”



said Ancestor Shi Tian smiled.

Everybody was stupefied, was Lin Feng there?

Lin Feng?

Where was Lin Feng?

The crowd turned around and looked at the members of Tiantai. Was he in there?

Even the students of Champion University and many disciples from Tiantai looked for Lin Feng. Was he there?

“Lin Feng?” Some strong cultivators from various powerful groups shivered. If Lin Feng was there, it meant that he was there when the four Ancient Holy Clans had been destroyed! Back then, there were tensions between Lin Feng and them...

“Maybe the legends are true, that Champion University destroyed the four Ancient Holy Clans. They wanted to avenge Lin Feng because he’s now a disciple of the Fortune Shrine and he’s talented?” ventured some people.

Regarding the destruction of the four Ancient Holy Clans, those were details only known to insiders.

Lin Feng smiled wryly. He couldn’t hide anymore, his face changed and he raised his head, taking off his robe.

“It’s Brother Lin Feng, indeed! He looks just like that statue!”

“Brother Lin Feng, he’s back in the Holy City, and we didn’t know it!”

“How handsome. Just like the statue. And he looks extraordinarily strong!” The students of Champion University were amazed. Lin Feng was a member of Champion University, just like them. He had achieved so much, he had amazed the whole city back in the days, and now Champion University called him the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

“That wasn’t necessary, Ancestor,” said Lin Feng, shaking his

head with a smile.

“You refused to become a Champion back in the days, now you’re a King. Isn’t it great?” Ancestor Shi Tian smiled. Lin Feng was touched and moved; the Ancestors were strong and with their support, Tiantai would face less trouble. Tiantai and Champion University could become terrifying groups in the Holy City together.

“Lin Feng.” shouted someone at that moment. Lin Feng turned around and saw Ancestor Zhu Tian. Ancestor Zhu Tian said, “Back then, my sense of judgement failed me, and I failed to see how strong and talented you were. I feel guilty and ashamed. If I offended you back in the days, I’m very sorry. I’m happy that you’ve become the King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds now.”

An Ancestor of Champion University was apologizing to Lin Feng publicly!

Champion University’s disciples were astonished. Was Lin Feng that strong, powerful, and influential already?

An Ancestor of Champion University was apologizing to Lin Feng publicly.

“Don’t mention it, those were insignificant things,” Lin Feng smiled. He really didn’t take them to heart, and he had gotten rid of Ji Chang a long time ago. Now the Ancestor had apologized in front of everybody, Lin Feng couldn’t blame him for anything.

Ancestor Zhu Tian smiled in relief and nodded approval. “Lin Feng, I hope you’ll become the real King of the Continent of the Nine Clouds soon.”

Lin Feng smiled, but said nothing. The ancestors already talked to Lin Feng like someone who had the same social status. Lin Feng had become that influential.

“Lin Feng is in the Holy City!” said someone at that moment. Many new people appeared. The Ancestors of Champion

University were startled. Some of the most powerful cultivators of the other universities had arrived!

“It means that Champion University destroyed the four Ancient Holy Clans,” said a strong cultivator at that moment.

“Champion University went too far,” they said coldly. Lin Feng frowned.

“Tiantai is just a bunch of young people, and now Champion University is supporting them like this. But you’re only doing it because Lin Feng finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and is now a member of the Fortune Shrine. You’re using your students to get closer to the Shrines. How shameless.”

Those people sounded really angry, as if they were there to punish Champion University.

“Everybody, today is Tiantai’s inauguration day, can you talk about those things another time?” asked Mu Chen. The disciples of Tiantai all pulled long faces.

“Shut up! Who do you think you are to talk to me, you weakling!” said that person coldly. He released oppressive energies, which surrounded Mu Chen. Mu Chen took a few steps backwards.

“Hmph! You think that because Champion University helped you set up in the city center, you’re really strong? Don’t overestimate yourselves,” said someone else. These people had come with a goal, to confront Champion University. These last few years, because of Lin Feng’s reputation, many geniuses had decided to study at Champion University.

Now that Tiantai had been established in the Holy City, Lin Feng’s influence was expanding even more. With Champion University, they could become too influential. It would have bad consequences for the three other universities!

Therefore, they wanted to put pressure on them. Of course, they

couldn't attack Lin Feng directly, verbally or physically, because he was a disciple of the Fortune Shrine. Therefore, they didn't talk to him.

However, they didn't know that by insulting Mu Chen, they had already infuriated Lin Feng. He could be patient, he could ignore a lot of things, but he couldn't tolerate other people insulting his fellow disciples, teachers, family members... And the gratitude he had for his two teachers couldn't be described with words.

"The universities have access to more information than Ancient Holy Clans. Maybe they know things people don't regarding the destruction of the Ancient Holy Clans," arose the whispers, especially those from other Ancient Holy Clans. They were happy to see that the three other universities put some pressure on Champion University.

"You're insolent!" said Hou Qing Lin and the other disciples of Tiantai. They were furious. The direct disciples of Tiantai were all like Lin Feng, they couldn't let anyone insult their teachers. They cared about their teachers more than about themselves.

"What? Tiantai, a new and tiny little group wants to see how strong they are in comparison with us universities?" replied one of them coldly. "Tiantai? We can easily destroy it! "

"Say that again," said a voice coldly. The crowd turned around and saw Lin Feng slowly rise up into the air. Lin Feng, the one who had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, hadn't shown up in the Holy City for a long time.

# Chapter 2306: Astonishing Battle

---

According to legends, back in the days, Lin Feng had fought alone against eight geniuses, and had crushed them. Back then, Lin Feng had killed Ji Chang. Back then, Lin Feng finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and amazed the whole continent. Those were only some of Lin Feng's achievements. People in the Holy City were still astonished by his deeds.

Now, Lin Feng was a disciple of the Fortune Shrine, and terrifyingly talented. His position had changed. No wonder Champion University attached so much importance to him and called him a King. However, from what the crowd could see, even though Lin Feng was extremely talented, twenty years had passed since he had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and he had only become a Celestial Emperor. How could he fight against Saint Emperors? The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine weren't going to come and help him!

But at that moment, Lin Feng rose up into the air and threatened some Saint Emperors.

The universities of the Holy City were much stronger than the Ancient Holy Clans. However, Lin Feng didn't mind. He looked at that Saint Emperor icily, his eyes filled with murder.

The Saint Emperor frowned. Did Lin Feng want to die?

"Hmph!" that person grunted coldly, staring at Lin Feng, and said, "Why would I repeat myself? I don't think Tiantai wants to see who's stronger between them and us, anyway. Even though you're talented, you'll still need another thirty years at least before being qualified to stand in front of me!"

"Thirty years?" Ancestor Shi Tian smiled coldly. The eight Ancestors stepped forwards and released a terrifying Qi.

The strong cultivators who had just arrived were stupefied,

staring at the Ancestors of Champion University. Would they dare fight against the three other universities?

However, the eight Ancestors of Champion University surrounded the one who had just insulted Mu Chen and looked at him coldly. The only person facing him directly was Lin Feng. Lin Feng released cold energies, and death strength surrounded him. Everything became grey around him.

“What’s going on?” The Saint Emperors of the other universities were astonished. It was so cold, their souls were shaking. The Death intent was penetrating into their bodies!

Lin Feng’s Death Dao filled the air. Black lights twinkled everywhere. The Saint Emperor’s face turned deathly pale and grey.

“Maximum level Dao, that’s...” his heart was pounding. How could Lin Feng’s Dao be at the maximum level? It meant that he met one of the requirements to become a Saint already!

Maximum level Dao! With the power of his mind, he could destroy whole cities in the blink of an eye!

Lin Feng took a step forwards, and two, and three. Each time he took a step forwards, the Saint Emperor heard a Funeral Bell clang in his head. However, he was a Saint Emperor, his vitality and intent were incredible and explosive, He started expelling the death strength from his body.

Suddenly, the Source of the Nine Netherworlds appeared and collided with the death strength. People on the ground were astonished.

“That’s Brother Lin Feng, he’s so strong. In such a short time, he’s able to fight against Saint Emperors!” The students of Champion University were astonished and amazed. No wonder he had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds! He was terrifyingly strong and talented. Would he really

need thirty more years to compete with the Saint Emperor?

It wasn't over. A peerless king weapon strength emerged from Lin Feng's body and condensed into a sword in the sky, and he infused godly strength into it. That sword vibrated and fused together with death strength. Lin Feng's Qi surged, he used his full strength to condense that sword. Nobody knew how powerful that sword attack was...

Path of a Cultivation God, forbidden strength, unmatched sword. It felt like the whole world was about to turn into a sword!

The Saint Emperor kept releasing Qi, but he was oppressed, and his Qi was weakening. The Ancestors of Champion University who encircled him were completely astonished. Was that Lin Feng's own strength? He was already so strong?

Lin Feng's robe was fluttering in the wind. People around didn't look at him as a student of Champion University or a disciple of Tiantai anymore. With his strength, he could be the patriarch of a sect, or a great scholar respected for learning and integrity. His sword looked like the sword of a god!

"Thirty years, you really think too highly of yourself," Lin Feng said calmly. He looked like a god; the strong cultivator of Celestial Godly University couldn't believe it his eyes.

"Die!" said Lin Feng. He condensed the strength of the ten thousand things of creation in his god sword which streaked across the sky towards the strong cultivator of Celestial Godly University. The strong cultivator of Celestial Godly University shouted defiantly even as he sensed some cursing strength surround him. He couldn't see clearly anymore, he didn't know which side the sword was attacking from anymore.

Sword lights glittered in front of him; this was one of Lin Feng's most powerful attacks. It contained all sorts of strength and had no weakness. It even diffused cursing and soundwave strength. When the Saint Emperor released an attack to protect himself, it was

already too late. The crowd saw dazzling lights absorb the Saint Emperor and crush him, before he turned to smoke and dispersed.

Lin Feng was standing in the sky, looking like a god.

“Thirty years to compete with him?” repeated the crowd. How ridiculous! One sword attack and he had been defeated!

“From now on, one more sentence will be added to my university’s ranking list: Champion University offered nine cauldrons to Lin Feng, and he killed a Saint Emperor in one sword attack!” exclaimed some students of Champion University. They were very excited. This guy was their fellow disciple, and a peerless genius.

“Wait, wait, so the four Ancient Holy Clans...” the crowd realized suddenly. Lin Feng had come back to destroy his old enemies?

It was as if everything became clear all of a sudden. Brother Lin Feng had done that. Who was the mysterious army, though?

At that moment, the strong cultivators of the other three universities were trembling.

Lin Feng looked at them and said coldly, “Get down.”

The strong cultivators of the three universities grimaced. How insolent...

However, they realized that Lin Feng had probably destroyed the Four Ancient Holy Clans, so they didn’t dare act recklessly.

“The universities have existed for a long time. Some of them are like some Ancient Holy Clans, they like to act arrogantly in front of other people,” said Lin Feng evenly. A cold wind brushed against those people. What did Lin Feng mean?

“Get down.” People from Four Seasons University descended from the sky, which made the crowd frown. Four Seasons University acknowledged Lin Feng?

After that, Ancient University also descended from the sky.



Lin Feng looked at the members of Celestial Godly University and finally, they descended from the sky. The crowd looked at Lin Feng and shivered. Lin Feng had become so influential that he could put pressure on three universities! He looked like a conquering hero!

“Everybody, in the future, you better assess your own strength properly before saying anything you could regret. Even if a group has existed in the Holy City for thousands of years, they can be destroyed from one day to the next,” Lin Feng went on patiently.

The universities and Ancient Holy Clans were all astonished, had Lin Feng truly destroyed the four Ancient Holy Clans?

“Tiantai is here now. Everybody else can leave,” said Lin Feng indifferently. It was enough for the day. Lin Feng had also destroyed the four Ancient Holy Clans for Tiantai to rise in peace. Now, they would be unstoppable!

Some people left dispirited, some people left amazed. Some people stayed because they wanted to become members of Tiantai.

Lin Feng left. He had shown how strong he was already, that was enough. He had to be careful because the Shrines were looking for him.

—

Lin Feng went back to Champion University. In the celestial mountains, there was a woman, she looked aloof from worldly strife like a celestial being, she looked happy, relaxed, and light-hearted and yet slightly cold. She was practicing cultivation.

At that moment, she slowly opened her eyes and saw someone in the distance.

# Chapter 2307: Ancient World

---

Xue Baguio looked at Lin Feng, he looked familiar, but she didn't recognize him. Ancestor Shi Tian was behind Lin Feng. He said to Lin Feng telepathically, "In order not to disturb her cultivation, I won't make her remember the past. Her memory is getting worse and worse, she has no long-term memory anymore, and her short-term memory is also getting worse each day. But she seems to understand rules, and each time she senses she's about to forget what she was just experiencing, she comes back here to practice cultivation."

Lin Feng was astonished and replied, "Does she practice cultivation faster and faster, though?"

If her memory was worsening, it could mean that she was practicing faster and faster!

"Indeed, she's becoming really strong. As she accumulates strength in her body with time, she becomes more and more terrifying, but each time, her cultivation resets. Anyway, I have to admit the Selfless Scriptures are truly fearsome," said Ancestor Shi Tian. He was astonished. He had thought that Xue Baguio would remember everything after breaking through to the Di Qi layer, but she was already a Celestial Emperor, and her cultivation speed was unearthly!

"Some people in the outside world would be astonished by her cultivation speed," said Ancestor Shi Tian telepathically. Lin Feng nodded. Chu Chun Qiu's speed was incredible already, but no wonder Xue Baguio was a reincarnation. She had forgotten her previous lives. That was an advantage compared to ordinary people who remembered their previous lives. However, during the first twenty years of her life, she hadn't progressed quickly at all.

"She will probably remember who she is when she breaks through to the Sheng Di Layer. She might even even remember her

previous lives,” whispered Ancestor Shi Tian.

Xue Baguio looked at Lin Feng and said, “Who are you? Why do I have the impression that I know you?”

“I’m Lin Feng, we were good friends in the past,” said Lin Feng, smiling at Xue Baguio. As expected, she had forgotten about him again!

“Lin Feng,” repeated Xue Baguio. She whispered, “You look very familiar...”

Lin Feng smiled at Xue Baguio, “When you recover your memories, you will remember me.”

“Alright,” Xue Baguio nodded.

“Continue practicing cultivation so that you can recover your memories quickly,” said Lin Feng calmly, before he and Ancestor Shi Tian left.

Xue Baguio focused on cultivation. She remembered nothing. Since she had decided to study the Selfless Scriptures in her previous life, she had no choice now.

—

Lin Feng left the celestial mountain and went somewhere to meet Lang Ye.

“What’s wrong?” Lin Feng asked Lang Ye, who had just contacted him.

“An elder of the World Clan wants to see you,” Lang Ye said to Lin Feng.

“Where?” Lin Feng was extremely surprised. Why would an elder of the World Clan want to see him? The World Clan was an ancient Clan. In the past, they used to be like the Snow Clan, but then something had happened to them and they had to hide in Dark Clouds. They didn’t seem to care about the outside world.

“He’s in Champion University already, where Tiantai used to

be,” said Lang Ye.

“Let’s go,” Lin Feng agreed. What did that elder want from him?

—

When they arrived, Lin Feng saw the elder from the World Clan. He had the demeanor of a transcendent being, he had a very long beard, and a robe with the Eight Trigrams on it.

He glanced at Lin Feng, smiled, and nodded, “So young and you can already kill Saint Emperors, you’re extremely talented.”

“No need to be polite,” Lin Feng smiled back. “Have a seat.”

“Alright,” the elder nodded. He went on, “Lin Feng, we’ve heard about the things that happened to you in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Appearance of a Forbidden Body, the Shrines want to kill you, you’re the Shrines’ first target now.”

“So the World Clan isn’t completely isolated from the outside world,” Lin Feng noted, amused.

“The World Clan has been silent for a very, very long time, but we have always wanted to rise again. How could we isolate ourselves from the outside world completely? Nowadays, Lang Ye, who has a king-type body, is slowly rising. I hope he will become extremely strong, and he’ll help the World Clan come back to life,” said the elder.

Lin Feng inquired mildly, “So the World Clan is eager to come back to life, will you come out of the mountains?”

“Indeed!” said the elder, somewhat eagerly. “We want to march into the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“March into the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!?” Lin Feng was astonished. The World Clan had been hiding for such a long time, had they accumulated so much strength already?

“Do those things have anything to do with me?” asked Lin Feng.

He was curious. The World Clan had been hiding for a very long time, and now they wanted to rise again, so why were they looking for him? He had good relations with the World Clan, but he was not very important at the scale of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds; his influence was limited there. On top of that, the Shrines wanted to kill him!

“The World Clan needs someone to support them. I would like to have you as an ally. If we go to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds together, we’ll be able to gain a firm foothold and establish ourselves. Your disguise abilities are incredible, if you disguise yourself and go to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds with us, you can pretend you’re from the World Clan. Wouldn’t it be perfect?” that person grinned knowingly.

Lin Feng’s eyes glittered. The World Clan wanted to help him. If he did that, he would be able to avoid some trouble there. As the World Clan had disappeared for such a long time, even if there was a very strong cultivator among them, nobody would find it strange...

“But that wouldn’t be useful for the World Clan at all?” Lin Feng didn’t understand why the World Clan wanted to do that.

“In the past your wife was extremely strong. Now you’re strong, we hope you can help us rise in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” the elder explained.

Lin Feng was surprised. The World Clan probably knew he was a Forbidden Person...

Lin Feng smiled and said, “Alright, since you are willing to do that, how could I refuse?”

“I can’t wait!” agreed the strong cultivator of the World Clan cheerfully.

Both of them smiled. They had an agreement. Lin Feng didn’t know how strong the World Clan was just yet...

He had already shown up in the Holy City. He couldn't stay here for too long. Each time he met his friends, it was for a short, yet wonderful time.

Nobody in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds knew what Lin Feng had done in the Holy City, and even if some people learned about it, it would be too late already.

---

In the Northwest Area of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the marriage alliance between the Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan was still fermenting. Everybody in the Northwest Area knew what had happened between Lin Feng and the Shrines.

Because of Lin Feng, all the Shrines had joined hands, and worse, the Fire Shrine had lost a Saint.

Now something extremely strange had happened in the Northwest Area. Suddenly, a new group had emerged. They were extremely strong, with an army of heroes. They instantly started competing with people from the Northwest Area, stealing resources and territories without the slightest scruple. But because they hadn't become as important as other Holy Sage Ruler Clans, people didn't really pay attention to them.

Something else drew people's attention; a terrifyingly strong Celestial Emperor from the Demon Shrine was killed. All the Shrines paid attention to that news item because that Celestial Emperor was a genius and had a great reputation in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. However, someone had killed him!

Some people were even amused because the family name of the killer was "Mo", a traditional family name in the Demon Shrine, and he had killed people from the Demon Shrine...

After that, some people said that the one who had killed him

wasn't famous, he was around thirty years old, and when he was only twenty, he was already terrifyingly strong. He had started practicing cultivation as an infant. His Dao strength was incredible. In another world, Hell, he was famous. He was from the Hell Shrine and in Hell, it was said that such geniuses only appeared every million years.

Now he was in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and fighting against other strong cultivators.

His name was Mo Zheng, the Demonic Punisher!

## Chapter 2308: Mo Jia's Battle Stage

---

Some geniuses of the Demon Shrine were killed by the Demonic Punisher. Of course, they weren't going to leave the matter at that. However, since Mo Zheng the Demonic Punisher always killed people of the same cultivation level, the Demon Shrine couldn't send stronger cultivators to kill him; he was from the Hell Shrine, after all.

But the Demonic Punisher couldn't just leave it be. A Celestial Emperor of the Demon Shrine invited many people. Of course, he also invited Mo Zheng. The crowd knew why. On that day, many people went to the meeting point, Ancient Demon City's Mo Jia's Battle Stage. According to legends, the founder of the Demon Shrine was a Demon God, and he had fought on that battle stage. He had killed many, many people. He had become a symbol for many demon cultivators.

The Mo Jia's Battle Stage was surrounded by eight flags; on each flag, there was a demon shield and blood stains.

There were many strong cultivators around the battle stage, gongs clanged ceaselessly. It was quite lively. Many extremely strong cultivators were present.

"Xue Jing Xiao is with Di Chan now. He is a genius from the Snow Clan who is now a member of the Ice and Snow Shrine. Lin Feng went to the Snow Clan and defeated him. The First of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds doesn't have an undeserved reputation." Many people were looking at someone from the Snow Clan: Xue Jing Xiao. Next to him were Di Jiang and Di Chan, as well as some other strong cultivators of the Snow Clan.

"Brother Di Jiang, Brother Jing Xiao," called out a few people at that moment. They were from the Fire Shrine: Huo Xing Zi and Huo Shang.

"Brother Huo Shang, are you not preparing Huo Xing Zi's



wedding? How come you have time to come here?” asked Di Jiang with a warm smile.

“We’re not in a rush. Mo Fu invited so many people, how could we miss the battles?” replied Huo Shang cheerfully. Mo Fu was the one who wanted to fight against Mo Zheng. The Demon Shrine couldn’t get involved directly, so people of the same generation had to solve the issue themselves. Those people were all famous and smart, they knew what to do. The Shrines wouldn’t get involved, unless Lin Feng showed up, or unless things derailed.

“He’s here,” said Di Jiang at that moment gazing into the distance. A few new people had arrived: some strong cultivators of the Demon Shrine, and Mo Fu was there too.

Everybody watched the strong cultivators of the Demon Shrine, as many people from different Shrines were there. Mo Zheng had drawn many people’s attention.

“How lively!” Someone else arrived, his silhouette flickering a few times. His eyes were golden.

“Empty Space Shrine strong cultivator!”

“Hahahaha...” Someone laughed loudly in the distance. People gazed into the distance and saw some dragon strength.

“Dragon chant?” The crowd saw a few people. Their Qi was wild and extraordinary. The eyes of the leader were filled with flames. The one next to him had red eyes, and the one behind looked calm and aloof. He was wearing black clothes. His Qi wasn’t explosive, but his pitch-black eyes looked scary.

“Aolie!” Huo Shang was astonished, staring at one of them who had fire red hair. He frowned and said coldly, “You came to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, to Ancient Demon City?”

“What’s wrong? Why wouldn’t I come, Little Boy?” Aolie asked Huo Shang in a brutal tone of voice. The crowd was stupefied,

Aolie wasn't ordinary. He dared call Huo Shang "Little Boy"? They were powerful cultivators from the Supreme Animal World!

"Supreme Animal World's Dragon Clan!" The crowd was really astonished, those people were from the Dragon Clan of the Supreme Animal World. Those who could found clans in the Supreme Animal World were terrifyingly strong. The Supreme Animal World was the only group the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds feared, because they had some terrifying clans, like the Dragon Clan.

Human's strength lay in their cultivation; animals were different, they had inherent abilities!

"Why did the Dragon Clan come to Ancient Demon City?" asked the strong cultivator with the golden eyes. He looked sharp and aggressive.

"We came to see if there was anyone strong here," Aolie smiled. He was a fire dragon, and when he was very young, he had fought against some young people of the Shrines. The Shrines and the Supreme Animal World often had meetings and cultivation competitions, but nobody really knew the details. Of course, the purpose was always to check out how strong the enemy was.

Those people rarely showed up in the outside world, so people didn't know much about them.

"It's a blood dragon, and there's a demon dragon, too," said the strong cultivator with the golden eyes. He was staring at Aolie.

"Even though the Void Breaking Vision is powerful, you're underestimating the members of the Dragon Clan. Be careful, I could eat you alive," Aolie snorted coldly to the Empty Space cultivator.

"Hmph! Are you strong enough?" spat the Empty Space Shrine's strong cultivator. The crowd looked at Aolie and the two other people, the blood dragon and the demon dragon. They were all

from prestigious dragon families.

“Let’s try and we’ll see,” replied Aolie coldly.

“If you want to try, then let’s try!” said the Empty Space Shrine’s strong cultivator. Two threads of strength rolled out and collided. People were speechless; Mo Zheng hadn’t even arrived, the Demon Shrine and Mo Zheng’s battle hadn’t even started, and now the Dragon Clan and the Empty Space Shrine were already starting to fight!

At that moment, another group of people arrived. Their leader was wearing a world robe, looking confident and at ease. At his sides were extraordinary looking cultivators. Some of them also emitted bestial Qi.

The leader of the group was Lin Feng. He landed on the ground and calmly glanced around. Lin Feng looked over at the three dragons.

“So many years have passed, that little boy has grown up,” Lin Feng smiled indifferently, but nobody noticed him.

In the distance, people raised their heads and heard a sonic boom as the person who made it arrived. When they saw him, people frowned; he looked like a demon, imposing and awe-inspiring. His eyes looked like two abyssal caves.

“Mo Zheng!” The strong cultivators of the Demon Shrine all watched him.

Mo Zheng landed on a flag, his hands clasped behind his back. He glanced at the members of the Demon Shrine and asked coldly, “Which member of the Demon Shrine wants to die today?”

When the crowd heard him, they frowned; how arrogant! The other times, they had just heard of him, but they hadn’t seen him. He put on an air of extreme arrogance. Everybody knew him in Hell, he was a core disciple of the Hell Shrine!

“But Mo Fu is also terrifyingly strong. I wonder who will be

stronger!” thought the crowd. They were not disappointed. There were many geniuses!

“No rush. Many people want to fight today, so the battle between the Demon Shrine and the Hell Shrine can be at the end,” said Huo Shang cheerfully. He watched the strong cultivator from the Empty Space Shrine and Aolie going at it. He really wanted to know how strong Aolie was.

“Indeed, there are so many strong cultivators, let’s compare ourselves. We should all take advantage of Mo Jia’s Battle Stage,” someone else agreed at that moment. Dazzling golden lights appeared at the top of a flag; it was a strong cultivator from the Gold Shrine.

“If you want to exchange views on cultivation, then hurry up!” said Mo Zheng indifferently. He was standing on the top of the flagpole, his robe fluttering in the wind.

# Chapter 2309: Strong Cultivators from Everywhere

---

The crowd watched Mo Zheng atop the flagpole: a genius from the Hell Shrine, his Qi was extraordinary.

Many strong cultivators had come to Mo Jia's Battle Stage. They had come to exchange views on cultivation, including many people from other Shrines, some people from Holy Sage Ruler Clans, and some people just to watch.

“Huo Shang, if you want to fight, just fight, talking is useless. I'll be happy to devour you alive,” said Aolie proudly. His eyes were filled with flames. He was a fire dragon, and Huo Shang was a disciple of the Fire Shrine. Aolie wanted to see how powerful Huo Shang's fire was.

“Let's do it then, let's fight!” said Huo Shang agreeably. He jumped onto Mo Jia's Battle Stage, fire surrounding his body instantly. Huo Xing Zi also walked onto the battle stage.

“Haha, Aoxu, let's go,” said Aolie to Aoxu. Aolie landed opposite them and said, “Huo Xing Zi has the same cultivation level as you, he's yours.”

Aoxu nodded. Back in the day, when Mo Zheng had first appeared in the outside world, he was already a high-level Imperial Beast in the Animal Supreme World. Now, many years had passed, and he was already a Celestial Imperial Beast. His cultivation level seemed very stable, and his fighting abilities were probably incredible. He was a real dragon, so he had an inherent talent.

“Anyone else want to play? Come here. We're not here to kill, we're here to exchange views, for real!” said Aolie. Someone groaned coldly. It was the Empty Space Shrine's strong cultivator, he jumped onto the battle stage.

Di Jiang smiled and said, “Jing Xiao, let's go and have some

fun?”

Xue Jing Xiao muttered to himself irresolutely. Last time, in the Snow Clan, he had suffered a crushing defeat against Lin Feng. At the same time, the Snow Clan's reputation had been crushed. One of their monarchs had died, two had been taken away... he was the last one left. It was a tragedy, he had to fight to regain face!

He nodded and jumped onto the battle stage. There were so many strong cultivators on Mo Jia's Battle Stage.

“I want to have some fun too!” said Gu Xuan Feng. He was from the Demon Shrine, he had come with Mo Fu. During the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he had tried to kill Lin Feng, who had strength at the top of the Huang Qi layer. Now, he was like Huo Xing Zi; he had broken through to the Tian Di layer. Even though he had become a Celestial Emperor a short time before, he was a cultivator from a Shrine, and very strong.

The people next to Lin Feng seemed excited and eager to try. Lin Feng smiled and said, “No rush. We'll see afterwards.”

Lin Feng had brought Qing Hai's roc and the others. He had also brought some Celestial Imperial Beasts from the army the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had given to him. They were all extremely strong. They wanted to compare themselves with the geniuses of this world, it was normal.

The strong cultivators on the Mo Jia's Battle Stage already started fighting. The battle stage was on fire.

There were powerful blood lights around Aoxu. Dao power kept assaulting his opponent, trying to crush him. At the same time, some illusionary blood dragons bared fangs and brandished claws as they attacked!

Huo Xing Zi grunted coldly. He took out a fire mace and attacked the dragons, which made them roar furiously before they started burning.

“Die!” shouted Aoxu, punching out in his opponent’s direction. Huo Xing Zi was startled, his fire mace instantly disappearing. He swallowed and released more fire which surrounded him. A fireball appeared in his hand.

“Break!” Dragon chants spread in the air. The dragon’s powers were explosive, immediately destroying the fireball. Aoxu was staring at his opponent, shooting blood lights towards him. But Huo Xing Zi stood steadfast and the fire in his hand grew more and more intense.

Blood dragons raced towards him. The crowd couldn’t see Huo Xing Zi at all anymore. He disappeared inside all those blood dragons. Suddenly, fingers emerged from the blood lights, fire pierced through them; some blood dragons were instantly destroyed, the others started burning and disappeared. In the end, only some blood dragon’s claws reached him.

The two attacks collided. the blood lights surrounded Huo Xing Zi’s fire. Both opponents collided, then they were both forced away. When they stopped moving, there was blood on Aoxu’s fist, and flames had appeared around him. Huo Xing Zi was trembling and covered with blood. Aoxu’s attack was so explosive, he had the impression he had nearly died!

At that kind of cultivation level, people have to control themselves not to use their full strength, they only use a little bit of strength. Nobody knows how strong a cultivator is, but themselves, thought Lin Feng. Saints could kill the strongest great emperors in the blink of an eye with the power of their minds. Even the Fire Shrine’s Saint had died easily because the Diviner was too strong.

“Huo Shang, come and try,” challenged Aolie, stepping forwards. The battle stage trembled. Huo Shang’s eyes were filled with flames.

At that moment, a wind carried a cold Qi, like the battle stage

was about to freeze: Ice King intent filled the air. That person was much stronger than Aoxu and Huo Xing Zi!

“Snow Clan, Xue Jing Xiao! I’ve wanted to exchange views with the dragons of the Supreme Animal World’s Dragon Clan for a long time,” said Xue Jing Xiao calmly. Fire and ice were antagonist kinds of strengths, and they were both beasts!

“Same here, let’s see how strong a King of the Snow Clan can be!” returned Aolie evenly. They started fighting. It was a great battle, too. Fire and ice kept colliding as they invaded the battle stage. Their battle was quite dangerous; when Aolie and Xue Jing Xiao moved away from one another, they were both injured. They both had similar strength!

“Xue Jing Xiao has a king-type body and is from the Snow Clan. Aolie is from the Dragon Clan and a terrifying genius. They are both terrifying geniuses,” the onlookers commented.

“You’re extremely strong. Your fighting abilities are incredible. Anyone else want to try?” said Aolie indifferently.

Dazzling golden lights flashed. The Empty Space Shrine’s strong cultivator jumped in front of Aolie. Instantly, Aolie had the impression he was in a cage, and shouted furiously. His opponent looked like an illusion and was teleporting. His strength surged towards Aolie.

“Brilliant! Who else wants to fight? Come!” said someone. At that moment, Heze’s mahoraga jumped up and landed on the battle stage. He was already a Celestial Emperor, he had broken through to the Tian Di layer a short time before.

“Where are you from?” said Gu Xuan Feng coldly, releasing demon energies. He started running towards the mahoraga. Each time he took a step, explosive demon strength surrounded the mahoraga. Gu Xuan Feng then released some pitch-black demon punches.



The mahoraga transformed and threw himself at Xuan Feng, still spitting venom. Gu Xuan Feng sensed the strength of the smelly poison. It was dangerous!

“What a strange mahoraga, but he’s super strong!” cheered the crowd. The people around Lin Feng jumped onto the battle stage and shouted, “Who wants to fight?!”

“My turn!” said a cultivator of the top of the Di Qi layer, throwing himself at Qing Hai’s roc. Nobody chose opponents weaker than them, everybody wanted to fight against someone stronger.

Some strong cultivators from the Shrines were fighting, too!

“Those people’s fighting abilities are incredible. Beasts or people, they’re all very strong!” cheered the crowd. They were a bit surprised, because there was a group of people they didn’t know. They weren’t from the Shrines, and those from the Supreme Animal World didn’t know them, either. How come they had appeared so suddenly? Which group were they from?

Many people looked at Lin Feng. He was wearing a World robe, his hair was fluttering in the wind, his Qi only dimly discernible. They could sense that he was terrifyingly strong, otherwise, he wouldn’t have come with such strong cultivators.

In the distance, two people appeared. When Huo Xing Zi saw them, he was stunned. “Why are they here?”

Qing Feng and Jing. They had come to watch the battles.

Lin Feng looked over at them. He looked on calmly; he knew they were going to be here.

The Demon Shrine had organized this event, Lin Feng was going to take advantage of it. He slowly walked over to Jing and Qing Feng. Many strong cultivators watched him. He looked imposing and awe-inspiring.

## Chapter 2310: You Failed to Appreciate my Kindness!

---

Lin Feng slowly walked to Qing Feng and Jing. He smiled and said, “You have an incredible Qi, what’s your name?”

Jing looked at Lin Feng coldly. She didn’t like strangers, especially foreigners.

“My name is Qing Feng. And yours?” Jing was surprised, because Qing Feng immediately replied to him and smiled. Jing looked at Qing Feng; she had changed, was she doing that on purpose for the cultivators of the Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan to see...?

“Daimon,” said Lin Feng smiling. The crowd was astonished. He dared call himself Daimon, how arrogant!

“Miss Qing Feng, let’s watch together,” said Lin Feng, smiling kindly.

“Alright,” Qing Feng nodded. Jing was astonished, and didn’t understand. She didn’t know that it was Lin Feng, but Qing Feng did. Lin Feng had a new social status, he could spend time with Qing Feng now.

What does she think she’s doing?, Jing wondered. But since Qing Feng had agreed, Jing followed along.

“Huo Xing Zi,” said Huo Shang to Huo Xing Zi. He looked amused. Qing Feng was supposed to get married to Huo Xing Zi, their respective groups had agreed, and now she was walking with another man. That man had an incredible Qi, and looked extraordinary. The people he had brought with him were extremely strong, too!

“Qing Feng,” said Huo Xing Zi walking over to Qing Feng. He smiled and said, “Qing Feng, my teacher and the Void Phoenix Clan have finished discussing our marriage. You just have to agree now. ”

“You’re getting married?” said Lin Feng, looking surprised.

“No,” said Qing Feng, shaking her head.

Huo Xing Zi was stunned and said, “Qing Feng, you agreed. How can you take back your word now? We’re done organizing everything.”

“I just said I’d agree to think about getting married, I never agreed to get married to you. And we never agreed on a date, either,” said Qing Feng coldly. Huo Xing Zi was astonished.

“Shrines try to force women to get married?” said Lin Feng, with a cold smile.

“Shut your filthy mouth, who are you to talk about Shrines?” spat Huo Xing Zi coldly.

“You want to die!” said someone next to Lin Feng, releasing a terrifying bestial Qi. A strong wind started blowing around Huo Xing Zi. Huo Xing Zi’s expression changed drastically, and he jumped backwards, feeling oppressed. However, at that moment, he realized that the speaker had gone back where he was standing a moment before, as calm and composed as if nothing had happened.

Huo Xing Zi pulled a long face. How humiliating!

Some strong cultivators from the Fire Shrine walked in their direction. Their Qi surged towards Lin Feng and the others. Huo Shang asked coldly, “Which faction are you from?”

Lin Feng said calmly, “World Clan, Daimon.”

“The World Clan?!” Huo Shang was startled, and frowned. The World Clan, which had disappeared for such a long time, was back?

Many years before, a terrifyingly strong cultivator had risen in the World Clan. Thanks to him, the World Clan had become splendid and glorious. Back then was a golden age for them. But after that, something mysterious had happened, there were details

only known to insiders. Few people knew that the Saint of the World Clan had fallen. Nobody knew the details. After that, the World Clan had faced a tragedy, many clans had joined hands to fight against them, and they had disappeared.

The World Clan started acting behind the scenes, staying hidden. Many forgot about them. Time passed, and they disappeared from the Continent of the Nine Clouds. And now, they were back!

“Many people thought it was a pity back then when you disappeared. Now you’re back, good for you,” said Huo Shang calmly. “But my fellow disciple didn’t say anything wrong. Miss Qing Feng really agreed to get married to someone from the Fire Shrine. The World Clan can’t get involved. ”

“Miss Qing Feng, is that true?” asked Lin Feng.

“It’s not, obviously,” replied Qing Feng.

Lin Feng nodded, “There are some bluebottles here. We’ll get in touch again, Miss Qing Feng!” said Lin Feng, before he and his group left.

Huo Shang was amazed. That guy was arrogant, he didn’t give the Fire Shrine any face. Did the World Clan think they were strong enough?

Actually, many people were convinced that the World Clan hadn’t disappeared for real, they had been hiding and accumulating strength. And now, they had finally shown up again!

“Wait!” Huo Shang said to Lin Feng. He sounded cold. The World Clan dared disrespect the Fire Shrine?

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Huo Shang. Huo Shang smiled and said, “Who are the bluebottles you were talking about?”

Lin Feng smiled evilly and sneered, “You don’t understand?”

“I heard you, but the World Clan just reappeared, you should

watch your words. Otherwise, all the efforts you've made during these thousands of years will be in vain in the end. Apologize for saying that," said Huo Shang, smiling icily. He just saw silhouettes flicker, some strong cultivators from the Fire Shrine immediately gathered around Huo Shang and released their flames. They wanted to burn Lin Feng and the others.

"Apologize?" Lin Feng smiled. "What if I don't?"

"We'll see how long the World Clan will survive!" said Huo Shang emotionlessly. Many people looked at them. The battles weren't over, and the Fire Shrine were already having problems with the World Clan! Many people were amused.

"If you say so," said Lin Feng smiling widely. Did it mean they were going to fight?

The air became scorching hot, and more flames appeared. Many people retreated. It was going to be a group battle between the Fire Shrine and the World Clan!

The World Clan had just come back to life, who was that Daimon? And was he going to have his first battle against a Shrine?

A terrifying Qi erupted out. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine walked towards Lin Feng and the others. At the same time, the strong cultivators on Lin Feng's side also walked towards them. Some cultivators started fighting instantly. Fire energies filled the air with deadly flames.

There really were some cultivators from the World Clan with Lin Feng who were extremely strong. World lights dashed to the skies and sent the flames to another world.

Only Huo Shang and Lin Feng didn't move. They were staring at one another calmly. Huo Shang said, "They're all geniuses from the Fire Shrine. No need to be polite. You can join hands and use your full strength. "

When Lin Feng heard that, his friends all started fighting against

them. The group of people Lin Feng had brought was stronger than Huo Shang's group.

Finally, a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine who was surrounded by two people was injured and started crying out. The beasts were merciless and continued striking. They wanted to crush him.

Huo Shang wanted to move, but he sensed an ominous Qi fixed on him. He was astonished and looked at Lin Feng.

Boom! Another strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine was injured, his face was deathly pale.

"You bastard!" said Huo Shang coldly.

"The Fire Shrine provoked us and you told us to use our full strength, so...", replied Lin Feng coolly. He turned around and started leaving. The Fire Shrine bullied and provoked the World Clan?

It was actually the opposite, but the Fire Shrine had initiated the battle. Lin Feng had infuriated them on purpose. They were a Shrine, and in everybody's eyes, they were really strong. The World Clan had to use their full strength against them, everybody agreed.

"Going?" swore Huo Shang coldly. He condensed fire and ran towards Lin Feng. Raising his hands, he shouted furiously, "Where are you going?"

Lin Feng turned around suddenly and looked at him coldly. He raised his hands as well, condensing terrifying energies. Huo Shang heard whistling sounds...

"Piss off!" Lin Feng shouted furiously, his eyes looked evil as he moved towards Huo Shang. Hundreds of hands appeared in the air and attacked Huo Shang. His fire slowly weakened.

An overpowering hand crashed onto Huo Shang's body, and blood splashed. Lin Feng stopped, and glanced over at the

members of the Fire Shrine. “You failed to appreciate my kindness!”

# Chapter 2311: Black Dragon

---

Lin Feng was wearing a world robe, his hair was fluttering in the wind, and he sounded ice-cold. The crowd was startled; he was really strong and had easily defeated Huo Shang. Their battle had been even more impressive than Huo Shang and Aolie's battle. Huo Shang couldn't withstand a single attack from Lin Feng.

The most surprising thing was that Lin Feng told his opponent he failed to appreciate his kindness! Who was from a Shrine, Lin Feng or that Huo Shang?

Did the World Clan think they were strong enough to compete with a Shrine?

The real protagonists on that day were supposed to be Mo Zheng and his opponent, and surprisingly, there were so many battles! The Supreme Animal World's strong cultivators, the World Clan... this time they were extremely strong and could oppress the Fire Shrine. Huo Shang was a very strong cultivator and he had been defeated handily.

"The Fire Shrine shouldn't bully people," said Lin Feng indifferently. Huo Shang and the other members of the Fire Shrine grimaced. The Fire Shrine bullied people? Who had bullied whom here?

The crowd was stunned. What a guy...

Lin Feng didn't even turn around, he departed with the other cultivators of the World Clan. The strong cultivators who were from Lin Feng's group and still on the battle stage also flashed away and followed Lin Feng. They looked majestic and imposing. The crowd wondered what all this was supposed to mean, what was the World Clan's real purpose for showing up?

"They've been hiding for such a long time, now they're back. They wanted to tell everyone in the Imperial Court of the



Continent of the Nine Clouds that they're back, and they did it with force. Therefore, only their most outstanding geniuses must have shown up today, and the Fire Shrine was their stepping stone today."

"Poor Fire Shrine. The World Clan came to cause trouble today."

Everybody gossiped. They also looked at Qing Feng and Jing again. They had heard of the marriage alliance planned between the Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan. Huo Xing Zi's teacher and Jing's father were good friends. To Huo Xing Zi, Jing and Qing Feng were already members of the Fire Shrine since they were supposed to get married to some of them.

But the World Clan had humiliated them.

That Daimon is really strong. He defeated Huo Shang, thought Aolie, looking after Lin Feng. Aoxu was next to him and nodded agreement.

"I'll go and see. You can go back, don't wait for me," said Aomo at that moment.

Both of them frowned. Aolie shouted, "Aomo, where are you going?" They didn't want anything to happen to him.

"Don't worry, I'll be fine! You can go back!" shouted Aomo.

Aolie frowned but then Aoxu said, "That little boy is terrifyingly strong. He'll be fine."

"But that Daimon is sinister and extremely strong. His group of people is also very strong," murmured Aolie, gazing after him.

"Aomo isn't stupid. Even though Daimon is extremely strong, I don't think he wants the Dragon Clan as enemies," said Aoxu. Aolie nodded. They didn't chase after Aomo, and continued watching the battles.

Mo Zheng was standing in the sky, staring at Mo Fu. He said plainly, "It's our turn, right?"

“Fight!” said Mo Fu in a demon voice. It reverberated all around them.

Mo Zheng’s robe fluttered in the wind. He stood there with his hands clasped behind his back. Their demon voices made the blood boil of everyone on the Mo Jia’s Battle Stage. Even Celestial Emperors were amazed at the power of their voices. Each time Mo Fu took a step, it seemed the world was about to collapse.

A powerful wave of energy crashed onto Mo Zheng. Mo Zheng looked unshaken. He had used the Deva-Mara Body Cleansing Technique in the demon pond in the Ancient Demon Clan. He was incredibly strong.

After practicing demon cultivation, Mo Zheng had started studying Death Dao. Back then, the Ancient Demon Clan had then taken him to the Ten Yama Courts and then he had been accepted into the Hell Shrine. He had an extraordinary life in Hell.

Mo Zheng took a step forwards, and demon strength rolled out. He looked like a peerless demon, his Death Dao rolled around him fearsomely.

“Demon, Demonic Punisher, his demon strength is incredible,” the crowd observed. He looked like an unparalleled demon king!

“Demon Dao, Demonic Punisher’s Dao, the path of aggressiveness.” Everybody was staring at Mo Zheng as he raised his fist and punched out.

“Floating Sword!” said Mo Fu coldly. His demon voice turned into a demon sword, which shot towards Mo Zheng. However, Mo Zheng waved his hand, and demons appeared all around and converged on the sword. Mo Zheng wasn’t weaker than Mo Fu.

“How strong. It’s a clash of demons!” mused the crowd. Mo Zheng waved his hands again, and death strength appeared and turned into a river of Death Dao.

“Dual Dao power!” The crowd was astonished. Mo Zheng

understood dual Dao strength: one was Demon Dao, the other one was Death Dao. How impressive! He really looked like a demon god, and a god of death!

“The Hell Shrine’s cultivators are extremely strong. In the future, the competition will be even fiercer in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

Their battle was amazing. Mo Fu’s fighting abilities were already incredible for a Celestial Emperor, and he was amongst the strongest cultivators of his generation in the Demon Shrine. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have invited so many people to come and watch his battle against Mo Zheng after members of his Shrine, the Demon Shrine, had been killed. In contrast, Mo Zheng hadn’t displayed such strength when he had defeated those cultivators of the Demon Shrine.

Today, two Shrines had lost, the Fire Shrine and the Demon Shrine. One lost against the World Clan, and the other lost against a cultivator from Hell.

---

Lin Feng wasn’t interested in their battle. After leaving, Aomo caught up with him and Lin Feng heard a dragon chant. Lin Feng suddenly turned around and looked at Aomo coldly.

Aomo roared and turned into a black dragon. He looked ferocious. He threw himself at Lin Feng.

Instantly the men next to Lin Feng turned into beasts and moved to intercept him. Bestial Qi rolled out. They were vigilant and careful. Aomo was a real dragon from the Dragon Clan. Being a dragon was similar to having a king-type body!

“Come back!” ordered Lin Feng casually. The beasts looked to Lin Feng. He looked totally composed. They came back to him, but they were still staring at that demon dragon.

The huge dragon moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng smiled,

astonishing them. Was Lin Feng insane?

But then the dragon started rubbing his face against Lin Feng's face. How cute!

What is going on...?

Lin Feng caressed the dragon gently. He smiled and said, "Little boy, you're still young."

The dragon rumbled, speaking draconic. Lin Feng jumped onto him and said, "Alright, let's go."

The dragon rose up in the air and they flew away. Everybody was stunned... Lin Feng had raised a dragon?

Lin Feng and the others went back to the Northwest Area. After a short time, the news that the World Clan had started rising again in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds quickly spread. The news that the World Clan had won against the Fire Shrine at the Mo Jia's Battle Stage also spread. It was the second time that the Fire Shrine had been humiliated!

# Chapter 2312: Daimon Draws Attention

---

In the Northwest Area, there was a mountain range with a powerful Qi. From the top of the mountain, one could only see clouds and lofty buildings. It was the World Clan, a location great for Qi. In the past, powerful groups had fought over that region, but these days, the World Clan had it for themselves.

In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, every inch of land was expensive and important. If someone wanted to invade an area, they had to fight. Only strength mattered in that world. The strongest groups had the best territories.

The World Clan was strong now, so they had managed to take this place.

Of course, the World Clan was composed of several groups of influence: the army Lin Feng had obtained from the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, the army of the World Clan themselves, and Lin Feng's personal army. Everybody listened to Lin Feng, and the World Clan didn't require anything from him. The only requirement they had was that when Lin Feng was in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he had to say he was from the World Clan!

But it wasn't really a requirement, because Lin Feng needed another identity anyway. He couldn't compete with the Shrines, so he couldn't stay in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds relying on his real identity.

---

There was a black dragon floating above Lin Feng. He had become tiny, only seven-some meters. If Aolie saw that, he would have been astonished. A demon dragon was ferocious and brutal, and surprisingly, it looked cute in front of Lin Feng. It was difficult to imagine.

However, to Aomo, Lin Feng was like a mother. Lin Feng had raised him!

“Little boy, let’s go,” said Lin Feng to Aomo. Aomo instantly rose up into the air and took Lin Feng away. He roared out, and everybody heard a dragon chant in the World Clan.

On a gigantic stone nearby was an old man, who looked at the sky and thought, “The Forbidden Person has a dragon? How brilliant! The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds won’t be calm,” murmured the old man, smiling thinly.

---

Aomo took Lin Feng to the entrance of the Void Phoenix Clan, and roared to proclaim their arrival. Many strong cultivators of the Void Phoenix Clan came out and asked Lin Feng, “Who are you, Your Excellency?”

“Daimon from the World Clan. I met two incredibly beautiful women from the Void Phoenix Clan last time, and I have a strong admiration for them. I want to see them. Please tell them,” said Lin Feng calmly.

The strong cultivator was startled. This guy was Daimon? The one who had easily defeated Huo Shang. Everybody knew it, he was extraordinary...

“Please wait,” replied the guards. They started talking using telepathy and quickly, everybody, including the high officials of the Void Phoenix Clan, knew that Daimon from the World Clan was there.

A middle-aged man in a distant courtyard looked amused when he learned that Daimon had come, “A few days ago, Huo Xing Zi introduced that little insane cultivator to Qing Feng. But Qing Feng likes Lin Feng, now Daimon seems interested in Qing Feng and came to see her. Things are getting interesting.”

The middle-aged man didn’t have any suspicions regarding

Daimon 's identity. After all, the World Clan had reappeared, and they were very strong. The fact that they wanted to rise again was normal, especially if they had really strong cultivators.

“The World Clan wants to make friends with some Holy Sage Ruler Clans to help them endure the pressure from the Shrines...” The middle-aged man smiled when thinking about it. It really seemed to be Daimon's purpose.

However, Daimon was Lin Feng!

After a short time, some people appeared outside of the clan in front of Lin Feng. They were extremely strong, and were interested in Daimon and his World Robe.

“The World Clan was very famous back in the days. Unfortunately, when I was younger, the World Clan was already hiding. There are legends in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, it is said that during the golden age of the World Clan, there was a peerless cultivator who could destroy entire worlds and was very arrogant. How did he die in the end? Daimon, you're a genius in the World Clan, so you probably know the truth, will you tell us about him?” challenged an old man loudly at that moment. He sounded calm and serene.

“You can come and try to get pieces of information, if you wish,” replied Lin Feng, smiling thinly. The strong cultivators of the Void Phoenix Clan stared at him.

“I'll try!” said a strong cultivator at that moment, flashing forwards. He was a Celestial Emperor. He smiled at Lin Feng and said, “I really want to see how strong the cultivators of the World Clan are, what powers they have!”

He threw himself at Lin Feng and raised his hand. People around heard a sonic boom. It was like a shooting star was flying towards Lin Feng.

The atmosphere became illusionary and kept changing

unpredictably. The man had the impression he had landed in another world.

“World strength corrodes cosmic energies!” said Lin Feng indifferently. His opponent realized that he couldn’t use his cosmic energies anymore. Lin Feng slowly walked towards him.

Lin Feng struck the man, smashing him away, to crash hard to the ground. He coughed up blood and his face paled. The world around him became normal again.

“What’s going on? My cosmic energies?” That strong cultivator pulled a long face; World strength had taken him elsewhere and corroded his cosmic energies?

The strong cultivators of the Void Phoenix glanced at one another in astonishment. What a strange attack! A moment before, when they realized that the two had disappeared, they had sensed a mysterious world strength and a second later, their man reappeared and was badly injured. His cosmic energies had been corroded, too?

“Extraordinary, as expected.” At that moment, nobody doubted that Lin Feng was from the World Clan at all. They had seen authentic world strength. How could they know that it was Lin Feng’s own world strength?

“What the hell is that thing?! My blood is stirring restlessly,” said the strong cultivator, staring at Lin Feng and Aomo. Aomo looked like an illusionary dragon at that moment because he was very small.

Aomo roared out angrily. A black dragon descended from the sky and landed in front of the man, sharp claws moving towards him. A terrifying oppressive strength surrounded him. The dragon was gigantic, a thousand meters long! The cultivator’s heart started pounding.

The ground cracked, the claws grabbed him. If the demon dragon



pressed with more force, he could cut him apart.

“Be merciful!” shouted the other strong cultivators of the World Clan when they saw that. Everybody could hear a dragon chant. The demon dragon stopped moving, the strong cultivator covered with cold sweat.

The strong cultivators of the Void Phoenix Clan raised their heads and looked at the demon dragon. Lin Feng was standing on its head, standing there with his hands clasped behind his back, his robe fluttering in the wind. He looked enigmatic and unfathomable.

“It’s a real dragon, he’s riding a real dragon!” The strong cultivators of the Void Phoenix Clan were astonished. It was a demon dragon, it was probably the demon dragon who had come to the Demon Shrine with Aolie the other time, a dragon from the Dragon Clan of the Supreme Animal World!

That gigantic dragon was real, which meant he was like human being who had a king-type body. They were proud and arrogant. That Daimon from the World Clan had made him submit, and was using him as a means of transportation; he was much stronger than they had thought! The World Clan had come back to life and had some incredible geniuses!

The crowd remained silent. In the distance, an old man arrived and said to Lin Feng, “I just sent some people to call Miss Qing Feng and Miss Jing. If they want to see you, they will come.”

“Since it’s that way, I’ll wait here,” Lin Feng smiled. Actually, he was already talking to Qing Feng, and nobody had informed her he was there.

Even though he had displayed his strength, the Void Phoenix Clan was still unwilling to let him see her. The Void Phoenix Clan wanted to give the Fire Shrine face because they had been humiliated twice. The Fire Shrine was really infuriated these days. If the Void Phoenix Clan allowed Qing Feng and Jing to go and see

Daimon, it would be a third humiliation!

## Chapter 2313: Phoenix Blood Talisman

---

Lin Feng waited for an hour and the same person said to him, “Daimon, Your Excellency, you’ve been waiting for a while and they didn’t come, they probably don’t want to see you. You should leave.”

Lin Feng smiled at him and said, “Last time, Miss Jing, Miss Qing Feng, and I had a talk and they said they would be happy to see me if I came and paid them a visit.”

When he saw Lin Feng’s smile, the old man was surprised, but he smiled back and replied, “Maybe that they were happy at that moment, and they have changed their minds. She’s going to get married to someone from the Fire Shrine. Seeing you would be inappropriate.”

“I don’t believe you. I asked Miss Qing Feng about that, she said she didn’t want to get married to anyone from the Fire Shrine in front of them. You are a liar,” said Lin Feng, shaking his head. The demon dragon roared angrily and rose up in the air.

Lin Feng looked at the Void Phoenix Clan’s territory and suddenly spoke out, “Miss Qing Feng, Miss Jing! It’s me, Daimon from the World Clan!”

Everybody in the Void Phoenix Clan heard him. His voice caused a soundwave all over the Void Phoenix Clan. Many people raised their heads and gazed into the distance. Daimon from the World Clan had defeated Huo Shang from the Fire Shrine, did he like Miss Jing and Miss Qing Feng? Those two women did stand out, they were extremely beautiful. Otherwise, the Fire Shrine wouldn’t have tried to propose a marriage alliance for them!

“Your Excellency, what is that supposed to mean?” said a few strong cultivators from the Void Phoenix Clan coldly, pulling long faces.

“It means I don’t believe you,” said Lin Feng, lowering his hand and looking at them on the ground.

After a few seconds, two silhouettes flickered as they arrived. They looked happy, relaxed and light-hearted: Qing Feng and Jing!

Jing was surprised, who was this guy? Why did Feng always want to see him? She had noticed that Qing Feng had feelings for Lin Feng. Was she trying to find another boyfriend, just to not get married to a member of the Fire Shrine?

Last time, he had defeated people from the Fire Shrine, fine, but now? She still wanted to see him!

“Miss Qing Feng, Miss Jing,” Lin Feng smiled. “The Void Phoenix Clan lied and said you didn’t want to see me. Luckily, I didn’t believe them, so I took the liberty to call you.”

“It doesn’t matter. I didn’t know you were here, what’s up?” asked Qing Feng patiently. She was pretending to look indifferent, of course.

“Nothing much. I was happy to meet you last time. Would you like to go for a walk?”

“Feng, forget it,” said Jing. She didn’t like this guy. He didn’t seem like a good person to her.

But Qing Feng nodded and said, “Alright.”

Jing was astonished, and could only smile wryly. What was Feng thinking?

“Great, come up,” Lin Feng smiled. Jing and Qing Feng jumped smoothly onto the demon dragon. Lin Feng glanced at the crowd from the Void Phoenix Clan and said coldly, “You’re all liars.”

Then, he turned around and the dragon rose up into the air again. But someone shouted, “Your Excellency, please wait.”

“What do you want now?” replied Lin Feng turning his head.

“Your Excellency, don’t you care about deteriorating the

relations between your clan and the Void Phoenix Clan? You'll cause trouble to both Clans this way," said that person to Lin Feng smoothly. He had thought that Lin Feng was trying to establish connections between the World Clan and the Void Phoenix Clan.

It was understandable though. Lin Feng understood, he smiled and said, "You overestimate the position the Void Phoenix Clan has in my heart."

Then, he smiled sinisterly, and the demon dragon continued rising up in the air. The strong cultivators of the Void Phoenix Clan were stunned. That guy looked so evil, but he was incredible too. He was arrogant, but his arrogance wasn't baseless.

Nobody could prevent Jing and Qing Feng from leaving with him but the news that they had left with Daimon quickly spread through the Void Phoenix Clan, especially higher up in the hierarchy. That way, the news would also reach the Fire Shrine. Of course, many people were not happy about it at all.

—————

In a fiery tower in the Fire Shrine, some people were gazing into the distance. Huo Xing Zi and Huo Shang were there, too.

"I've heard that Qing Feng left with that guy from the World Clan," said a young man next to Huo Shang and Huo Xing Zi. Huo Xing Zi was stupefied. He couldn't do much about it.

"Brother Huo Shang, is Daimon strong?" asked the young man, as he slowly turned around.

"Very strong. I can't defeat him," said Huo Shang calmly. Even though he had lost against Daimon and it was humiliating, he was brave enough to speak the truth.

"Alright," the young man nodded. He asked, "The one you chose in the Fire Shrine was me?"

"We don't know yet. Huo Xing Zi was a possibility, and on the other side, we can change that if you wish. You can be the one

too.” replied Huo Shang. “The person has to be very important to the Fire Shrine, but changing the person isn’t a problem, anyway. They won’t say anything if we do. We just can’t disappoint anyone.”

“On their side, Qing Feng is a good choice. Let’s get ready and go to the Void Phoenix Clan,” said the young man calmly. Huo Shang smiled thinly. They needed someone important, indeed. They had to make those people understand that the Fire Shrine didn’t have an undeserved reputation.

“I’ll organize everything,” said Huo Shang, before leaving with Huo Xing Zi.

After they left, an ordinary looking middle-aged man appeared behind the young man. Actually, he had been standing there the whole time, but it was as if he didn’t exist. Even Huo Xing Zi and Huo Shang hadn’t paid attention to him.

The middle-aged said, “Huo Shang is using you!”

“I know,” said the young man. “At least, he’s using me to earn such a position in the Fire Shrine.”

“You look more and more like him,” said the middle-aged man, smiling and leaning against a wall.

The young man was startled, and seemed to care a lot as he asked, “In what way?”

“He’s always been like that, nobody can make him do anything. He only does what he wants.”

The young man shook his head, “Not really, but I am not that free.”

“You will be, sooner or later,” stated the middle-aged man firmly.

“Thank you for your support,” said the young man. He seemed pensive. By “him”, the middle-aged man meant that young man’s idol.

Geniuses all had idols. Huo Xing Zi and Huo Shang were core disciples in the Fire Shrine, and they had very important positions. They also represented the Fire Shrine outside. They were very talented, they progressed quickly on the path of cultivation, and they had incredible fighting abilities.

However, in the Shrine, there were even more talented geniuses, more important than them. For example, Huo Shang was considered as a core disciple of the Fire Shrine, but there were other people who were considered the soul of the Shrines, and they called the shots!

—

On that very day, the Void Phoenix Clan received the members of the Fire Shrine with the best ceremony possible. In his courtyard, when the middle-aged man heard that they were coming, he smiled and said, “Great. That mad one is really coming.”

At the same time, some Qi appeared in the sky. A beautiful woman appeared and said coldly, “Who are you going to force Qing Feng to get married to?”

The middle-aged man raised his head and remained silent. The woman said, “Tell me!”

The middle-aged man finally smiled and said, “Force? I never forced anyone. She agreed herself. And you know with whom.”

“So you agree to say you organized all this,” said the woman coldly.

“First impressions are strongest. Stick to them,” smiled the middle-aged man. “They should be here now. The clan told me you should go and welcome them since you’re Qing Feng’s mother.”

“Bastard. Qing Feng is not going to get married to him. You want her to end up in a pit of hell.”

“You think your daughter is not good enough for him?” the middle-aged man smiled. The woman was speechless. Finally, she

turned around and left.

---

Qing Feng didn't know what was going on there. She was with Lin Feng, and they were chatting in a restaurant. Lin Feng and Qing Feng looked very close already. Jing was speechless. She didn't understand what was going on.

Jing's facial expression suddenly changed, "Qing Feng, the Clan is calling us, we have to go back."

"I won't go," replied Qing Feng indifferently.

"It's the Phoenix Blood Talisman. It must be very important, we have to go back, or the consequences will be dramatic," insisted Jing.

Qing Feng looked surprised and said to Jing, "The Phoenix Blood Talisman?"

"Indeed. The Void Phoenix Clan uses it for the most serious orders," said Jing nodded. Qing Feng's eyes glittered. She said to Lin Feng, "Wait for me here. I will come back afterwards."

"Alright," Lin Feng agreed. He didn't know what was going on in the Void Phoenix Clan, but letting Qing Feng go back probably wasn't an issue.



# Chapter 2314: Paying a Visit to the Fire Shrine

---

Qing Feng and Jing went back. They realized that many strong cultivators had gathered in a main hall, including important people from many clans.

That palace was the most imposing and magnificent, used for extraordinary ceremonies. There were phoenix statues and carvings everywhere. They looked almost alive as they kept moving.

It was the first time Qing Feng had been there, so Jing led the way. There was a huge crowd seated there, and a banquet table... but nobody helping themselves. They were just chatting.

When the crowd saw Qing Feng and Jing arrive, they all suddenly turned around, and stared at Qing Feng.

“Qing Feng, come here and have a seat,” said the organizer of the banquet, an old man. He smiled at Qing Feng gently. Qing Feng had never seen him before, but he smiled at her as if they were close to one another. He even looked very kind. But that precisely made Qing Feng grow cold.

It was difficult to explain how she felt with words. An old man who had an extraordinarily high position within the Void Phoenix Clan was being extremely kind to her, what was the reason? Qing Feng didn't feel honored at all.

“Qing Feng, that's the greatest elder of the Void Phoenix Clan, Saint Xiang. He's an extraordinary living being. Next to him is the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan,” Jing told Qing Feng.

Qing Feng was astonished. She said indifferently, “I'll just sit on the ground.”

Saint Xiang nodded and smiled, “If you prefer, no problem. Seats are a trivial matter.”

Qing Feng and Jing sat down on the ground and heard Saint Xiang say, “Qing Feng, this is Qiong Hai Ya.”

“Qiong!” Jing frowned, and her beautiful eyes glittered. Someone whose family name is Qiong is from the Fire Shrine!!!

Jing looked at Qing Feng. Qing Feng looked calm and serene. Hadn’t she heard? Or didn’t she know who the Qiong’s were in the Fire Shrine?

Qiong Hai Ya just glanced at Qing Feng, and smiled at her calmly. He raised his cup of tea and had a few sips. He continued watching Qing Feng after that.

She frowned. He wasn’t very polite, so she just grunted coldly.

The hearts of the members of the Void Phoenix Clan started pounding furiously when they heard Qing Feng. But Qiong Hai Ya smiled easily. “I like that kind of personality.”

He sounded quite composed. Saint Xiang smiled, “Hai Ya, if you like Qing Feng, that is great, especially since you’re going to spend the rest of your lives together.”

“Qing Feng is so lucky,” smiled a strong cultivator of the Void Phoenix Clan. It sounded like Qing Feng was goods to be sold.”

“What is that supposed to mean?” said Qing Feng, frowning icily.

“Qing Feng, Qiong Hai Ya is your future husband. Be good to him,” said Saint Xiang, smiling gently. Qing Feng was astonished when she realized what was going on. The Void Phoenix Clan wanted her to marry him. Actually, it wasn’t the idea of the Void Phoenix Clan, it was the idea of the Fire Shrine.

“No,” said Qing Feng, suddenly standing up. Her expression changed drastically, she was furious.

“Qing Feng,” said Jing. Her face stiffened. They weren’t in their own courtyard here, and her mother wasn’t there. The greatest cultivators of the clan were here. Qing Feng couldn’t be rude. The

consequences would be disastrous.

As expected, Saint Xiang frowned. A terrifying strength surrounded Qing Feng. She could barely breathe.

“Take her down. She doesn’t understand anything. Hai Ya, I hope you don’t mind,” said Saint Xiang, waving his hands. Instantly, some people threw themselves at Qing Feng. Qing Feng wanted to say something, but some people grabbed her and took her away. Qiong Hai Ya remained composed, even expressionless.

“Hai Ya, we can discuss the wedding. Huo Xing Zi, Jing, you can prepare things together,” said Saint Xiang, smiling calmly. Initially, he didn’t intend to get involved in Jing’s wedding, but now he did.

“Alright. Good,” said Qiong Hai Ya, smiling and nodding. Jing’s expression turned deathly pale. When Qing Feng had been taken away, she hadn’t reacted because she knew it was useless. She couldn’t do anything.

Lin Feng waited for Qing Feng for a very long time. He used his godly awareness to contact her and she didn’t reply. Lin Feng’s heart twitched. The Void Phoenix Clan probably prevented her from doing anything. Otherwise, she would have replied instantly. Qing Feng might be imprisoned and oppressed. They could also prevent her from receiving messages using godly awareness. She was probably isolated from the outside world.

“Little boy, let’s go back,” said Lin Feng, petting the dragon’s head. They didn’t go to the Void Phoenix Clan. He could imagine what was happening.

The dragon rumbled and took Lin Feng away. As they flew above the clouds, the dragon rumbled more, telling Lin Feng something.

“You’re telling me we should go to the Supreme Animal World? They can help me?” Lin Feng understood what the dragon said. He was surprised, but demurred. “No need. I can solve the problem

myself. But the problem is not the Void Phoenix Clan, it's the Fire Shrine, they're waiting for me."

"Fire Shrine." The dragon didn't understand what Lin Feng meant. Lin Feng gazed into the distance.

---

At the same time, the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine left the Void Phoenix Clan. Qiong Hai Ya gazed into the distance, in the direction of the World Clan. He smiled provokingly.

The Fire Shrine had been humiliated twice. Now, it was time to show everyone that nobody wanted to humiliate them.

Daimon and the World Clan had to learn that, too.

Qiong Hai Ya really wanted to see how strong Daimon was. Why is he so arrogant?

---

Lin Feng returned to the World Clan and went to a courtyard. There was an old man from the World Clan there. When he saw the demon dragon, he rose up into the air and greeted him. "Lin Feng, how come you have sought me out?"

"You probably understand how strong the army of the World Clan is, and you probably understand how strong my army is. In your opinion, are we strong enough to fight against the Void Phoenix Clan?" Lin Feng asked calmly.

The old man frowned and replied, "Resisting them isn't a problem. But the Void Phoenix Clan is a Holy Sage Ruler Clan. They have existed for a very long time. Unless it's necessary, we don't need to be enemies with them," the old man answered. "Of course, it's just a suggestion. If you think otherwise, I don't mind."

"I don't think we need to fight against them either. I just asked randomly. Help me transmit a message. Say that Daimon wants to go to the Fire Shrine to apologize, and he wants to pay a visit to the

Fire Shrine in the name of the World Clan,” said Lin Feng.

The old man frowned. How insane! This madman wants to pay a visit to the Fire Shrine?

# Chapter 2315: Godly Fire Shield

---

The news that the World Clan wanted to pay a visit to the Fire Shrine spread quickly. Many people paid attention to it. The Fire Shrine had been humiliated, and were going through difficult times. Now the World Clan had suddenly reappeared in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and they had a terrifying young disciple: Daimon! He was extremely strong, and had easily defeated Huo Shang. That could be a problem for the Fire Shrine...

The meeting point they agreed on was Ruins City, an ancient city full of ruins on fire. There weren't many ancient cities in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and it was one of them. It was said that in the ancient past, a person of unusual ability called Qiong Xiao had set the city on fire with a Magic Hellfire and slaughtered millions of people like that. He then created some Holy Sage Ruler Clans, and had helped the Fire Shrine become extremely strong.

The city was perfect for fire cultivators, and many people still went there to practice fire cultivation. The flames there never went out.

Everybody knew the legends about Ruins City. The Fire Shrine proposed Ruins City for their meeting with the World Clan on purpose. Many people thought the Fire Shrine wouldn't go through the same thing as last time.

The Demon Shrine had agreed to meet with Mo Zheng on their battle stage, but they hadn't gained face; on the contrary, they had lost face. As a result, Mo Zheng was becoming famous in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

The Shrines were like gods in this world; each time they did something, everybody paid attention to them.

Many people thought that the World Clan was brave. Did they

really want to apologize? If that was the case, why would the Fire Shrine have chosen Ruins City to meet them?

Many strong cultivators who learned about this headed off to Ruins City.

Ruins City was filled with ruins and fire, so there weren't many people there normally. But this time, many people, had gathered, staying high up in the sky because they didn't want to get hurt. There were random explosions all the time here.

Of course, some extremely strong cultivators also walked on the ground in the middle of the ruins and flames!

“Those people are extremely strong. They must all be Celestial Emperors, at least! Even though Ruins City's flames aren't as terrifying as in the past, they're still deadly. Even some Saint Emperors could die here, especially when there are random explosions!” quipped a strong cultivator in the sky. The city was dangerous, everybody knew it!

“Ordinary people can't come here. Those who come must be at least Celestial Emperors. But look over there, there's a clan; they live here!” said someone, pointing at a nearby fire mountain at that moment. There was a small city at its foot, and a clan was living there.

“Those clans are fire clans. They're very dangerous. They keep absorbing fire to become stronger. They've lived here for a very long time, they're really dangerous.”

People didn't know much about the clans that lived in Ruins City. In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, cities were gigantic. Even though Ruins City was filled with ruins, there were still some people who lived there, but nobody paid attention to them.

“How hot. The temperature is increasing. Those people the Fire Shrine will send are among the strongest of the Shrine, I would

guess. They decided to meet the members of the World Clan here to make things difficult for them,” remarked someone.

Finally, they saw some people appear in the distance. They were on the ground and looked like fire spirits, and were holding terrifying fire shields. There were ancient patterns on them, absorbing the flames around them.

“Back then when Qiong Xiao fought in that great war, he had a fire shield, it was terrifying. And now the Fire Shrine sent such terrifying people. It’s going to be difficult for the World Clan.” thought the crowd staring at the crowd on the ground.

“Who are those in the middle? They look quite imposing!” asked someone. There was a young man with a shield there.

“Qiong Hai Ya!” whispered someone, gazing into the distance. In the outside world, Qiong Hai Ya wasn’t as famous as Huo Shang. Many people had never even heard about him, only a few extremely strong and important people from various Clans knew about him. People who knew were always astonished when they met someone whose name was Qiong.

Many people from different Shrines had arrived. They were in the sky, and when they saw the force on the ground, they were astonished. The Fire Shrine really wanted to regain face. Even Qiong Hai Ya was there. Huo Shang was also in the middle of the crowd and holding a fire shield, too.

“The Fire Shrine’s shields, a very powerful shield technique. It’s almost unbreakable. How is the World Clan going to come in?” wondered the members of the Shrines. If they didn’t manage to break through, then it meant they weren’t qualified to meet them.

If the World Clan came, they’d just humiliate themselves!

At that moment, bestial Qi rose to the skies. An eagle dove down, his body so big that he blotted out the sky. He didn’t care about the flames. Small black blades emerged from his mouth and descended



from the sky.

The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine moved too. The patterns on the fire shields changed and suddenly a gigantic illusionary field appeared. The bestial energies could easily destroy mountains, but the shield blocked all his attacks.

The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine condensed all their strength in that shield and suddenly it started spitting out flames which filled the air. The beast roared furiously and rose back up in the air, furious as it started burning.

“As expected, the Fire Shrine doesn’t intend to let anyone come to the ground,” sighed the crowd when they saw that. Huo Shang was a genius of the Fire Shrine and he was in the crowd, protecting it too.

The Fire Shrine had chosen Ruins City because they could use the shield Qiong Xiao had used back then. They wanted people to remember Qiong Xiao and them!

“How strong. Saint Emperors can’t even break through the shield,” the crowd mused. Even though they weren’t participating, they could imagine how terrifying that shield was.

“Since the World Clan is here, come out, all of you, no need to hide,” said one of the protectors at that moment. The crowd was surprised. The World Clan was already there?

Cyan lights twinkled. Many silhouettes appeared around the battlefield, coming out of nowhere, surrounded by mysterious world lights. They came out of the flames of Ruins City. It was difficult to imagine.

“The World Clan likes to hide. They’ve been hiding for such a long time!” said someone mockingly.

“We just came to apologize, and you made us come here, and you brought such an army. You really overestimate the World Clan,” said an old man, smiling as he stared at the members of the Fire

Shrine.

“We don’t really care about your apologies. How many people did you bring? To pay us a visit, you need to prove you’re qualified,” said the strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine. If the World Clan wanted to pay them a visit, they first had to break the shield!

# Chapter 2316: Illusion Deployment Spell

---

Outside of the protected area, the silhouettes became real. The strong cultivators of the World Clan had officially arrived now.

“How strong. How powerful is the World Clan now?” the watching crowd wondered. “But even that way, they won’t be able to break through. That fire shield is incredible, both in terms of defense and offense.”

“Since it’s that way, even though we’re very weak, if you want to show us how powerful the fire shield is, we’ll have to give it a try,” said the old man of the World Clan calmly. Reality began to undulate. The strong cultivators of the World Clan were using godly awareness to communicate.

“World Gate!” said someone coldly. Dazzling world lights moved towards the sky and condensed. Instantly, Qi started being corroded. A dazzling world gate appeared and absorbed strength.

“Go!” The strong cultivators of the World Clan joined hands to attack, the gate moved towards the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine and surrounded them while people shouted furiously.

Their fire started being absorbed. The illusionary world door surrounded them. Their silhouettes became illusionary, it as if they could disappear anytime.

“Protect!” said a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine at that moment. The fire shield appeared in front of that strong cultivator and blocked the world lights.

“Teleportation!” said someone coldly. The atmosphere warped. The Fire Shrine’s strong cultivator was being drawn towards the gate!

The crowd was astonished. The attack of the World Clan’s strong cultivators was astonishing. World strength was mysterious and powerful. No wonder they were strong!

“Godly Body Connection Defense!” said the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine coldly. Dazzling fire lights appeared and suddenly, it was like the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were connected. A terrifying fire shield appeared and surrounded all of them. The world lights couldn’t pierce through anymore.

“Incredible defense, how terrifying. It’s as hard as diamond.”

“I had never thought I would ever have the opportunity to see the fire shield of the Fire Shrine in my life, and especially used by Saint Emperors. How incredible!”

“Die!” said someone aggressively and furiously. Fireballs streaked across the sky and turned into greedy and hungry fire beasts.

World lights condensed, the strong cultivators of the World Clan became illusionary and disappeared. The fire struck nothing but air.

“Attack!” said a strong cultivator of the World Clan. They gathered and moved in the same direction. They needed to find an angle which they’d be able to pierce through.

The energies gathering were oppressive. World strength filled the air, but the Fire Shrine cultivators didn’t change. They had faith in their fire shield, it couldn’t be broken. It was flawless!

“Break!” said someone. World strength descended from the sky everywhere.

“Godly Lacerating Shield!”

Hard shields appeared above the Fire Shriners and rose into the air. They turned into a vortex of sharp strength, that seemed able to cut apart anything. The world strength started breaking apart, but continued moving down, towards the strong cultivators under the shield. It seemed unbreakable.

Clear shattering sounds arose. The godly shield started cracking. There were explosions as the world strength assaulted it. At the same time, it continued spitting out terrifying flames and

destroying the world strength.

When all the energies vanished, the Fire Shrine's strong cultivators were still holding the shield up. The strong cultivators of the World Clan were astonished. The shield seemed unbreakable...

It seemed as hard as diamond. The Fire Shrine's strong cultivators borrowed shield strength and were all connected together.

"The World Clan was very strong, as expected. They were starting to pierce through that incredible defense," said a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine. He sounded proud and arrogant. They didn't attack, they just defended. They had hoped the World Clan wouldn't be able to break through at all.

Qiong Hai Ya stood there calmly, as if all this had nothing to do with him.

"If the World Clan cannot break the shield thoroughly, we'll start attacking," said Qiong Hai Ya calmly. At that moment, in the distance, a silhouette appeared indistinctly in the flames.

"Is someone there?"

"Surprisingly, that person is walking in the flames, how strong."

"It's him. Daimon. There are people behind him too."

The crowd finally noticed Lin Feng. Many people frowned. Walking slowly in the middle of Ruins City's flames was extraordinary.

"What's that? A demon dragon?" The crowd noticed a gigantic creature next to Lin Feng, it looked like a demon dragon was following Lin Feng. They were getting closer and closer, so the crowd could see them more distinctly.

Qiong Hai Ya looked at Lin Feng, startled. He was there? Daimon who had defeated Huo Shang from the Fire Shrine easily? That

Daimon was probably a leader in the clan, just below the Saints!

“I heard that last time, Daimon went to the Void Phoenix Clan on a dragon. The rumors were true. A demon dragon of the Supreme Animal World is following Daimon!” the crowd gasped.

Lin Feng and the demon dragon arrived in front of the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine and looked at the shield.

That kind of shield couldn't be broken with powerful attacks. Only Saints could break it. Since the shield was made of many shields, they had to attack them one by one and prevent them from being harmonized.

The members of the Fire Shrine remained calm and looked at Daimon and his dragon.

“We initially wanted to come to apologize and pay a visit to the members of the Fire Shrine. In the end, you sent such a powerful army and we're meeting far away from your territory. Why?” Lin Feng asked Qiong Hai Ya calmly.

“Not anyone can come to the Fire Shrine, especially to pay us a visit,” replied Qiong Hai Ya indifferently. They both put on an air of extreme arrogance.

“Alright,” said Lin Feng nodding. He said, “Since you don't want to be friends with the World Clan, I'll have to solve the issue myself. Everybody, protect me from the sides,” ordered Lin Feng calmly. The strong cultivators of the World Clan landed at Lin Feng's sides instantly.

Lin Feng walked forwards, he didn't release a terrifying Qi, he looked calm and serene. He looked at all the members of the Fire Shrine and noticed Huo Shang.

“Daimon from the World Clan. Thank you for giving me the opportunity to study your shield,” said Lin Feng calmly. He said to all the members of the World Clan using telepathy, “Break the connections they have established between them!”

The strong cultivators of the World Clan released world strength which moved straight towards Huo Shang. The world strength started isolating Huo Shang from the rest of them. However, the shield was still there. Huo Shang continued holding his shield, too.

“You’re afraid of me,” said Lin Feng, smiling casually. Huo Shang was stunned and staring at Lin Feng.

“You have the godly shield, why are you afraid of me? And you’re considered as a genius of the Fire Shrine. You’re not very self-confident,” said Lin Feng, looking sad, as if he had pity for Huo Shang. Lin Feng sighed for him.

“Protect!” said the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine coldly. A gigantic shield appeared in front of Huo Shang.

“It’s useless. You’re not persistent, you’re not determined. You’re so weak. Even if someone protects you, it’s just like the cover of a book protecting the pages, you can easily tear it off,” said Lin Feng calmly. Huo Shang’s consciousness became dimly discernible. It was as if Lin Feng and Huo Shang were the only ones left around, and only Huo Shang could hear Lin Feng’s voice.

“That’s my world strength. You’re isolated from the rest of the world now. We are together, do you think your shield can still protect you like that?” Lin Feng sounded calm and sure.

Huo Shang frowned. Impossible. It was an illusion!

“You’re using an illusion technique. Even if you brought me here, I’m still with the others in the outside world. You can attack my will, but not my body,” said Huo Shang, trying to keep calm.

“You’re too naive. Nobody can break free from my world strength,” said Lin Feng easily. “Look carefully.”

He waved his hands and world strength rose up in the air, surrounding Huo Shang. He pulled a long face. He was really was isolated from the others.

“Attack!” said Huo Shang coldly. Suddenly, fire strength struck

out all around him. However, the strong cultivators around Lin Feng created world strength around them and the fire ended up in those doors. The attack didn't affect Lin Feng at all. Therefore, in Huo Shang's consciousness, the attack didn't work either.

“I told you, I can easily isolate you guys,” said Lin Feng calmly. He threw himself at Huo Shang and attacked. Huo Shang's face changed. He remembered how strong Lin Feng was, and suddenly retreated.



# Chapter 2317: Killing A Strong Cultivator of the Shrine

---

Huo Shang moved back, and a gap appeared in the shield. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were astonished and shouted, “Huo Shang!”

Huo Shang was astonished. He kept moving back, but Lin Feng continued moving towards him and smiling evilly.

It’s an illusion. He just wants to scare me and make me move back!, thought Huo Shang. Lin Feng moved towards him. The strong cultivators of the World Clan were protecting him and absorbing Huo Shang’s strength.

There was an explosion. Lin Feng punched a strong cultivator in front of him through the hole. The attack was dreadful, as Lin Feng’s physical strength was astonishing. His god Dao turned into a golden Heaven and Earth Qi which pressed forwards with indomitable will. Blinding lights kept flashing.

The strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine sensed the ominously heavy force. It was a heavy blow. He released fire strength and raised his shield.

The terrifying strength crashed onto the shield, the air trembled. The strong cultivator was pushed back a few steps. He groaned with pain and his shield cracked.

“Attack!” shouted Lin Feng. The strong cultivators of the World Clan used world strength, world gates appeared, and the atmosphere was even more distorted. A few people were absorbed by the gates. They appeared somewhere else and their battle array became chaotic.

The demon dragon roared furiously and jumped into the crowd. He swept out with his tail. Even though the demon dragon wasn’t very strong, he was strong enough to cause chaos in the enemies’

battle array.

The strong cultivators of the World Clan didn't want the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine to recreate their shield. Now that there was a hole, they had to take advantage of it!

Lin Feng moved like the wind. He threw himself at someone else, releasing world strength. That person had the impression he had landed in another world. Lin Feng then released a god sword.

Fire exploded around, the fire energies turned into an ocean of flames. Everything burned even more violently all around them. However, the ocean of fire began to distort and the strong cultivator's face stiffened.

His cosmic energies became chaotic! He was astonished, world strength could do that?

"This is my world," said Lin Feng, slowly walking towards him. Sword lights appeared all around him. They contained pitch-black death strength.

"You..." that person was astonished and shouted, "You're not from the World Clan!"

But the attack was already moving towards him. He retreated, but Lin Feng was faster. He condensed more and more death strength and death stamps. That cultivator's face turned deathly pale. He said, "Death, Death Dao. You're not Daimon from the World Clan, you're Lin Feng!"

"Death Oppression!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. Death was everywhere. That cultivator's face became even paler as the oppressive attack surrounded him. He had the impression a death world was crushing him. His face gradually turned pitch-black. His life was being corroded away.

"Die!" God strength penetrated into his body. He was furious, his body suddenly became gigantic. He turned into a fire giant, he was bathing in flames.

“Even if you’re angry, you’re still going to die,” said Lin Feng coldly. He continued running towards his enemy. A terrifying and aggressive Qi dashed to the skies and surged towards the fire giant. He started destroying his opponent’s Dao Will.

The man roared furiously, he didn’t want to die. Lin Feng dared try to kill a Saint Emperor of the Fire Shrine?!

In the outside world, the crowd noticed that Lin Feng and the Saint Emperor had disappeared in world lights. Nobody knew what was going on in there.

“Void Breaking Vision!” said a strong cultivator of the Empty Space Shrine. His eyes became dazzling and he looked at the world strength which surrounded Lin Feng and his opponent. He was astonished and said, “I can’t see through it. What kind of strength is that world strength? Does that Daimon have a World King Body?”

“You can’t see them?” Many people around were astonished. The Void Breaking Vision could see through almost anything. Surprisingly, he couldn’t see through that world strength?

“Yes, it seems empty inside, there’s nothing. It’s clearly not possible...” whispered the strong cultivator.

The crowd frowned. Daimon was really too strong. Even the Void Breaking Vision couldn’t see through his world strength!

A terrifying explosive strength rent the air with thunder and fire. The world strength broke apart. Lin Feng reappeared and groaned. There was blood on his clothes. At the same time, a terrifying fire strength appeared in the sky, and gradually vanished.

A shield fell down from the sky. People’s hearts started pounding violently. Where was the strong cultivator who was fighting against Lin Feng? Was he dead?

Many people were staring at Lin Feng, including Qiong Hai Ya. The members of the World Clan had killed a strong cultivator of

the Fire Shrine?

The World Clan dared act that arrogantly?

“Turning into an explosive fire Dao to explode and kill me at the cost of his life? What is that supposed to mean?! Why does the Fire Shrine hate me like that? Why are you doing this?!” said Lin Feng indifferently. The crowd frowned; turning into explosive Dao as a sacrifice to kill Daimon?

The fire strength which filled the air was indeed Fire Dao...

But even if the enemy had done that, it meant that Lin Feng had forced him to, nobody was ready to sacrifice themselves to die and kill an adversary!

“You killed a member of the Fire Shrine?” said Qiong Hai Ya, staring at Lin Feng coldly.

Lin Feng looked at him and said, “We came to apologize. Why did you prepare all this? That’s not what I had expected at all. However, a moment ago, even though he killed himself, it’s also because of me indirectly. Maybe he was too weak so when he sensed my strength, he got scared and thought it could kill him. In order not to tarnish the reputation of the Fire Shrine, he decided to kill himself and died.”

When the crowd heard him, they were speechless. What he was saying had many implications. The strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine was too weak and couldn’t withstand a single attack, so he killed himself. Daimon hadn’t killed him himself, the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine had provoked him and didn’t mind dying so they couldn’t blame him.

“He was too weak, so he deserved to die, indeed. If you’re too weak, you deserve to die too, of course,” said Qiong Hai Ya calmly... but he was also threatening Lin Feng.

“Even though the Fire Shrine is extremely strong, if we decide to battle to death, I don’t mind dying,” replied Lin Feng calmly. The

crowd was astonished. Daimon dared say that to Qiong Hai Ya. It meant that now they couldn't blame him anymore for that strong cultivator's death, even if he had killed him.

“Very good,” said Qiong Hai Ya coldly. Dazzling fire swords appeared around him.

“His family name is Qiong, how strong is he?” The crowd was staring at him. People whose family name was Qiong in the Fire Shrine were among the strongest cultivators of the Fire Shrine. They had held power and influence in the Fire Shrine for such a long time.

People from the other Shrines were also staring at Qiong Hai Ya. He rarely showed up outside. They were curious to see how strong he was, and what his fighting abilities were. If they saw how strong he was, they would be able to imagine how strong the Qions were.

Qiong Hai Ya flashed forwards, the fire swords behind him turning into suns. The fireballs were like small suns and could burn anything. There were nine sun swords around him before they oriented on Lin Feng.

However, he didn't stop there. Qiong Hai Ya flashed forwards and after that, nine ice-cold moons also appeared.

The crowd started trembling. Extreme cold and heat together made them shake, it was extremely unpleasant. “Sun Fire!” They were astonished. In Ruins City, apart from a scorching hot sun fire, there was also ice-cold moon coldness. Qiong Xiao, who had created the city, probably controlled two sorts of strength!

Lin Feng looked at the nine suns and nine moons. It reminded him of his cosmos-burning sun technique back in the days. Qiong Hai Ya was really strong.

The eighteen swords condensed together and turned into sun and moon patterns. Fire surged out. Two sorts of intent surrounded

Lin Feng. Many strong cultivators took steps backwards!

## Chapter 2318: Suddenly Leaving

---

The scorching hot Qi contained ice-cold energy too. Everybody understood that it was Qiong Hai Ya's Dao.

The strong cultivators of the World Clan and the Fire Shrine moved away to give space to Lin Feng and Qiong Hai Ya. Lin Feng looked calm and indifferent. However, he was a bit surprised on the inside. Qiong Hai Ya was probably a true core disciple of the Fire Shrine.

"The World Clan is back in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. I'm surprised that they chose to oppose the Fire Shrine," said Qiong Hai Ya indifferently.

Qiong Hai Ya was right, actually. Previously, when Mo Zheng and Mo Fu had agreed to have a battle, the World Clan had reappeared in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and they hadn't chosen to confront anyone else, yet they immediately provoked the Fire Shrine. The Fire Shrine wasn't very happy about it.

"Therefore, we'll see how long the World Clan will survive in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds," said Qiong Hai Ya. He didn't look nervous at all. Huo Shang was staring at Qiong Hai Ya in surprise. Qiong Hai Ya looked like a conquering hero. At his cultivation level, people were ever more dangerous, but they also grew more and more introverted.

Qiong Hai Ya stretched out his hand, and the sun and moon patterns suddenly moved towards Lin Feng. They looked extremely sharp, both hot and cold. Lin Feng sensed the heat and coldness. That kind of strength was much more powerful than pure cold or pure heat.

The moon and sun swords arrived. Lin Feng released an incredible amount of deployment lights, which turned into walls. However, the moon and sun swords pierced through them. Lin

Feng waved his hands and empty space cosmic energies filled the air. Beasts ran forwards and roared furiously, carrying the swords away.

“The World Clan’s strong cultivator’s world strength is terrifying. They can even use empty space strength to enhance their world strength,” the watching crowd analyzed.

Qiong Hai Ya groaned coldly. He jumped to the clouds, and a gigantic sword which seemed to come from the skies appeared, his sun and moon energies dazzling to the eyes. Two tornados made of fire appeared. It didn’t look like a sword attack anymore, but an ocean of fire.

Lin Feng looked at the sky, slowly walking forwards. His terrifying cosmic energies turned into empty space strength. A gigantic hand rose up into the air and grabbed the sword. A strong wind made of empty space strength roared furiously.

Qiong Hai Ya looked surprised, but just smiled coldly and disappeared from where he was. After a few seconds, the sun and moon strength penetrated into Lin Feng’s body with a formidable Dao strength.

Lin Feng released god strength inside of his body and started destroying his opponent’s Dao strength. A light emerged from Lin Feng’s body and shot towards the finger Hai Ya had used to release that attack. Lin Feng ignored everything else, he just focused on that finger.

The fire surrounded Lin Feng, his soul was shaking, facing the end of its time.

“How strong!” murmured the crowd. There was Saint’s strength in that attack, as if it had been a Saint’s finger.

“Die!” said Qiong Hai Ya to Lin Feng. His finger thrust towards Lin Feng’s third eye. But a terrifying strength moved towards Qiong Hai Ya and penetrated into his body. Lin Feng condensed



more strength and raised his fist, punching out a fist filled with god strength.

“You’re too naive!” said Lin Feng indifferently. There was an explosion, Lin Feng was now in the ocean of flames and coldness. It was a challenge for his soul. Lin Feng liked it. Qiong Hai Ya was smashed backwards, his finger trembling. It looked broken and painful. The strength assaulting the inside of his body was terrifying.

“Hmph!” Qiong Hai Ya groaned coldly, staring at Lin Feng. He started moving again and released fireballs at Lin Feng. This time, a terrifying cosmos burning hand imprint appeared, burning the air around it. The gigantic hand came down on Lin Feng.

Lin Feng moved again. A gigantic sword appeared and started destroying the hand. Dazzling empty space lights appeared and tore the gigantic hand apart. Lin Feng smiled coldly and said, “Today, we came to pay a visit to the Fire Shrine, but the Fire Shrine doesn’t like us and despises us. The World Clan doesn’t need to stay here. Let’s go.”

All the strong cultivators of the World Clan released world strength quickly, their silhouettes flickered and they were gone.

“What a mysterious world strength. The World Clan’s world strength is better than wind or empty space strength to travel. How ominous...” the crowd murmured.

Lin Feng withdrew and gradually disappeared from Qiong Hai Ya’s field of vision.

“It’s not over, you can’t leave,” said Qiong Hai Ya coldly. He ran towards Lin Feng and his demon dragon.

“We’re not leaving the region. We’ll meet again,” replied Lin Feng indifferently. The demon dragon took him away into the vast ocean of flames of Ruins City.

“Chase him!” said Qiong Hai Ya coldly. Instantly, the strong

cultivators of the Fire Shrine started flying after them into the ocean of flames. However, Lin Feng had disappeared inside.

There was a pained scream, and a strong cultivator came out of the flames, his lower body had disappeared and blood was dripping out. He looked wretched and miserable as he cried out sadly. He had almost died.

A silhouette suddenly appeared next to him. Qiong Hai Ya asked, "What's going on?"

"He wasn't gone. There was hidden world strength in there. He's still in there, I think," said the strong cultivator, pointing at the ground. His face was deathly pale, and blood kept dripping from his missing limbs.

But Lin Feng's Qi had already disappeared. Qiong Hai Ya looked furious.

"Next time, we'll exchange views on cultivation again with the Fire Shrine!" Lin Feng's voice came from the distance. All the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine gathered around Qiong Hai Ya and looked at him.

Qiong Hai Ya pulled a long face. He had chosen this place to help the Fire Shrine regain face, and once again they had failed! Lin Feng kept provoking them. He had even killed one of their Saint Emperors. In the end, he had just left, they hadn't even managed to get through in one piece.

Of course, many people had also seen how strong the Qiong Family of the Fire Shrine was. Qiong Hai Ya wasn't a stranger anymore in the region, he was going to be famous. How many people like him did the Shrines have?

Initially, Lin Feng wanted to pay a visit to the Fire Shrine, he hadn't thought things would be this dramatic. He hadn't thought they would need to fight. After all, the World Clan wasn't strong enough to fight against the Fire Shrine for real. He had appeared in

the name of the World Clan and couldn't display his real strength, or people would recognize his style.

What he had done today was enough!

Aomo roared his displeasure. Lin Feng was on his back and smiled, "I think that Qiong Hai Ya might be the one who wants to get married with Qing Feng. It should be true if they used the Phoenix Blood Talisman to contact her. The Qions must be famous in the Fire Shrine. We will definitely meet again."

## Chapter 2319: People from Everywhere

---

The World Clan and the Fire Shrine had battled. The Void Phoenix Clan had seen it, and they felt very unhappy. Daimon was incredibly strong, and sinister. However, he didn't know how to appreciate people's kindness. Surprisingly, he kept provoking the Fire Shrine. After all, Qiong Hai Ya and Qing Feng, as well as Huo Xing Zi and Jing, were now supposed to be close to one another. The Void Phoenix Clan treated them like they were part of the Fire Shrine.

Of course, some people were really happy, especially the members of the other Shrines. The Fire Shrine kept losing face. It was good for them, so they were gloating over the rival's misfortune. After all, the Shrines had existed for a very long time, but they were all competitors, not allies. If they had an opportunity, they would definitely finish off one another.

It was especially true now that the Void Phoenix Clan and the Fire Shrine were trying to push their relations to the next level. Of course, the other Shrines, including the Fortune Shrine, also had such relations with other clans from the Northwest Area, and other regions of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. As soon as the Shrines and people from other Clans got married, it propelled their relations to the next level. Such connections existed everywhere in the region.

---

The Buddha Shrine was in the Western part of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds where the Countless Shrine used to be. They were one of the oldest Shrines. They rarely tried to compete with the others. However, nobody dared underestimate them just because they didn't like fighting.

There were ancient districts on the ground. In the ancient times, in the Countless Shrine, there used to be many Buddhist schools. It

was a holy place for them.

A few people were on the flight of stairs, their clothes torn apart. They had fought in a great battle. However, their Qi was extremely powerful.

A young Buddhist monk looked at the Shrine and slowly walked up. He put his palms together, looking solemn and respectful.

Up in the sky, golden lights flashed, and a Sakyamuni Buddha appeared.

“Why did you come?” asked the Sakyamuni.

“I came to get help on the path of Buddhism,” declared the young Buddhist monk calmly. Some strong dazzling golden Buddhas appeared around him.

“What is Buddhism?” asked the golden Sakyamuni.

“I’ve been studying Buddhism for a very long time, but I can’t understand the true essence of Buddhism. That’s why I came,” replied the Buddhist monk in a sharp and clear voice.

“To ask for help on the path of Buddhism, you must go through eighty-one calamities. Can you endure that?” asked the golden Sakyamuni. The young Buddhist monk nodded calmly.

“Alright, the first calamity, the death calamity,” said the golden Sakyamuni coldly. A gigantic golden hand descended from the sky towards the young man. It was going to crush him!

The young man put his palms together and a gigantic ancient Buddha appeared. The gigantic Buddha hand and the ancient Buddha collided. Dazzling golden lights flashed.

“Why did you stop it?” asked the voice coldly. His Qi oppressed the young man.

“I came to ask for help on the path of Buddhism. If I wanted to experience death, I could do it anywhere else,” said the young man calmly, “Besides, if I could understand Buddhism for real, I’d

understand life and death even better, of course.”

After that, the Sakyamuni remained silent and disappeared. A Buddhist monk appeared at the top of the flight of stairs and asked, “He’s from the Fortune Shrine, why is he here?”

“People from the Fortune Shrine believe in destiny, and the destiny technique said he would be better off in the Buddha Shrine. My Shrine, the Fortune Shrine, is willing to exchange outstanding disciples with the Buddha Shrine. There is no interest conflict in being both a Buddhist and a member of the Fortune Shrine,” said a young man next to him. He smiled and looked up at the sky.

“The Fortune Shrine controls the Destiny Technique, they can predict destiny relatively precisely. Since they say Buddhism is appropriate for him, it must be. We’ll take him as a disciple,” said the person at the top of the flight of stairs, he put his palms together and smiled.

“Thank you very much. The Empty Space Shrine wants to kill him. However, now that he’s also a disciple of the Buddha Shrine, they won’t dare act insolently,” replied the Fortune Shrine’s strong cultivator with a smile. They both looked at the young man. “Kong Ming, enjoy your time in the Buddha Shrine, we’re off.”

“Thank you, Master,” Kong Ming said to the people who had taken him there. Kong Ming was now far away in the Buddha Shrine.

In the sky, there were a strong cultivator using their Void Breaking Vision to watch all that. When they saw it, they grimaced.

“I didn’t think the Fortune Shrine would have such friends. They even dared put one of their great disciples in the Buddha Shrine. From now on, Kong Ming is a disciple of two Shrines. It will be difficult now,” said one of them slowly. He was annoyed. They had chased Kong Ming for a long time. Finally, the Fortune Shrine had

put him in the Buddha Shrine, it was irritating!

“It’s troublesome. The Buddha Shrine usually doesn’t get involved in external affairs, but who knows? Maybe if we kill Kong Ming, that insane cultivator of the Buddha Shrine will go crazy and we won’t offend just one Shrine...”

“The most annoying part is that the Fortune Shrine put Chu Chun Qiu in the Supreme Animal World, they protect Lin Feng, and now they put Kong Ming in the Buddha Shrine, so he’s the disciple of two Shrines. It’s difficult to know who the forbidden person is. They could all be. The Fortune Shrine attaches so much importance to the three of them,” the members of Empty Space Shrine all spoke up.

---

In the Supreme Animal World, the news that Chu Chun Qiu had been to one of the seven forbidden territories spread throughout the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, including the Imperial Court, only a few people dared go to those areas. Now Chu Chun Qiu from the Fortune Shrine was one of them. The forbidden territory of Ganges Time in the Supreme Animal World was one of the seven forbidden territories. Of course, Chu Chun Qiu had only been to a clear area, he hadn’t been into the depths of the forbidden area.

But now Chu Chun Qiu was getting stronger and stronger, and could surprisingly go to the forbidden areas alone. Those forbidden areas had a very, very long history. They were considered hellish forbidden areas. People who came out were usually insane and had lost their minds.

Back in the days, a terrifying genius had gone to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. He had gone there like a conquering hero, and he had come out completely insane. His only purpose in life had been to kill, and kill, and kill!

When people thought of this, they were terror-stricken. Chu

Chun Qiu had been there...

Only a few people had the ability to go there.

Apart from Chu Chun Qiu, there was another genius of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds who was in the Supreme Animal World...

---

Zhou Rong Man was walking through the desert of the Supreme Animal World. He looked extremely strong.

“What the hell is this place? I’m so tired.” Zhou Rong Man was sweating. He looked exhausted. He had been walking in that desert for a month, but he was still there. Was there no exit? He didn’t know if he had been imprisoned, or if the desert was just too vast.

Zhou Rong Man laid down on the sand and looked at the sky, “How could I be so unlucky? I have the strongest blood strength of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. People have been trying to kill me for a long time, and now I’m stuck in here. Are you old men, trying to deceive me?”

He shouted and his voice spread far away in the distance.

“Eh?” At that moment, Zhou Rong Man frowned. He sensed something on his hand, he quickly shook it and looked at it... blood dripped off.

Zhou Rong Man was stupefied. He was bleeding? Him?!

“What the...” Zhou Rong Man’s heart started pounding. He gazed into the distance. He saw something sharp, like pincers, or claws, like a hand. Gradually, a gigantic golden insect appeared. Zhou Rong Man was astonished.

But after that, he looked enthusiastic and shouted, “I’ve finally found you! Come out! My name is Zhou Rong Man!”

His voice caused soundwaves to roll in waves. Blood kept dripping. The golden insect dug into the ground and tried to hide



in the sands. A crater appeared in Zhou Rong Man's field of vision. He was astonished. He had found the ones who had been chasing him?

## Chapter 2320: Invitation Letter

---

After his battle against Qiong Hai Ya, Lin Feng went back to the World Clan. He tried to contact Qing Feng, but it was useless. Qing Feng was isolated from the rest of the world. After that, Lin Feng learned that the one who had made the Void Phoenix Clan call all their members using the Phoenix Blood Talisman the other day was Qiong Hai Ya.

Now, Qiong Hai Ya went to the Void Phoenix Clan, he wanted to finalize the marriage alliance with them. Lin Feng felt great pressure. Qiong Hai Ya wasn't Huo Xing Zi. His name was Qiong, he had a very high social status in the Fire Shrine...

And he couldn't contact Qing Feng...

—

“Daimon” received an invitation letter.

Lin Feng read the letter and was stupefied.

“This material is extremely precious and durable,” mused Lin Feng with a smile. He looked at the name of the sender. “Mu Shan Zi.”

That name contained a particular Qi.

“Who's Mu Shan Zi?” wondered Lin Feng. He had never heard the name, and he wasn't very familiar with the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He hadn't lived here his entire life. There were people who had been here for millions of years already, it was nothing in comparison with those people.

He didn't know Mu Shan Zi.

“I've checked. He's from the Thousand Ancient Dust Mountains Clan. He's also a strong cultivator of the Dazzling Gold Shrine. A hundred years ago, he became a Saint Emperor. His Dao is at the maximum level, he is at the top of the Sheng Di Layer. He hasn't

shown up for a while, but many people think he's going to try and become a Saint now."

"A Saint Emperor who has no enemy at the same level?" mused Lin Feng. The expression "who had no enemy at the same level" was extremely relative at such high levels and in such places as the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

"Yes, he's among the strongest Saint Emperors of the Imperial Court, there aren't many people like him," said the strong cultivator next to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded, "So Mu Shan Zi is at the top of the Sheng Di Layer, what about Qiong Hai Ya?"

"Some people have different fighting abilities at that level. It depends whether their Dao has reached the maximum level or not. You, for example, your Dao is at the maximum level, so when you reach the top of the Sheng Di Layer, you'll be much stronger than many people. Therefore, to become a Saint Emperor who has no enemy at the same cultivation level, you also need to fight a lot. You need to fight people who are already cultivators with no enemy at the level of the Sheng Di Layer. From what I know, Qiong Hai Ya hasn't reached such a level yet."

"Qiong Hai Ya hasn't reached that level." Lin Feng's eyes glittered. The criteria to become a Saint Emperor who had no enemy at the same cultivation level was very high. But in any case, being a Saint Emperor was already great, they didn't have many enemies anymore.

Mu Shan Zi had reached the top of the Sheng Di layer...

"Why does he want to see me?" Lin Feng smiled. He invited Lin Feng to come to his dusky mountain. Many other strong cultivators were going to be there, apparently. He had invited other people...

"Even though you showed up only twice in the Imperial Court of

the Continent of the Nine Clouds, you drew many people's attention. It's not surprising that he invited you," said the World Clan's strong cultivator.

Lin Feng asked, "Do you know why he invited people?"

"I think it's related to the forbidden territories," replied the old man. Lin Feng was surprised and glanced at him. The World Clan knew more than he had imagined. Had the World Clan's decision to come to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds been sudden, or did they have other motives?

Lin Feng would understand soon enough. He was excited to progress on the path of cultivation. He had killed a Saint Emperor of the Fire Shrine in front of everybody the previous time, many people had been amazed.

"Forbidden territory!" whispered Lin Feng. He didn't know too much about the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, but he knew about the seven forbidden territories. He had read books about them in the Forbidden territory. He knew that Chu Chun Qiu had been to the Animal World's forbidden territory. He was probably very strong already.

"If I go, I will probably see many cultivators of the top of the Sheng Di layer," smiled Lin Feng.

The old man nodded, "Mu Shan Zi sent that invitation letter to people who have the same social status, there will be many strong cultivators from Shrines. There will also be people who are very core disciples too. If you go, you will see some extraordinary people."

"Ten Thousand Dusk Mountains, Mu Shan..." repeated Lin Feng. Then, he nodded and said, "I'll go."

"I can't wait to see you become a peerless cultivator. If you become a Saint Emperor, you'll become incredible and such things won't be difficult for you anymore," sighed the old man.

Lin Feng had nothing to say. He still had to complete his small world. He had to improve his god level, his god Dao. He had to understand his own strength a bit better. He might already be similar to Saint Emperors.

Actually, as the old man had said, many people in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds received the invitation letter. But they were different from Lin Feng. They could contact one another and travel freely in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Many people from everywhere started traveling in the direction of the Dazzling Gold Shrine.

---

Lin Feng also left for the mountain. It was the first time he had traveled so far in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. His clone usually stayed in the Fortune Shrine all the time since the Shrines wanted to kill him.

“Little boy, among the seven forbidden territories, three of them are in the Supreme Animal World. There are many dangerous historical remains there. You’ve been in the Dragon Clan for such a long time, do you know about the three forbidden territories of the Supreme Animal World?” Lin Feng asked Aomo.

“The three forbidden territories of the Supreme Animal World are really dangerous: Ganges Time, Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, and the Mythological Animal Mausoleum. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be called forbidden territories. However, the most mysterious one is Ganges Time. It’s an infinite ocean of light. It was where the Time Shrine’s holy place was back in the ancient times. Only a few people have managed to cross it. I’ve heard of a Saint Emperor who had no enemy at the same cultivation level who surprisingly died outside of Ganges Time.”

“Ganges Time. The Time Shrine!” Lin Feng was stunned. The Diviner had told him about those. The Shrines had very long histories. He had read many books about the Shrines, too. The

Time Shrine was one of the oldest Shrines, like the Countless Shrine. The Countless Shrine had become the Buddha Shrine, and the Time Shrine had disappeared.

“So many people have died in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. There are many things we can’t imagine inside. Many people who have been there came out completely insane,” said Aomo, “Regarding Mythological Animal Mausoleum, even though it’s a forbidden territory, the Supreme Animal World doesn’t want people to go there because it’s a sanctuary for beasts. Many ancient beasts are buried there. Many beasts revere it too much to go there.”

“Alright,” Lin Feng nodded. The Supreme Animal World wanted to protect that sacred place.

“Who are the strongest clans in the Supreme Animal World?” asked Lin Feng.

“The Dragon Clan is one of the strongest clans. The Godly Phoenix Clan, the Unicorn Clan, and so on. Of course, there are some mysterious clans who are terrifyingly strong. In the future, we can go the Supreme Animal World together, and I’ll show you,” said Aomo excitedly. Lin Feng grinned. In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were some terrifyingly strong beasts, especially in the Shrines, but the Supreme Animal World had the best ones.

# Chapter 2321: Mu Shan Clan

---

In the Ten Thousand Dusk Mountains, dazzling golden lights were everywhere. The mountains seemed to be made of gold.

This place was in the Dazzling Gold Shrine's jurisdiction, and so had many cultivators who studied gold strength. Being close to the Dazzling Gold Shrine, they had access to many resources. Even the buildings were made of gold!

A strong cultivator in the Ten Thousand Dusk Mountains raised his head and looked at the sky. He was startled as he shouted out, "A dragon!"

"Who's that? He's riding a powerful demon dragon!" Many people were astonished. After all, dragons were considered incredible creatures in the world of cultivators. People were always impressed when they saw dragons.

"I've heard that Mu Shan Zi invited many strong Saint Emperors to come. I wonder what he wants to do."

"I've heard that it was related to the forbidden territories. Those people are all insane. They don't have simplistic views like we do. We'll probably hear a lot about it."

"Yes, we can only wait. Mu Shan Zi has been discreet for many years. I've heard that he was at the very top of the Sheng Di Layer, I wonder whether it's true or not. In the Ten Thousand Dusk Mountains, there are only a few cultivators who have reached the very top of the Sheng Di Layer."

Lin Feng heard what people were saying. He had incredible hearing and his perceptions were acute. At such a cultivation level, people had incredible senses.

It seems that Mu Shan Zi is famous in the Ten Thousand Dusk Mountains, thought Lin Feng. He heard many people talking about those who had reached the very top of the Sheng Di Layer. Such

people had the potential to become Saints, and if they didn't die, it usually happened. Therefore, the number of cultivators of the very top of the Sheng Di Layer didn't increase with time in the world.

Lin Feng had already gathered information about this place. He directly flew to the Mu Shan Clan. Dragons were very famous for being strong, but they were also extremely fast. They were just slower than the most terrifying Great Oriental Greenfinch Rocs.

"We're here," mused Lin Feng, gazing into the distance. There was a celestial lake, its waters calm, some leaves floating on the surface. The place was very beautiful. In the middle of the lake were some lofty buildings, the residences of the Mu Shan Clan!

"It's all golden. The Mu Shan Clan looks new, and floating above a lake, is quite beautiful," murmured Lin Feng as they descended from the sky

"A dragon!" At that moment, many people looked at Lin Feng flying towards the lake. A middle-aged man wearing blue robe released lightning when he saw the dragon and sharp electrical lights appeared in his eyes.

At the same time, on another side, there was a beautiful woman whose golden robe was fluttering in the wind. When she saw the dragon, her eyes became started glowing, too. She didn't look ordinary at all.

The air hummed. The two people moved to intercept Lin Feng. After a short time, Aomo arrived above the surface of the lake. Because he was flapping his wings, gigantic waves appeared on the surface of the water. Lin Feng smiled at the two people.

"A demon dragon, a young man riding a demon dragon?!" The middle-aged man in the blue robe was startled. In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were even fewer dragon riders than cultivators of the top of the Sheng Di Layer. Who would dare steal dragons from the Supreme Animal World to ride them? If someone rode a dragon, it meant that the dragon had



agreed to it!

Recently, a young man riding a dragon had become a bit famous...

“You’re Daimon from the World Clan?” said the middle-aged man in the blue robe. The World Clan had come back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and provoked the Fire Shrine. Daimon had defeated Huo Shang and Qiong Hai Ya, he was famous now. Many people paid attention to what happened to the Shrines, including the Fire Shrine, so they knew about Daimon.

So now Lin Feng had become a little bit famous. He was considered as a genius by ordinary people, but not by extremely strong cultivators, so he was just a little bit famous. He had just started standing out.

Lin Feng was surprised that Mu Shan Zi had invited him, but he had decided to accept the invitation, this was normal.

Lin Feng nodded. The middle-aged man said, “You must be extraordinary for a demon dragon to let you ride him. But you can compete with Qiong Hai Ya from the Fire Shrine, that is rare. You escaped, of course, you might not be as strong as him, but that would be normal.”

The middle-aged man sounded composed. He didn’t flatter Lin Feng but he didn’t denigrate him either. At such cultivation levels, people were also less extroverted, and more reserved. They didn’t admire or denigrate people. they just stated facts. Denigrating people was pointless, they cared about themselves first.

Lin Feng didn’t draw their attention because he was Lin Feng, but because he was riding a dragon!

“You must Lan Ge from the Thunder Shrine,” said the woman, smiling at the middle-aged man.

“Celestial Sound Shrine, Hua Qian Yu,” said Lan Ge looking at

the woman calmly, “I’ve heard that you could release millions of soundwaves. I’m happy to meet you.”

“Brother Lan Ge, you’re flattering me, my soundwave techniques aren’t that great. I am unworthy of your praises,” replied Hua Qian Yu. Then, she looked at Aomo and smiled, “That little dragon is so cute and so young. He’s already so strong.”

Aomo’s gigantic eyes twinkled and he roared, making the sky shake. Hua Qian Yu released a dragon chant soundwave to counter it, then stepped backwards and smiled. “Let’s not perturb the tranquility of the lake. Let’s head to the Mu Shan Clan.”

“The dragon chant was like a soundwave technique... and it wasn’t weaker than Aomo’s dragon roar...” murmured Lin Feng, glancing at her. The Celestial Sound Shrine was a Shrine, too...

Lan Ge turned around and flew in the direction of the Mu Shan Clan. Aomo roared and flew above the lake after them.

When they entered the Mu Shan Clan, there were some people ready to welcome the guests. Someone showed Lin Feng and the others rooms for their stay; these guest rooms were magnificent. Lin Feng was early, only a dozen people had arrived. But without exception, those people were from wealthy groups. Their fighting abilities were all extraordinary.

The Mu Shan Clan had prepared residences halfway up the mountains. They could see the lake from the top. It was an incredible place. Lin Feng laid down in the grass of the mountain and gazed into the distance.

A few other people were there too. They all enjoyed the environment.

“Daimon!” someone called out at that moment. Lin Feng’s eyes glittered. He was still lying down on the grass and he smiled. He had been invited too.

“I wouldn’t have thought we’d meet again so soon.” said Qiong

Hai Ya when he saw Lin Feng. He also smiled, pleasantly surprised.

“I told you,” said Lin Feng smiling. He turned his head and looked at Qiong Hai Ya. They both looked enthusiastic. Daimon had used the Fire Shrine as a stepping stone to become famous, and now Mu Shan Zi had invited them both there.

## Chapter 2322: With Admiration

---

Qiong Hai Ya walked up to him and grinned. “Perfect, as you said. Are you the only one from the World Clan who’s been invited?”

“The World Clan is tiny. I’m the only one who received the invitation letter. The World Clan can’t be compared with the Fire Shrine,” Lin Feng smiled. Qiong Hai Ya smile stiffened a bit. The members of the World Clan had broken their shield. He understood what Lin Feng meant. He was making fun of them!

At that moment, someone landed next to Qiong Hai Ya. That person was taller than Qiong Hai Ya and looked a bit plump. He looked calm and unruffled, like someone who could never get angry. When he was around, people felt a bit pressured. Qiong Hai Ya didn’t give people that kind of impression.

People around smiled when they saw him. Apart from Qiong Hai Ya, Mu Shan Zi had also invited that guy. It seemed that Mu Shan Zi had great plans, or he wouldn’t have invited such people.

Qiong Jiu Tian, this guy’s family name was also Qiong. He was of the same generation as Qiong Hai Ya, and he was already a cultivator of the very top of the Sheng Di Layer, much stronger than Qiong Hai Ya.

“The World Clan has been silent for such a long time and now they came back with such geniuses. Not bad. I hope you won’t disappoint anyone,” said Qiong Jiu Tian to Lin Feng calmly. He sounded proud and arrogant. He had been a cultivator of the very top of the Sheng Di Layer for many years already, one more step, one last step and he’d become a Saint.

Lin Feng stood up slowly and looked at Qiong Jiu Tian calmly. He could sense that Qiong Jiu Tian was threatening him. He seemed much more powerful than Qiong Hai Ya. He even looked stronger than the middle-aged man in blue clothes. However, Lin Feng was

Daimon from the World Clan now, and his social status was every bit as high as these people. He took a step forwards and smiled in anticipation. “You think a lot.”

When Qiong Jiu Tian heard Lin Feng’s reply, he remained calm, smiled, turned around, and left. Qiong Hai Ya groaned in an ice-cold way and said, “We can’t wait to see!”

He also departed. Regarding what he couldn’t wait to see, he was probably the only one who knew. But people understood that he couldn’t wait to see bad things happen to Lin Feng.

---

During the following days, Mu Shan Zi didn’t show up. More and more people arrived in the Mu Shan Clan. Twenty-some people had already gathered there. They were all extremely strong. Of course, Mu Shan Zi had invited many other people, but many of them didn’t have time to arrive so early and wait around. At such cultivation levels, people had responsibilities and many things to do. Many people wouldn’t even have the time to come to the Mu Shan Clan at all.

---

The deadline Mu Shan Zi had given to the people he had invited to come had arrived. The people were summoned to a hall. Someone smiled and said, “Mu Shan Zi will probably arrive soon.”

“He’s here already. I wonder what he wants to tell us.”

“The distance to the Supreme Animal World... Since he came back, it must be very important,” mused others. Lin Feng listened to them talking. He understood that Mu Shan Zi wasn’t always in the Mu Shan Clan. Apparently, he had spent time in the Supreme Animal World these last few days.

“Mu Shan Zi went to the Supreme Animal World to practice, yet he heard of me. I wonder whether Mu Shan Zi wanted me to come, or was it the Mu Shan Clan? That guy must be an expert at

communication. Even when he's traveling, he doesn't forget his other responsibilities," mused Lin Feng.

An old man appeared and descended from the sky. He smiled at everybody and said, "Everybody, you've been waiting for a long time. The young master is back, he's taking a bath and changing clothes. We organized a welcome dinner. Please follow me."

Silhouettes flickered. People moving at impressive speed appeared in Lin Feng's field of vision.

"That guy is back, and went to take a shower and change clothes?! He's like a chick!" said someone rudely. That guy looked extremely strong and rude. He was wearing big pants and was bare-backed. He had huge muscles, so pumped up it seemed there were about to explode. His hand was over his shoulder, carrying a gigantic hammer. Such people were difficult to forget after a single glance.

"What? Why are you so impatient? Do you think everybody's rude like you? Being clean is respectful for people you meet," said another middle-aged man coldly. He looked brutal and wild, with a big beard; he looked dignified and majestic.

"Shut up!" swore a young man, extremely tall with a bestial presence. His hands were in the sleeves of his cyan clothes, and pale lights surrounded him. He actually looked rather handsome.

The two people who had just talked looked at the young man coldly and said, "Little beast, be polite to your elders. When I became famous, you weren't even born yet!" said the wild middle-aged man.

The beast turned around and said coldly, "Situ, are you saying you're already rotten and useless?"

Situ groaned coldly and smiled back, "The younger generations will surpass us in time. Young people are getting more and more arrogant."

“It’s not time to talk shit and argue, otherwise use your strength to fight!” said the one wearing big pants, but he was gloating over another person’s misfortune.

Situ smiled, showing his teeth. “Don’t worry, there will be opportunities.”

“Let’s go and see what Mu Shan Zi wants to tell us,” suggested someone wearing a black cloak. These people looked simple, but actually they all had incredible stories. They had all received the invitation letter, which proved they were terrifyingly strong. In front of younger people, they usually remained silent, they were people of few words. One glance and they could terrify younger folk.

Everybody followed the old man and arrived at a palace. In front of them was a young man with the elegant demeanor of a gentleman. He smiled at the crowd and said, “Everybody, thank you for accepting my invitation. I feel moved.”

“Don’t be shameless, Mu Shan Zi. You know that we didn’t come just because of your invitation letter.”

“Indeed. We have no time to waste.”

The crowd didn’t give face to Mu Shan Zi, but he didn’t seem to mind. He just smiled and said, “Alright, stop criticizing me, everybody. Come in, and let’s discuss business.”

“Alright!” agreed the crowd. They followed Mu Shan Zi to the main palace and sat down on two sides of a long table. They all looked at Mu Shan Zi. Situ spoke up aggressively, “Mu Shan Zi, will you talk now?”

“Situ, you haven’t changed,” Mu Shan Zi smiled. He looked at the crowd and said, “Everybody, you know that I just came back from the Supreme Animal World. I went there to practice cultivation, but I had some interesting experiences.”

“What?” asked the one who looked like a beast.

“Chu Chun Qiu, who finished third at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds back in the days, has spent much time in Ganges Time. Now, he has left Ganges Time and he has gone to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell alone. You know that, right?” said Mu Shan Zi.

“Yes, has Chu Chun Qiu found anything in particular?” asked Qiong Jiu Tian. His eyes glittered.

“If I tell you that he’s a sympathizer to the Supreme Ancient Demons, and that is the reason why he went to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, would you believe me?” Mu Shan Zi asked calmly.

The crowd was astonished, “Really?”

“I’ve met Chu Chun Qiu. Even though he ranked third at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he’s extremely strong. We met just outside of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. He’s very brave, I admire him. Even though I don’t know whether Lin Feng and Kong Ming, who respectively ranked first and second at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, are stronger than him or not, I know that Chu Chun Qiu is extremely strong,” said Mu Shan Zi calmly.

Everybody now thought even higher of those who had finished at the top of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Mu Shan Zi had acknowledged Chu Chun Qiu!

“Lin Feng is also incredible. He humiliated the Snow Clan. The Fire Shrine has been chasing him for a very long time and they always fail. I just don’t know where he is now,” said the one who had big pants.

Qiong Hai Ya frowned. Lin Feng... the Fire Shrine hated him!

Actually, many people from the Shrines were there. They had been chasing the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds for a long time, including Lin Feng



and Chu Chun Qiu. But it didn't mean they didn't admire them, too. There was nothing wrong with admiring enemies!

# Chapter 2323: Exploring the Mystery of the Forbidden Territories

---

Qiong Jiu Tian didn't want to talk about Lin Feng and said, "Mu Shan Zi, have you ever seen the Supreme Ancient Demon yourself?"

"Yes, with my own eyes," nodded Mu Shan Zi. "According to legends, in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell there are many Supreme Ancient Demons, but you can only learn that if you enter the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. It's difficult to come out alive. Seeing one was incredible, and Chu Chun Qiu followed him."

"So you invited us to come..." said Qiong Jiu Tian staring at Mu Shan Zi.

"I want to explore the mystery of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell," said Mu Shan Zi. Everybody's heart started pounding. People frowned. Explore the mystery of a deadly forbidden territory? How scary and audacious!

At that moment, the one who looked like a beast said, "What is the demon like? Is there anything you forgot to tell us, Mu Shan Zi?"

"Supreme Ancient Demons are extremely strong. The one I've seen only had one side of his body, one arm, one leg, one eye, even his brain was cut into two. But with his hand, he can drain people's vitality and blood, and easily kill them. At the same cultivation level, people cannot withstand a single attack from him.

"The Supreme Ancient Demons have existed for a very long time. Nobody knows what there is inside, don't you want to go and see?"

Mu Shan Zi looked at the crowd. People's eyes glittered with curiosity. However, they knew that the forbidden territories were extremely dangerous. Apart from people who were extremely brave, not many people dared go there. Saint Emperors usually

didn't want to take such risks. Maybe some Saints went there and explored the mysteries of the forbidden territories, but they didn't tell anyone because the others were not qualified to know details only known to insiders.

“Supreme Ancient Demons!” Lin Feng's eyes gleamed. He had seen how terrifying the territories of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts were, so were those forbidden territories as menacing? Were there small worlds inside? Or Ancient clans?

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' territories were in Purple Clouds, and only famous in Long Night City. They were too far from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, which was why the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts managed to keep it secret. If the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts Territory was in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, it would have been extremely famous.

The crowd remained silent. They were all geniuses among geniuses. If they explored the mysteries of the forbidden territories with Saints, it would be useless because they'd die first. They understood why Mu Shan Zi hadn't invited any Saints, they didn't belong to the same world. If Saints wanted to explore the mystery of forbidden territories, they could do it with other Saints.

They really wanted to go and explore the mystery of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, but they knew it was going to be very dangerous.

“Mu Shan Zi, you didn't make us come straight to the Supreme Animal World, you made us come here first. It means that you prepared things here, right? I am willing to come and explore the mystery of the forbidden territory with you, but I need to get prepared, too,” said Hua Qian Yu calmly.

Everybody was probably going to agree, they were all really strong, and they had to use their full strength. They had to get ready first. They couldn't go into the forbidden territory without

being prepared!

“Of course! Hua Qian Yu, you deserve your incredible reputation. I’m happy you’re coming!” smiled Mu Shan Zi.

“I’m coming, too,” said the strong man in big pants, smashing the table in front of him excitedly.

“If Chi Lian Shan is going, I, Situ, won’t refuse either,” declared the middle-aged man, glancing at the strong man in big pants coldly. They were enough people to go. They didn’t want to go alone, so it was perfect.

“I, Lan Ge, am coming too,” everybody nodded. Chu Chun Qiu was brave, he had gone to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell alone. They were so many really strong cultivators, they had to accept. Even though it was going to be dangerous, it was probably going to be beneficial.

Lin Feng looked at the crowd, his eyes glittering. He also wanted to go...

“I’m coming too,” said Lin Feng. Qiong Hai Ya turned and looked at Lin Feng coldly. Lin Feng smiled coldly inside.

“Awesome! Since everybody wants to come, let’s meet in the Black Phoenix Animal District on the periphery of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. Everybody, give me your contact details. I’ll contact you in time,” said Mu Shan Zi. They all came from different places, so meeting outside of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell was the best.

“Very good!” Everybody nodded and gave Mu Shan Zi their contact details.

——

Lin Feng and Aomo left shortly thereafter. Aomo was very excited. He was going to take Lin Feng to the Supreme Animal World and show him around. He didn’t know much about the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, however...

Lin Feng was seated on Aomo's back. He sensed someone was looking at him coldly. Lin Feng glanced over and saw Qiong Hai Ya.

"See you in the Supreme Animal World." said Qiong Hai Ya coldly. Lin Feng smiled coldly on the inside.

"Little boy, have you ever been to the Black Phoenix Animal District?" asked Lin Feng to Aomo.

"No, but I've heard about it. There are many black phoenixes there. In the ancient times, they kept fighting against humans, and nobody managed to oppress them. But one day, they faced a calamity and now they aren't as strong as before. They kept the name phoenix even though they're not pure anymore."

"I see. I wonder what Chu Chun Qiu went through in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell," Lin Feng murmured to himself. Chu Chun Qiu was a very dangerous cultivator. He had tried to kill Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin before, and he also wanted to absorb Lin Feng's will. How strong had he become?...

---

The news that Mu Shan Zi had invited many extremely strong cultivators to go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell with him spread quickly. In spite of all the legends which rendered ordinary people terror-stricken, Mu Shan Zi and the geniuses were going to go, proving their bravery!

Back in the Fortune Shrine, Lin Feng's clone told the Diviner about the trip. The Diviner smiled and said, "Fewer and fewer people explore the mystery of the forbidden territories. People who go sometimes don't come back, or when they do, they don't talk about it. But everybody knows the forbidden territories are terrifying. You had no reason to refuse. Good!"

Indeed, for such people, "terrifying" wasn't a concept they took seriously.

“Just be careful!” said the Diviner. He had no reason to prevent Lin Feng from going. Forbidden people were destined to have extraordinary lives, anyway. Those places were called “Forbidden territories”, and Lin Feng was a Forbidden Person! How could a Forbidden Person be afraid of a Forbidden territory!?

Mu Shan Zi, Qiong Jiu Tian, Situ, and the others going were all fearsome names. Many people were excited. It was the most impressive group of people to go to the Forbidden territories in a thousand years. A bunch of incredible geniuses were going to gather in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell!

---

Those geniuses were soon on their way, including Lin Feng.

The Supreme Animal World was an isolated world in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It was a holy place for animals and was in the northern part of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Lin Feng had received directions from the Fortune Shrine.

After going through a few teleportation portals, Lin Feng arrived in front of a dark city: the entrance to the Supreme Animal World!

## Chapter 2324: Aomo's Special Power

---

Even though the Supreme Animal World and the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were two different worlds, people could cross the border freely. Some people wanted to trade with the animals of the Supreme Animal World, but they did it in the dark because some people or animals didn't have positive opinions about it. Therefore, some deadly battles had also happened in that dark city.

The people who were there were only stronger, and also bloodthirsty, ferocious, and courageous. Of course, they paid attention to who they offended. Otherwise, the Supreme Animal World could take revenge, and a single person couldn't compete with the Supreme Animal World alone.

Humans hunted beasts, and beasts ate human beings. In the Supreme Animal World, there were human beings everywhere, but it was dangerous for them. Beasts could kill them anytime, it was their land!

—

Lin Feng and Aomo teleported themselves from the dark city to the Supreme Animal World. They arrived in a dark forest with beasts everywhere.

“What a thick and rich bestial Qi!” murmured Lin Feng, smelling the Qi.

“They hate humans, so they stay in this area because humans usually arrive here from the dark city. When they see humans, they try to kill them,” explained Aomo. Lin Feng nodded. Aomo then continued flapped his wings and glanced around.

Aomo roared out, and some beasts in the forests stopped. Some of them lowered their heads. For them, dragons were like kings, they held them in awe and veneration.

Aomo led, and nothing happened to them along the way. They flew in the direction of the Black Phoenix Animal District.

---

Twenty days later, Lin Feng saw an Ancient animal district. There were gigantic lofty animal buildings. It was completely different from the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world. The Qi here was more brutal. It was also, obviously, completely different from the human world.

Many people raised their heads when they saw a dragon in the sky. A dragon had shown up in the black phoenixes' territory! And that dragon had a human being on his back, even worse!

---

In a celestial palace on the top of a gigantic mountain, someone gazed into the distance and saw Aomo. That person's eyes glittered coldly, "That dragon has no dignity."

---

Lin Feng and Aomo continued along. Lin Feng sensed someone watching him. He glanced at the celestial palace in the distance and saw a silhouette, a person wearing a golden and purple tiger robe. He looked like an ancient animal king, dignified and majestic. He was staring at Aomo.

"Get the Hell down!" shouted the man furiously. Such a terrifying roar could destroy an ordinary human's internal organs. Lin Feng sensed heavy soundwaves, and saw many illusionary tigers.

"Roar of the Red Tigers, it's King of the Red Tigers." That roar alarmed countless monsters in the area. They looked up to the palace in the sky, and they saw the leader of the Red Tigers Palace standing there. He wasn't happy to see Aomo and that human.

Aomo paused. The King said in a cold and detached way, "You're from the Dragon Clan, and you let a human ride you. Shame on



you, you're a disgrace to the Dragon Clan. Since you're shameless, I'll use you as a means of transportation. You'll help me protect the palace."

Aomo looked at him coldly and spat out some flames. His gigantic eyes were filled with murder.

"Old tiger," said Lin Feng to the King of the Red Tigers. The King was furious.

"Hmph!" the King of the Red Tigers stared at Lin Feng and said, "Piss off now! Give me the dragon."

"Stupid and insolent animal," retorted Lin Feng coldly. The King of the Red Tigers was infuriated. He rose up into the air and released bestial Qi in a wave of power. Lin Feng and Aomo sensed oppressive energies around them.

"I'll go and kill that animal," Aomo said to Lin Feng.

"No. He's not weak. We can't win against him," said Lin Feng.

"Don't worry, father, leave it to me!" said Aomo, flying towards the tiger.

Lin Feng was startled and looked at Aomo. He actually didn't know how strong Aomo was. He was a dragon, he probably had some special powers. The king wouldn't dare kill him, anyway. Lin Feng was the one in danger.

"Awesome, I'll see how strong a dragon can be," spat the King of the Red Tigers coldly. He flashed forwards and released mighty oppressive energies. He raised his fist, but it felt like a mountain had appeared. Aomo wasn't afraid; his claws appeared, and his skin was like armor.

The collision was impressive and loud as thunder. Aomo streaked across the sky, wounds appearing on his arms, a terrifyingly heavy strength penetrating into his body. He coughed up blood. The King of the Red Tigers understood earth strength, his attacks were extremely heavy. He was a King of the earth.

The King of the Red Tigers frowned. He hadn't expected Aomo to be strong enough to compete with him. He roared and moved faster than the eye. The word "KING" appeared above his face. Several tiger kings appeared around Aomo and converged on him.

Aomo released a terrifying dark demon Qi, his eyes turned pitch black. People around heard dragon chants. Aomo turned into several dragons and shot towards the different tiger kings.

The demon dragons crashed into the tiger kings, roaring triumphantly. The King of the Red Tigers waved his hands and the tiger kings roared furiously. Their roars could destroy people's souls.

"It seems like the King of the Red Tigers' roars have reached the peak of perfection. His second Dao is already almost at the maximum level!" exclaimed the crowd watching below. The King of the Red Tigers was a leader in that region and all this wasn't surprising, he was extremely strong. The demon dragon seemed like it was going to get crushed. Only one demon dragon was left, and he was struggling.

At that moment, the atmosphere suddenly became dark. Demon energies filled the air. A dragon shadow appeared and blotted out the sky.

"Godly Dragon Clan's ability!" The beasts in the distance frowned. The strongest dragons had a special ability which made their Dao much more powerful.

The King of the Red Tigers raised his head. As expected, the dragon was extremely strong, and he could use the special ability of the Dragon Clan. The atmosphere was dark and looked apocalyptic.

Lin Feng initially wanted to get involved, but when he saw that, he stopped, his eyes twinkling. The Tiger King was extremely strong and controlled earth strength; he also had some sound attacks, so he understood two types of Dao. But Ao was talented

and his attacks were explosive.

The dragon spat out energies which turned into dark demon strength. Dragons surrounded the tigers, which turned black.

“Kill him!” shouted Aomo. Instantly, the tiger kings were crushed and destroyed by the demon energies. At the same time, a terrifying demon strength shot towards the King of the Red Tigers and surrounded him.

The King of the Red Tigers’ face stiffened. He was slowly turning dark as well!

“Piss off!” shouted the King of the Red Tigers furiously. Suddenly, he had three heads and six arms. All the heads roared furiously. He started flying towards the gigantic dragon in the sky. Quickly, the gigantic dragon opened his mouth and swallowed the king.

“That’s...” When the crowd saw that, they were astonished. Had the demon dragon absorbed the gigantic tiger?

Roaring sounds spread in the air, and the King of the Red Tigers reappeared and shot away. His body had turned black and he looked angry.

“You’re a weakling, and you think I’ll become a guard in your palace?” shouted Aomo icily. The King of the Red Tigers roared angrily in response. Gigantic pitch-black swords appeared and streaked across the sky. In the twinkling of an eye, the celestial palace was riddled with gaping wounds.

The King of the Red Tigers shouted furiously, “How dare you attack my palace? Get ready to be punished!”

The King of the Red Tigers left. The crowd in the distance was astonished. The King of the Red Tigers had stopped fighting. Was he going to ask the other leaders to come and help him?

# Chapter 2325: Negligence

---

Aomo was staring after his opponent. His gigantic eyes were filled with cold lights. “He overestimated himself.”

Then, he turned around and moved back to Lin Feng. He looked quite satisfied and smiled broadly. “Father, what did you think?”

“Not bad! Is that your special ability? You can turn people into demons? Excellent,” said Lin Feng, petting Aomo’s head and smiling.

“Yes, it’s my special ability. It keeps growing more and more powerful. I can absorb living beings and make them turn into demons!” Aomo smiled. Lin Feng tapped his back. He looked like a little child when he was with Lin Feng; to the crowd in the distance, seeing a terrifyingly strong dragon act like a child was astonishing.

“Do you all have different abilities in the Dragon Clan?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious.

“Some people don’t. It depends on your natural abilities.”

“I see!” Lin Feng nodded.

——

The two continued forwards and entered the Black Phoenix Animal District. Mu Shan Zi still hadn’t contacted them and few people, or maybe none, had arrived yet. Lin Feng wasn’t in a rush, though. He chose a place to live and and practice cultivation.

Lin Feng hated wasting time. He was productive everyday. He forced himself to make full use of his time to become stronger.

But Aomo wasn’t like that. He was a beast; when he was abroad, he enjoyed his time. In the Supreme Animal World, there were beasts everywhere, it was his home territory. He felt at home.

At that moment, there was a human being on Aomo’s back, but it

was not Lin Feng. It was a very beautiful woman.

“Little boy, before you were even born, I was with Lin Feng already. I’m like a big sister or an auntie for you. Show me around and stop complaining,” said Xiao Ya with smile. She had never ridden a dragon. It was an awesome feeling.

“So what? You’re not my dad’s sister!” said Aomo. He wasn’t happy. He continued flying in the clouds. When Xiao Ya had enough, they landed on the ground. Xiao Ya wasn’t worried with Aomo there. He was extremely strong.

“Let’s have something to eat.” Aomo turned into a human being again and took Xiao Ya to a bestial pavilion. There were many things to drink and eat there, but when Xiao Ya saw the food, she felt like vomiting. There was bleeding raw meat everywhere.

“Let’s leave,” said Xiao Ya, putting her hand over her mouth and nose. The smell of the meat was horrible, too.

“I’ve heard that many people from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were going to come here,” said someone at that moment. It was a woman in black clothes. Xiao Ya stopped and sat down. The woman continued, “The Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell is one of the forbidden territories. Those humans will definitely die there.”

“I hope Lin Feng isn’t going to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell!” whispered Xiao Ya to Aomo.

Aomo looked at her and said, “He is!”

“Will it be dangerous?” asked Xiao Ya. She was extremely worried.

“Don’t worry. How could anything happen to my father?” said Aomo. He had faith in Lin Feng. The woman looked at him sharply.

“A dragon!” The woman was stunned when she saw Aomo and realized he was a dragon.

“Black phoenix.” Aomo looked at her and realized she was a black phoenix.

The woman looked at him darkly and said, “You guys are going to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell to die?”

“The phoenix clan is doomed. They are just a futile clan now. You’re just lucky to be alive. You don’t dare go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, and you make fun of people who are brave enough to go there,” retorted Aomo coldly.

“Right, you’re a coward and you make fun of people who are brave. You’re ridiculous!” said a middle-aged man in blue clothes biting into a big piece of raw meat.

Aomo looked at him and said, “You arrived too!”

They had seen each other in the Mu Shan Clan.

“Yes. Since you’re here, I presume Daimon is here, too. But who’s that girl? Even though Daimon won’t have any problem in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, I don’t think he should bring that girl, it would be dangerous for her,” said Lan Ge, looking at Xiao Ya. Xiao Ya looked so cute and naive. Lan Ge liked her.

“Daimon knows that,” replied Aomo. Lan Ge didn’t say anything else. At that moment, he slowly turned around and looked at someone who didn’t say anything. That person was wearing a black cloak and his head was lowered, it was difficult to see his face. He had no Qi at all either.

“Who are you?” asked Lan Ge indifferently. That guy in black clothes looked dangerous.

He didn’t reply, continuing to eat as if he hadn’t heard anything.

Lan Ge released Qi which filled the air. Lightning appeared around him and shot towards that person. That person raised his hand, and the thunders crashed into his palm. The crowd thought he was going to explode, but he didn’t. The lightning gradually disappeared.

Lan Ge looked at him sharply. “You’re extremely strong, Your Excellency. I want to know who you are even more.”

Lan Ge released more and more lightning Qi in a surge of power.

The person slowly raised his head, he had pitch-black eyes. One glance and Lan Ge had the impression he was in Hell.

Lan Ge slowly stood up. He was surrounded by lightning, and the pavilion was torn open. He threw himself at the other man. The cultivator in black clothes released blood lights, the lightning and blood lights collided.

The cultivator in black clothes moved away, he didn’t want to stay there.

“Cut!” Lan Ge released lightning to surround the cultivator. The crowd around them couldn’t open their eyes, it was so blinding. The cultivator in black clothes flitted backwards, his black robe had just been ripped apart by the lightning. He glanced at Lan Ge, as the other beasts around shivered.

What was going on? Half of his head was demoniac and the other half was bestial!

Blood lights appeared in the sky, and the astonished crowd watched the cultivator leave.

“Someone from the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell?” shouted Lan Ge. He chased after the cultivator.

Aomo was astonished, too. Was that truly someone from the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell? Both of them suddenly chased after that cultivator. Xiao Ya shouted, “You bastard!”

Xiao Ya looked at Aomo, he had forgotten her there. She felt unsafe, she couldn’t compete with all the beasts there.

“Little girl, since you’re alone here, you should come to my house.” said the woman in black clothes with a smile. Xiao Ya’s face stiffened. “I have things to do. Thank you, sister.”

“It’s alright, follow me. When your dragon friend comes back, I’ll tell him you are there,” said the woman smiling.

Xiao Ya was scared, but she forced herself to smile and replied, “Sister, I’ll wait for my brother to come back, he’s extremely strong.”

“Is that so? As strong as King Phoenix?” asked the woman smiling. She sounded much colder and asked, “Are you coming or not?”

Dark lights surrounded Xiao Ya. She instantly stopped smiling and said, “Alright, I’ll come to your house, sister.”

“Good girl!” declared the smiling woman. Her Qi disappeared, and she took Xiao Ya away.

“Sister, where’s your house?” asked Xiao Ya, trying to force herself to smile. “And what will we do there?”

“Hihi, good little girl. I want your dragon friend to give me some dragon blood. You will help me do that.”

“Sister, you just had to tell me and I would have asked.”

However, the woman shook her head and said, “No. We need the blood of a powerful dragon. Your dragon friend won’t necessarily accept, even if you’re with us.”



# Chapter 2326: The Grave of Black Phoenix Valley

---

Lan Ge and Aomo came back. They didn't continue chasing the mysterious cultivator in black clothes, he was too fast.

"You're from the Dragon Clan, have you heard of such monsters before?" Lan Ge asked Aomo. He didn't know much about the Supreme Animal World.

"No, he looked even more terrifying than a beast. What a strange face, too." said Aomo. He couldn't forget that face. Aomo suddenly glanced around and realized Xiao Ya had disappeared!

He shouted, "Where's my little sister?"

Someone laughed. Aomo turned around and looked at a woman in black clothes. He said coldly, "You took her?"

"We want some godly dragon blood, a bowl," the woman to Aomo said casually.

Aomo's face stiffened and he shouted furiously, "Insolent! You could have asked me if you wanted dragon blood, I would have given you some!"

"I want godly dragon blood!" said the woman. Aomo frowned, his face hard. He cursed, "You don't have the godly blood of your ancestors, and now you dare ask some from dragons! How shameless! You want the Dragon Clan to destroy you?!"

"You can refuse: We'll sacrifice the little human girl then. If we do, you can't blame us!" said the woman.

Lan Ge said, "I've heard that the black phoenixes are insolent, there is nothing they don't dare. They are known for such practices."

"You're a human, shut your filthy mouth!" said the woman, staring at Lan Ge coldly. Dark Qi filled the air and surrounded him.

She said to Aomo, “You don’t have much time to think. We took the girl to the Grave of Black Phoenix Valley. If you take too much time, we’ll offer her as sacrifice to our ancestors!”

“I’ll give some to you!” said Aomo. He pulled a long face. Xiao Ya was Lin Feng’s little sister. He had asked him to take care of her, and now he had been too careless and had left her alone for a few minutes. He had to bear the responsibility for that. He was furious.

Lan Ge said, “Godly dragon blood is what makes you dragons talented. If dragons lose godly blood, it can ruin their cultivation.”

“I know,” said Aomo raising his hands, “But I have no choice, for my dad.”

Lan Ge was astonished. The person he called “dad” was probably Daimon from the World Clan. He was astonished, but understood their relationship a little bit better.

The woman in black clothes stood up and looked impatient. She wanted the blood as quickly as possible.

A silhouette appeared in the distance and closed on them as fast as lightning.

“Aomo, stop!” someone shouted. Aomo stopped moving. He looked happy and said, “Dad!”

The woman in black clothes moved back and opened her wings.

An ice-cold sword moved towards the woman. The sword crashed into her third eye. She was staring at the silhouette, she couldn’t believe it. This person dared try and kill her without saying anything!

The woman in black clothes suddenly exploded. The atmosphere was filled with a terrifying sword Qi. The crowd around was astonished and shaking.

“Let’s go the Grave of Black Phoenix Valley!” said Lin Feng. Instantly, Aomo roared and turned back into a gigantic black

dragon. He rose up in the air, Lin Feng on his back. Lan Ge jumped onto him, too.

---

The other woman in black clothes who had captured Xiao Ya had arrived at the valley; it was very cold there. Xiao Ya was shuddering because of the chill and said, “Sister, it’s so cold here. Where are we?”

“It’s the Grave of the Black Phoenix. When black phoenixes are not entirely dead, we put their threads of soul here. They can then absorb strength, human or bestial vitality Qi. It helps them become stronger again.” said the woman.

“Why did you take me here then, sister?” said Xiao Ya. She had cold sweats, and was terrified. She kept contacting Lin Feng with her jade talisman.

The woman in black clothes glanced at the talisman on her neck. She grabbed it and broke it apart. She smiled and said, “Little sister, don’t do such things. Your dragon brother is coming. When he gives us blood, we’ll take you to an ancestor in the valley.”

“Sister, why not release me after?”

“We’ll see if your dragon brother can save you!” said the woman in black clothes, laughing sinisterly. However, at that moment, her face changed drastically, she became deathly pale.

She was dead?

“You want to die!” said the woman in black clothes, suddenly releasing Dark intent. She grabbed Xiao Ya again and continued flying. Xiao Ya raised her head, she wanted to leave, but she couldn’t, and the phoenix hit her with her gigantic pitch-black wings. She coughed blood and fell from the sky.

A black silhouette took her away. The Qi around her was ice-cold, formed by black phoenix shadows. They looked like death gods. Everything in the valley smelled like death.

“Brother!” said Xiao Ya. She landed on the ground, but the shadows continued taking her away. Another jade talisman appeared in her hands and broke. Lights appeared around her, gigantic statues appeared and protected her.

The shadows crashed onto the protectors. Xiao Ya burst into tears. She took out many jade talismans and deployment talismans. Lin Feng had made them for her so that she could use them when she was in danger. She prayed Lin Feng would arrive soon!

—

At that moment, Lin Feng was on Aomo’s back with Lan Ge. Lin Feng used his godly awareness to inspect the area.

He looked dreadfully grim. His eyes were filled with murder. He said, “Aomo, hurry up!”

“Yes, father!” said Aomo. He looked roared out with anger. Dark lights flashed around him. Some blood strength surrounded him and allowed him to fly even faster.

“How fast!” Lan Ge was astonished. The dragons were truly extraordinarily talented. How incredible!

Qi filled the air. Lan Ge looked at Daimon. He had released soul strength, and a sharp Qi which seemed like it could split apart the whole sky.

A sharp sword emerged from his body and streaked across the sky. Daimon’s soul was incredible, he even left his body with his soul.

How strong, his soul makes him look like a god. It has fused together with the earth and the sky, but even worse, it seems like he can control the earth and the sky with his soul, like a god!, thought Lan Ge when he sensed the Qi. He was astonished and stunned... and the energies surged out faster than Aomo, amazingly!

—

The Grave of Black Phoenix Valley was in the depths of Black Phoenix. Swords streaked across the sky of Black Phoenix. Many people raised their heads and frowned. A strong cultivator's soul was flying in the sky of their territory. Someone shouted furiously, "Who's that? Stop him!"

That person's soul strength was attacked and destroyed, but the swords continued flying in the direction of the valley.

—

Xiao Ya had used almost all her jade talismans and deployment talismans. She was terrified, was she going to die? The black phoenix was screeching and clawing at her defenses. It could eat her in one bite.

"Brother, in the future, I won't be able to stay with you anymore. Grandpa, I hope you'll become a peerless cultivator. Take good care of yourself!" whispered Xiao Ya, smiling sadly and closing her eyes. She broke the last of the talismans she had, still crying. Was she going to die?"

Xiao Ya sensed destructive energies all around her; she wasn't dead yet! She opened her eyes and saw swords spinning all around her, protecting her!

"Brother, is that you?" Xiao Ya exclaimed. She recognized that Qi! One sword caressed her face. What a warm Qi! She smiled widely and said, "I knew that you could protect me, brother!"

# Chapter 2327: Danger in the Grave Valley

---

In the Black Phoenix Clan, strong cultivators rose up into the air and flew towards the Grave of Black Phoenix Valley angrily. The woman who had kidnapped Xiao Ya appeared in the sky, her eyes glittering icily. What was going on? Whose soul had turned into a sword? She continued flying in the direction of the Grave Valley.

At that moment, in the Grave Valley, many strong cultivators appeared. The members of the Black Phoenix Clan were in the sky, they didn't dare go into the valley easily. Their ancestors rested in peace there. They couldn't disturb them while they were practiced cultivation to return to life.

"Who dares offend us?" said an old man at that moment. He looked furious.

The woman in black clothes appeared in front of him and said, "Elder, there's a human female in the valley. She had a dragon friend; I kidnapped her because I wanted some godly dragon blood. I didn't think I could fail."

"Hmph! You take initiatives which could cause trouble for all of us! Go into the Valley now and solve the issue!" said the elder coldly.

The woman's face turned deathly pale. "Elder, I don't want to!" She looked terrified.

"You caused trouble, so you must bear the responsibility, go in now!" said the old man. The woman's face was even paler. That was the place where their ancestors rested! If anyone went inside, it was as a sacrifice. Even though she was from the Black Phoenix Clan, there was no exception. Even if the members of the Black Phoenix Clan went in, they were used as sacrifices and died.

But she had no choice. She slowly walked headed the valley. She soon saw some illusionary black phoenixes around Xiao Ya, but

there were swords which protected her and didn't let the souls get close to her.

The woman in black clothes moved, her wings blotting out the sky. She released bestial Qi, and spat out dark flames.

Some of the shining swords around Xiao Ya cut apart the black fire explosively, filling the air with flames. A gigantic black phoenix moved towards Xiao Ya.

The swords around Xiao Ya turned into a single gigantic sword, sword Qi filled the air. Dazzling golden lights streaked across the sky and collided with the black phoenix.

“Phoenix Attack!” shouted the black phoenix, colliding with the gigantic sword. The gigantic sword cracked, but her body trembled.

At that moment, gigantic black phoenixes suddenly surrounded her, and her face turned deathly pale.

“No! Ancestors! I'm from the Black Phoenix Clan!” shouted the woman. However, the phoenix shadows absorbed her, biting away every single part of her body as black smoke surrounded her.

The black vitality Qi moved away from Xiao Ya. She couldn't see the black phoenix anymore, but she felt ice-cold. She saw many phoenix shadows above her head, staring at her coldly. They could swallow her in one bite at any time.

“Bro!” shouted Xiao Ya anxiously. The swords around her were getting weaker and weaker.

The members of the Black Phoenix Clan looked on furiously. People in the Valley had to die!

“When the ancestors become strong and come back, they'll manage the Clan,” said the elder solemnly. The eyes of the other phoenixes glittered. Could the ancestor come back and manage the clan?

They suddenly heard dragon chants. Aomo was hurtling forward, his Qi surging around him. The members of the Black Phoenix Clan who were in the sky above the valley suddenly gazed into the distance and shouted, “Stop!”

The strong cultivators rose up in the air. Lin Feng released sword strength again, instantly cutting a few of them apart.

“How insolent!” shouted a Saint Emperor furiously. He rose up higher in the air and turned into a gigantic phoenix. He opened his mouth and spat out flames while throwing himself at Lin Feng.

Aomo opened his mouth and breathed out black fire, the flames collided. At the same time, Lin Feng continued flying along.

The black phoenix raised his claws; a human dared attack them? He wanted to die!

“Die!” Lin Feng looked like a god. He raised his fist and smashed into his opponent. Bones shattered like breaking stones, blood splashed and then gushed out. Aomo roared triumphantly as Lin Feng continued flying.

“Eh?” The strong cultivators in the sky above the valley were astonished and furious.

“He came to cause trouble!”

Someone released their Qi to stop him, but the elder said, “If he goes into the valley, the ancestors will take him.”

“Yes, Elder,” that person acknowledged, and they watched Aomo fly past above the crowd.

“Brother!” shouted Xiao Ya when she saw him. The shadows started nibbling on her body though.

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He instantly disappeared. The soundwaves from his voice rolled through the valley and destroyed the weaker shadows instantly.

“Pfew...” Lin Feng landed next to Xiao Ya and took a deep breath.



Xiao Ya's face was deathly pale, she was very weak. Lin Feng took her in his arms and said, "Are you alright?"

"I'm alright, brother!" said Xiao Ya. She was terrified, but she felt good in Lin Feng's arms. Lin Feng put her next to Aomo and said, "Little boy, protect her."

"Don't worry, none of them will touch Xiao Ya," said Aomo, coldly staring at the shadows. There were many phoenix shadows, all of them dead souls. In the cave in the valley, a black phoenix was becoming more and more distinct, condensing itself, lying there and absorbing vitality and Qi. At that moment, he opened his eyes.

Lin Feng recalled his soul into his body and looked at the sky, releasing an ominous god Dao power which filled the air.

The black phoenixes screeched and threw themselves at Lin Feng. A vortex appeared around him, forming a black hole to surround those black phoenix shadows. They struggled to break free. However, the vortex was becoming more and more powerful and unstoppable.

The black phoenix shadows were drawn inside, and in the end disappeared. Lin Feng absorbed them and continued rising up in the air. More and more broken souls gathered towards Lin Feng, but he continued absorbing them.

"His absorbing strength is astonishing!" murmured Lan Ge when he saw that, amazed.

A black dot appeared in the distance and headed towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng's face stiffened. Those two pitch-black eyes were terrifying.

"Not bad. Such a powerful blood Qi!" said the newcomer coldly. Lin Feng had the impression he had ended up in the abysses of Hell. Many black phoenix shadows appeared around him, staring at Lin Feng pitilessly.

“Take him!” said a voice coldly. All the black phoenixes moved towards Lin Feng. His godly awareness shone, and a web of lights appeared around him before he disappeared. He reappeared in front of a shadow and used the Ancient Holy Punches technique, destroying the shadow in the blink of an eye.

However, Lin Feng still felt unsafe. More and more black phoenixes were flying towards him.

“Die!” said Lin Feng coldly. Death intent swept out and away, surrounding the black phoenixes. Another one fell dead from the sky.

Lin Feng’s Qi was becoming more and more fearsome, but the black phoenixes had numbers. Lin Feng couldn’t fight against them forever... could he?

—

“What kind of strength is that?” After a long time, Lin Feng was still fighting against black phoenixes. His Qi was floating around him.

Thunder rumbled everywhere, the atmosphere was undulating restlessly. A pitch-black hand moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng released sword strength. However, the gigantic hand looked like an illusion. The sword pierced through nothing and once the sword strength had passed, the hand became material again.

Lin Feng retreated. Some black phoenixes attacked him from behind. He pulled a long face. No wonder the members of the Black Phoenix Clan had let him come into the Valley. It was so dangerous!

## Chapter 2328: A Saint?!

---

The gigantic hand moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn't have time to think, he had to act quickly. He released oppressive strength, before turning into a sharp sword which seemed like it could lacerate anything, and moved towards the black phoenixes.

The pitch-black hand crashed onto the sword and made it tremble violently. The sword became distorted. The gigantic hand continued moving.

"Come here!" said a loud voice. The gigantic sword was being drawn towards something. The gigantic sword that was Lin Feng appeared in a dark cave. In front of him were two gigantic pitch-black eyes. It was an ancient phoenix silhouette, dignified and majestic.

—

In the outside world, Lan Ge and the others were still fighting against the black phoenixes. Lan Ge was astonished. A gigantic black phoenix had appeared in front of him. It looked like a phoenix god. The black phoenixes around seemed to be listening to it...

"We have to leave as quickly as possible, there are several black phoenix commanders, around I think!" shouted Lan Ge.

Aomo gazed into the distance where Lin Feng had disappeared. "Where's my father?"

Xiao Ya looked extremely worried and clenched her fists. Lin Feng had disappeared. She hoped he was fine.

"We can't take risks. We have to do something, the people in the sky above aren't friendly, either," said Lan Ge, moving in another direction. Lightning appeared all around him. Weaker black phoenix shadows couldn't get close to him; if they did, they were destroyed instantly.

Aomo shouted furiously and ate a few black phoenixes in one bite. “Father!”

“Let’s go! You should leave, it’ll be even more difficult for him if you stay here. You can’t help him!” shouted Lan Ge.

Aomo shouted furiously, “No, help me take care of sister Xiao Ya, I’ll go to my father, thank you!” said Aomo, leaving Xiao Ya to Lan Ge.

Lan Ge was startled, but he admired Aomo’s determination. He nodded and said, “Alright, leave it to me.”

Lan Ge put his sleeves around Xiao Ya, and Aomo said, “Thank you!”

Aomo roared and flew into the depths of the valley. He rolled with his claws out and continued destroying the black phoenix shadows.

“What an insane dragon!” Lan Ge turned his head and looked after Aomo. The Valley was gigantic. The one who had just attacked Lin Feng was a terrifying monster. Aomo and Lan Ge had both sensed his energies. It was probably the soul of a phoenix king, a general commander!

“Piss off!” shouted Lan Ge furiously, he spat out lightning and destroyed a black phoenix in front of him, continuing to fly. Blue lights appeared in his third eye and lightning continued ravaging his surroundings.

---

In the cave, Lin Feng was facing the shadow. He still had the shape of a sword.

What a powerful soul strength, thought Lin Feng, impressed.

The terrifying shadow said, “You think you can dodge my Saint’s techniques? Do you think that’s possible? Acknowledge allegiance to me now!”

His eyes looked even colder. The black phoenix flew towards the gigantic sword, trying to destroy it.

Terrifying sword Qi hummed, the sword seemed like it could cut anything. The black phoenixes all around exploded, and Lin Feng shouted defiantly, “Come!”

The phoenix shadow became more distinct. He didn’t look blurry anymore as he appeared in front of Lin Feng. This phoenix had many dimly discernible eyes...

He frowned and stared at Lin Feng. He said coldly, “Where are we?”

Lin Feng knew that that terrifying creature was a thread of Saint’s soul. Even though he didn’t have the full power of a Saint, he knew he couldn’t fight against such a thing. At least, not in this world!

“My world!” retorted Lin Feng coldly. He condensed strength which surrounded them. In his own world, Lin Feng’s strength was much more powerful than in the outside world. It was his world, he was a god here!

“I can’t use cosmic energies here!” The black phoenix was astonished and shaken, staring at Lin Feng. How could a cultivator who had a lower level take him to his own world?

“Even if it’s your world, I’ll still absorb your strength!” said the black phoenix suddenly. He opened his mouth. Lin Feng’s face froze. The many eyes of the black phoenix became brighter. This guy absorbed black phoenixes too!

“Die!” Lin Feng waved his hands and released god strength, a terrifying sword containing death strength streaked across the sky. Death surrounded his opponent’s body. All the eyes of the terrifying black phoenix were staring at him with fearsome intensity.

“Come in!” demanded a voice. Lin Feng was surrounded by a

dark strength. Many sharp beaks drove towards him.

Lin Feng shifted away and cloned himself. All his clones flashed towards his opponent. At the same time, god strength surged forth. A pair of eyes appeared on Lin Feng's real body. He punched out in front of him. The power of it instantly destroyed some beaks and pairs of eyes.

"You can't escape!" Millions of claws moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng released deployment lights to envelop his body. He saw the black phoenix's claws tear apart the curtain of lights. In return, a terrifying beast moved towards his opponent. He wanted to absorb the black phoenix!

Lin Feng groaned coldly. A gigantic axe appeared above him, and he turned into a shadow as sharp weapon Qi filled the air. The scattered phoenix souls broke apart. After entering Lin Feng's world, they couldn't do much.

The curtain of lights broke down, sharp beaks continued moving towards him.

"Great Empty Space Technique!" said Lin Feng. The opponents were moving chaotically in his world. He disappeared and reappeared. There were nine dragons around him, they all opened their mouths and drew in all the black phoenixes.

But the dark creature merely frowned, convinced that Lin Feng wouldn't be able to hold on much longer.

Where is he?, thought Lin Feng. His heart was pounding. All the pairs of eyes looked the same. Even though his opponent couldn't use cosmic energies there, it changed little; he could still absorb Lin Feng if he wanted, then chew him up and disintegrate him!

"Nine Words!" said Lin Feng. The Nine Words of his incantation appeared and floated around him. Terrifying sharp swords appeared in his hands.

A black fire moved towards his foe. Lin Feng also released his

swords. Energies kept exploding and raging through the air.

“Die!” The two swords turned into death smoke. Lin Feng arrived above his foe and cut him with sword strength. An incredible amount of hands promptly emerged from his opponent’s body and grabbed him. The phoenix wanted to immobilize him and absorb him!

“How painful!” Lin Feng had the impression he was being cut by sharp swords. His face paled.

“You’ll become a part of me!” said the voice coldly.

Lin Feng’s eyes were suddenly filled with demon king strength. Holy Spirit swords appeared around him and sliced apart the hands which held him. Lin Feng’s body became even sharper. He was staring at his opponent’s eyes.

Many black phoenixes moved towards him. However, Lin Feng’s god strength swept everything around him away. The god sword cut through every and an ancient path appeared, Lin Feng could take advantage of it.

# Chapter 2329: Absorbing!

---

Lin Feng was staring at his opponent's eyes. The opponent was also greedily staring at him.

Lin Feng had the impression that his eyes were being lacerated by needles and blades. He closed his eyes and released a sharp cursing strength.

A gigantic black hand moved towards Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng pressed forward with an indomitable will, he didn't flinch at all. He could cut away all the black phoenixes which prevented him from moving forwards.

Lin Feng's sword finally arrived in front of his enemy's eyes, disappearing into them.

Those eyes started bleeding.

"How is that possible?" Lin Feng swore, a bit stunned. An incredible amount of hands surrounded him. Lin Feng had the impression he was slowly being absorbed into his enemy's body. His vitality and Qi were being absorbed slowly, bit by bit. He could sense that his soul was trembling.

"No!" shouted Lin Feng. How could his soul get destroyed in his own world?

However, no matter what he did, it was useless, his soul was shaking, his Qi was getting weaker and weaker.

All those creatures are souls without bodies in the Grave of Black Phoenix Valley, thought Lin Feng. In his spirit's world, his god strength roared out with elemental power.

It's my world, I'm a god here. How come my strength can be absorbed?, thought Lin Feng. He was trying to push his connection to his own world to the next level!

I also use absorbing cosmic energies. I can control that world, I



can make this world turn into an absorbing world!, thought Lin Feng.

The atmosphere seemed to boom with thunder, shaking more and more violently. He made his world strength turn into absorbing strength, but his Qi kept weakening. However, as his Qi weakened, he became more and more determined. That was his last hope; if he lost, he'd die!

I control the strength of the earth and the sky, of the ten thousand things of creation. Who could absorb me? This world is mine!, thought Lin Feng. He kept reassuring himself, he felt more and more determined. His will could strengthen his world!

Some strength was broken. A cage of absorbing strength appeared around the black phoenixes.

Instantly, the gigantic black shadow became cautious.

“No, how is that possible? What’s going on?” said the voice coldly. He couldn’t believe his eyes!

“Absorb!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. An ominous and dreadful Qi began to rise as he perfectly controlled his world. The group of black phoenixes became smaller and smaller as he absorbed them all.

A terrifying pitch-black vortex appeared. The big black phoenix disappeared into the vortex, and Lin Feng reappeared.

His Qi was shaking violently. How dangerous! He had almost been completely absorbed. His enemy was just a soul, not a Saint, but it could still absorb him!

Lin Feng raised his head and looked around.

He felt more and more connected to his own world, his god strength was also growing more powerful. His soul was fusing together with his own world more and more each day. If he became strong in his own world, he also became stronger in the outside world. If someday he could use his god strength to control

the outside world too, it would be amazing...

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and his Qi slowly became calm again. He had used lots of energy to absorb the terrifying creature.

Time passed. Lin Feng completely assimilated the creature and then used the evolution scriptures to modify that strength. He sensed the foundational strength of another Saint in this manner.

Lin Feng activated the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. His consciousness contained all sorts of strengths. The different sorts of strengths gradually became his own. Lin Feng had only one thing in mind: become stronger!

Lin Feng was in his own world and forgot time.

---

In the outside world, Lin Feng was buried in the cave. Aomo was there and protected the cave. A gigantic godly dragon was next to Lin Feng. Nobody could get close to the cave. He was bleeding, godly dragon blood, but he looked alert and he was watching the black phoenixes coldly.

Around Aomo, there were many destroyed black phoenix shadows. Those phoenixes almost looked real, as if they had had real bodies.

Many black phoenixes were staring at Aomo, wanting to destroy him.

A black phoenix shrieked in hate, and Aomo roared right back. Lin Feng was probably still fighting in his own world. He couldn't let anyone attack Lin Feng's real body!

There were still many cultivators in the sky above the valley, staring down below. An old man said, "The demon dragon is surprisingly taking risks because of a human! It's rare. Unfortunately, he decided to go into the forbidden territory of the Black Phoenix Clan, and he's going to die."

“Elder, he hasn’t come out. Could an accident have happened?”

“Hmph! There are many, many ancestors in the valley. They probably absorbed him already,” sniffed the Elder coldly.

---

Outside of the Black Phoenix Clan, a few people appeared, including Lan Ge and Xiao Ya.

“Brother Lan Ge, let’s hurry, I’m worried for my brother!” said Xiao Ya. she was extremely worried, so she had asked Lan Ge for help. Lan Ge knew that he couldn’t do much alone against the Black Phoenix Clan.

But during these days, more and more people who had an agreement with Mu Shan Zi had appeared there. Lan Ge felt sad for Xiao Ya, so he asked some people for help.

There were six people in total: Lan Ge, Hua Qian Yu, Chi Lian Shan, Xiao Ya, and two others; one was fat, very fat, and the last one was a very, very beautiful woman who looked gentle and composed.

When they arrived on the Black Phoenix Clan’s territory, some members of the clan rose up into the air and said, “Who are you?”

“Piss off!” shouted Chi Lian Shan furiously, continuing to walk forwards. The members of the Black Phoenix Clan grimaced. Some people dared so arrogantly on their territory? They looked extremely strong, though...

“It’s the Black Phoenix Clan here!” said a cultivator coldly. However, at that moment, dazzling lightnings appeared and one of the members of the Black Phoenix Clan exploded and disappeared. The others all hissed and released their Qi.

“Piss off, you asshole!” shouted Chi Lian Shan. He took out a wooden stick and attacked the crowd, the air exploding with the force of his attack. A few members of the Black Phoenix Clan blew apart and died.

Bestial Qi rose up. However, the group of six continued moving forwards, as if nobody could stop them.

Thunder rocked earth and sky. People from the Black Phoenix Clan had the impression their clan was going to get destroyed. It even started raining blood as their members were killed one after another in the sky.

The weaker members of the clan were suddenly terrified. Six people had come to kill their members?! How arrogant!

# Chapter 2330: Fighting Against the Black Phoenix Clan

---

Lan Ge, Chi Lian Shan, and the others continued on. They were terrifyingly strong. Apart from Saints, who could compete with such people? Saints were rarely involved with the masses so they had even fewer enemies.

It was even more terrifying when people like them joined hands. It was why they dared go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell together, without asking Saints for help.

Those people were proud and arrogant because they were qualified to be that way. Apart from Xiao Ya, the five others couldn't be defeated by anyone, but Saints. They could destroy anyone who wasn't a Saint extremely easily, and could slaughter millions of people quickly.

More and more strong cultivators of the Black Phoenix Clan appeared. However, they quickly realized that no matter how strong the cultivators they sent were, their enemies were still stronger. Apart from Xiao Ya, all the others were too terrifying, especially when they were together.

Very quickly, the six arrived near the valley. Many strong cultivators saw them arrive. They were stupefied, especially the Elder, who watched them coldly. These people were so strong...

The Elder broke a few things and moved towards the group of six, shouting, "Who dares kill people from the Black Phoenix Clan?!"

"People who want to settle accounts with you!" shouted Lan Ge coldly. Lightning appeared in the sky and descended. The Black Phoenix Clanfolk were terrified. Some weaker people died instantly!

Lan Ge was a cultivator from the Thunder Shrine. His lightning strength was terrifying and aggressive, and he loved to use it. He also understood Celestial Thunder Dao to its maximum level.

“Die!” Lan Ge flew forwards, bathed in lightning. He looked like a terrifying thunder god. Millions of lightning bolts blew in all directions. Another batch of phoenixes died instantly. The members of the Black Phoenix Clan all had very ugly expressions

“Maximum level Dao. These people are terrifying!” The Elder was astonished. Where were these people from?

The five people killed the members of the Black Phoenix Clan one after another. The Elder shouted furiously, “Our great Elder is a Saint! Do you want to die?!”

“Saint?” shouted Lan Ge coldly. “The Black Phoenix Animal District is not strong! That’s why you’re stuck here, outside of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell! Poor you! You couldn’t even get a better place! You are extremely weak! People don’t even feel like destroying you, even though they can. Your strongest cultivator is a half-Saint at most!”

The Elder of the Black Phoenix Clan frowned and said coldly, “Even if he’s only a half-Saint, he can easily kill you, you’re tiny little insects in his eyes!”

“Is that so? We’ll see, we are willing to challenge the half-Saint!” said Chi Lian Shan furiously. The air around him exploded as he said that.

“You, you, how insolent!” shouted the Elder of the Black Phoenix Clan. How shameless of those people to come and kill them! However, even though he was strong, he was alone, and he couldn’t fight against cultivators of the top of the Sheng Di Layer. They had many Saint Emperors in the clan, but they were much weaker than these five people because their Dao hadn’t reached the maximum level!

Saint Emperors whose Dao had reached its maximum level were stronger. There were fewer Saint Emperors with a Dao at the maximum level than Saints in the world. But now, a few had appeared together here, in the territory of the Black Phoenix Animal District!

“Insolent? So what?” said Lan Ge.

The Elder said coldly, “You are from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, you want to go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. Why did you come here?”

“You are a bunch of evil bastards. We despise you,” spat Lan Ge coldly. They all released their Dao power. The air began to thrum with power!

—

After a short time, the Elder was the last one remaining. The other members of the Black Phoenix Clan were all dead. He couldn’t believe his eyes!

Very quickly, the old man was surrounded by the five cultivators, and was trembling. He finally understood what it meant to be terrified. Those five people’s Dao Wills were horrifying. They were living killing machines!

Finally, a mighty aura began to fill the air. It contained Saint’s power. At the same time, some weaker threads of Qi appeared, still belonging to the Sheng Di Layer.

“Our Saint is here, and you’re not stopping!” shouted the Elder crazily.

“Die!” snarled Lan Ge. The five people’s Dao power moved towards him. He shrieked and died, he hadn’t even been able to hold on until the Saint arrived!

Three terrifying phoenixes arrived and glared at Lan Ge and the others hotly.

“You all want to die!” said the strongest phoenix. His eyes were sharp as blades.

—

In the grave of Black Phoenix Valley, Aomo was still there, fighting against phoenix shadows as if the outside world had nothing to do with him anymore.

Aomo was still bleeding, many scales had been ripped off his skin. The wounds burned.

“Dad, hold on, you will win! I’m here to protect you!” shouted Aomo, glancing around. The black phoenix shadows moved away.

Qi emerged from of the cave. It had to be his father’s Qi!

A few days had passed, he had probably won! If it wasn’t his father’s Qi, then it was...

“Little boy, thank you for your hard work,” said a familiar voice. Aomo couldn’t help feeling relieved. Tears appeared in his eyes; his father had won!

Thunder began to roll. Aomo fell down from the sky and crashed to the ground, but his eyes were still open. He looked determined.

He slowly closed his eyes and shrank down into a tiny dragon. Lin Feng broke free from the cave which had collapsed and flashed up next to Aomo. He crouched down and put his hand on Aomo’s body, releasing life strength and helping Aomo recover.

Aomo’s eyes twinkled, he opened them, smiling as he shouted, “Dad!”

“Little boy, you need a rest!” Lin Feng smiled. Aomo’s body disappeared.

Lin Feng raised his head and released god strength; his eyes went black. He released demon strength to surround the dead black phoenixes. After that, he rose up in the air.

He stretched his hand and absorbed the dead black phoenixes.



Very quickly, there were no dead black phoenixes left.

He then continued rising up into the air. Many black phoenix shades moved towards him, but he destroyed them all.

Lin Feng had already absorbed the oldest black phoenix. Even though there was a virtually endless number of black phoenixes in the valley, when he had to leave, nobody could stop him. If they tried, they died thoroughly.

Very quickly, Lin Feng appeared outside of the valley and saw the crowd.

“Lan Ge, Hua Qian Yu, and the others?” Lin Feng looked stupefied.

“Bro!” shouted Xiao Ya. Lin Feng smiled down at her. Lan Ge and the others were fighting against some terrifying black phoenixes. Xiao Ya was there too; they had protected her, and had come back to save him. Such people were rare!

“Xiao Ya!” said Lin Feng, moving towards her fast as lightning. Some black phoenixes wanted to stop him, but he killed them instantly, they couldn’t withstand a single attack. They all died and fell from the sky.

# Chapter 2331: Cage of Darkness

---

When Lan Ge saw Lin Feng, his eyes glittered. Daimon from the World Clan had been imprisoned in the Grave of Black Phoenix Valley and had managed to come out alive, safe and sound. That was impressive!

“Brother!” said Xiao Ya, smiling broadly. She was so happy and relieved to see Lin Feng safe and sound. She had been so worried that something could happen to Lin Feng. Luckily, he was very strong and had ended up fine.

A black phoenix exploded, Lin Feng appeared next to it. He looked at the battle, five people against three. Lan Ge and the others had some terrifying weapons, and there was a half Saint in the Black Phoenix Clan, while the two others were also extremely strong. They were probably high officials in the Black Phoenix Clan.

Lin Feng had heard that the Black Phoenix Clan had been weakening for a long time. They didn’t even have a real Saint. No wonder they were on the periphery of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell.

The Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell was one of the seven forbidden territories, was very dangerous, and the Qi here wasn’t good at all. The Holy Sage Ruler Clans didn’t want to settle in such places, and people who came here were usually extremely strong and wanted to go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell.

Lin Feng kept Xiao Ya next to him. Lan Ge hadn’t been able to fight properly because he had to take care of her. With their powerful weapons, they could deal with the enemy more easily.

The Black Phoenix Clan’s strongest cultivator was the half-Saint. Hua Qian Yu from the Celestial Sound Shrine and the fat man were fighting against him. Hua Qian Yu had a celestial demon zither, a deadly weapon. The other members of the Black Phoenix Clan who

tried to get involved were killed instantly, unable to compete with those soundwaves.

The fat man also had a terrifying weapon: a bowl! When he stroked his bowl, terrifying soundwaves made the air explode around him, and his opponents' souls kept breaking apart. It was a weapon which attacked his enemy's souls.

“Medium-level Saint's Weapons.” Lin Feng glanced at Hua Qian Yu and the fat man's weapons. They contained Saint's power, although it wasn't as terrifying and oppressive as Qin Shan's power.

In the lower world, the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Saint's Weapons were considered peerless treasures. Such weapons could destroy or protect an Ancient Holy Clan. Even clans like the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan considered such weapons peerless. But in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and the Supreme Animal World, such weapons weren't considered peerless.

They were also divided into different categories. Lan Ge and the others were from Shrines and powerful clans, and they used medium-level weapons. Maybe they had other trump cards, nobody knew whether they had high-level Saint's Weapons or not.

Those people were core members in Shrines and Cans, descendants of terrifying cultivators like Qiong Jiu Tian. Having high-level Saint's Weapons was something absolutely possible for such people. This time, they had come for the mysterious Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell.

Of course, whether they had weapons or not wasn't the most important thing. Lin Feng was very touched by the fact they were helping him.

The Half-Saint is very strong. Hua Qian Yu and the fat man are using medium-level Saint's Weapons and they allow them to compete with him, but they don't have the advantage. The best

thing would be to get rid of the two others first, thought Lin Feng. Chi Lian Shan and the friendly-looking woman were fighting against two gigantic black phoenixes. Lin Feng realized the woman's Qi seemed familiar.

She must be from the Life Shrine?, thought Lin Feng. Qi filled the air, and Xiao Ya disappeared. He was Daimon from the World Clan, he could use world strength if he wished. Nobody was surprised to see that the World Clan had incredibly strong cultivators, there were many legends about them in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Lin Feng sent Xiao Ya back into his small world so he didn't need to worry about her anymore. His figure flickered and he threw himself at one of the Saint Emperors, the black phoenix against whom Chi Lian Shan was fighting.

"I'm coming!" said Lin Feng. Chi Lian Shan moved back. Lin Feng looked at the black phoenix icily.

"Go in!" said Lin Feng icily. The enemy had the impression space and time were changing. He appeared in a world of darkness.

He glanced around, but didn't understand what was going on, he only saw Lin Feng's eyes.

"Illusion?" said the black phoenix, as the air began to thrum. He kept telling himself that he was in an illusion, but realized that it was useless. The world around him seemed real. But how was that possible? One glance could make him appear in another world?

This was the Saint's technique Lin Feng had learned in the grave of Black Phoenix Valley. After absorbing the Saint's powerful soul, he had understood new spells. Even though they couldn't be considered real Saint's techniques, at least they were very useful and he could take people to other worlds.

Actually, it started as an illusion, but then looked extremely real. Once the targets were inside, they had the impression they were in

another world. That was the biggest difference with ordinary illusion techniques; this time, his foes weren't aware they were in illusions.

"You're in my world, you're doomed," said a voice icily. The black phoenix was terrified, as cursing and death strength appeared around him.

The air vibrated, a black armor appeared around the black phoenix as he tried to resist.

"It's useless. You're doomed. You're going to die!" said a demonic voice carrying cursing strength.

—

Outside of that dark world, Chi Lian Shan was watching Daimon. His heart was pounding. What he saw was Daimon staring at the enemy. What a terrifying vision technique! Daimon could attack enemies by glancing at them, and it didn't seem difficult at all for him. If that Saint Emperor hadn't been incredibly strong, he would have died instantly!

"What a powerful strength!" said Chi Lian Shan. Daimon had told him to move aside and leave that battle to him, and as expected, Daimon didn't disappoint him.

"I'll come and help you!" said Chi Lian Shan. He entered the illusion and appeared between the fighters. With Daimon, they defeated the phoenix quite quickly. He hadn't been able to do anything.

Daimon left the illusion with Chi Lian Shan. "When I was inside, I had the impression I was in another world. Is that a special power of the World Clan?"

Lin Feng shook his head and replied, "It's a special spell I studied on my own. I'll call it Cage of Darkness."

"A spell you studied on your own." Chi Lian Shan's eyes twinkled. "How strong. With your spells and my attacks, we'll be a

perfect team in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. We should definitely join hands.”

“Alright,” Lin Feng smiled. He looked over at Lan Ge and the beautiful woman. They had also finished their battle. Only the half-Saint was left!

Chi Lian Shan smiled and glanced at Lin Feng. His figure flickered, and the six of them surrounded the half-Saint.

The black phoenix frowned. Two Saint Emperors and Saint’s Weapons were enough to fight against him, but now they were all surrounding him, he felt tremendous pressure.

“Haha, we’re going to break a Saint today! Even though it’s only a half-one, it’s still awesome,” laughed Chi Lian Shan. He raised his hand and a medium-level Saint’s Weapon appeared. Without those weapons, such an enemy could resist them, surrounding him was useless without weapons because his attacks were too powerful.

The five cultivators attacked with their weapons, the half-Saint had the impression he was going to die. He had never thought his clan would be destroyed by humans. He felt like he was the butt of some cosmic joke.

He glanced at them, they were all very strong.

# Chapter 2332: Going to the Pit of Hell

---

Lin Feng also took out a weapon, his Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron. The ancient cauldron used to belong to the Great Deployment Master, and was also quite powerful. It became more powerful as Lin Feng became stronger. Back when the Great Deployment Master was still a Saint, the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron was probably a Saint's Weapon, or it would have been useless to him!

The Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron was extremely hard. Lin Feng had used it when the Saint of the Fire Shrine had chased him and he had seen how resistant it was. It was almost indestructible.

The gigantic black phoenix glanced at them, trying to find a way to escape. He knew that those six people could kill him with their medium-level Saint's Weapons, he couldn't fight them off.

Finally, he looked at Lin Feng. He didn't think that Lin Feng was the weakest one, but the Qi of his Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron was the weakest.

Dazzling black lights emerged from his eyes, and he threw himself at Lin Feng.

"Cage of Darkness!" said Lin Feng. Energy emerged from his eyes and turned into a cage which surrounded the phoenix.

The black phoenix stopped moving and appeared in the vision cage. For the others outside, the black phoenix was still there and the half-Saint could sense it too. Many black phoenixes appeared and stared back at Lin Feng. His eyes hurt.

The others attacked. When the cage broke apart, Chi Lian Shan threw his Saint's weapon. It rang out, and people could hear it millions of li away. The gigantic black phoenix coughed up blood.

Soundwaves vibrated out. The fat man made his gigantic bowl resonate in tune, and attacked the black phoenix's soul. Hua Qian

Yu and the others used their weapons at the same time. In the blink of an eye, the black phoenix was on the verge of death.

Jet-black lights appeared all around the phoenix as he spat blood. His body turned into a black beam of light, and he shot towards Lin Feng. This time, Lin Feng sensed those energies were even more powerful. The black phoenix wanted to devour him. It was as if billions of evil black phoenixes were trying to feast on his body.

“Fusion!” Lin Feng fused together with the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron and activated its deployment spell. Death intent surged forth. Lin Feng’s Death Dao had reached the maximum level, so when he transformed into the cauldron, the Death intent he released was terrifying. The Funeral Bells could be heard far away.

The black phoenixes were quickly being corroded by the death strength, and started collapsing and falling from the sky. Lan Ge and the others were astonished. That cauldron was terrifying, it could kill people almost instantly!

At the same time, a terrifying absorbing strength filled the air, and the ancient cauldron sucked in the black phoenixes. The gigantic beasts quickly disappeared. Lan Ge and the others continued advancing to where the half-Saint was standing and attacked him with their Saint’s Weapons at the same time. Blood splashed.

“How can he still be fighting in such circumstances?!” Chi Lian Shan was stupefied. He attacked the phoenix again.

The half-Saint gazed into the distance and waved his hands. Instantly, a powerful strength surrounded Chi Lian Shan. Many black phoenixes appeared and dove at him. He had the feeling he was going to explode. Luckily, his defense was good.

“Celestial Earth Armor!” shouted Chi Lian Shan angrily. A mighty earth armor appeared around him, the attacks smashed his armor apart, and the half-Saint threw himself at Lian Shan.



The Funeral Bells continued resonating, the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron appeared in front of Chi Lian Shan. More attacks smashed into the ancient cauldron and drove it away.

“Die!” Hua Qian Yu appeared above the black phoenix, millions of soundwaves surrounded him from above. Lan Ge shouted out, and lightning plummeted down upon the phoenix, too, even as he attacked himself.

Finally, there was a rumbling eruption, the gigantic body exploded in within the lightning storm, like a bolt of thunder going off.

“Tough bastard!” proclaimed Lan Ge. He was impressed. The fighting abilities of a half-Saint were incredible, Saint Emperors seemed so weak in comparison. And this half-Saint was from a Clan which had almost disappeared. Even though they had joined hands, the battle had been fearsome. Luckily, they also had their medium-level Saint’s Weapons!

Lin Feng’s soul left the cauldron. Finally, they had killed their enemy!

“Thank you very much!” Chi Lian Shan said to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled and said, “You came to help me, I’m the one who should be thanking you!”

“That Clan was a bunch of evildoers. Real phoenixes despise them. They should be thoroughly destroyed,” declared Lan Ge, glancing around. The few surviving black phoenixes were shaking. The strongest cultivator of their clan was dead. These six people were murderous, they had nearly wiped out their clan!

“What to do with them?” asked Hua Qian Yu, looking at the crowd on the ground.

“Let them live their pathetic and pitiful lives. Nobody cares about them in the Supreme Animal World. We came here for Mu Shan Zi, let’s gather with the others,” said Lan Ge. The others nodded.

They had come for the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. They weren't interested in the Black Phoenix Clan.

"Let's go," Everybody departed quickly. Six people; four men and two women. Lin Feng went to the gentle-looking woman and asked, "I'm Daimon from the World Clan. Your Qi contains Life intent, you're from the Life Shrine?"

The woman smiled, "I know you're Daimon from the World Clan, you're famous. I didn't think you were so strong, though. My name is Ye Zhi Yun, I'm a disciple from the Life Shrine."

"As expected, I guessed right!" Lin Feng smiled.

"You're the only one who doesn't know us, Daimon. Apart from you, we all know one another," said the fat man with a laugh. He was so fat that when he smiled, his eyes disappeared in skin.

"Haha, maybe," answered Lin Feng, smiling wryly.

"We don't blame you. The World Clan disappeared for such a long time. You haven't had time to get familiar with the place since the World Clan returned. The one in blue clothes is called Lan Ge, he's from the Thunder Shrine. The big one is Chi Lian Shan, he's from the Earth Shrine. Hua Qian Yu is from the Celestial Sound Shrine. Now you know Ye Zhi Yun from the Life Shrine. And me, I'm from the Soul Shrine."

"Soul Shrine?" Lin Feng was startled. He knew that there was a Soul Shrine, but he had not expected the fat guy was from the Soul Shrine. Of course, he had seen his weapon, it attacked souls...

"Now we know one another. Going to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell won't be something easy. It will be dangerous. We should help one another."

"Yes, indeed," Ye Zhi Yun nodded.

"We all count on you," the fat guy said to Ye Zhi Yun. Ye Zhi Yun was from the Life Shrine and she controlled life strength, it was very useful in case of danger.

---

The group of people talked and flew at the same time. After some time, they arrived where Mu Shan Zi and the others had gathered.

“You’re really slow. We’ve been waiting for you for ages,” said Mu Shan Zi smiling.

“Some things slowed us down. Is everybody here?” asked Lan Ge, glancing around.

“Everybody is here. After the news that we were going to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell spread, some other people asked if they could join us, we’re now sixty-five,” said Mu Shan Zi, “There is a terrifying forbidden strength in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. How do we get in? Altogether, or in small groups?”

They could see the Qi in the distance, many of them were impressed by it.

# Chapter 2333: Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell

---

They were at the edge of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. If they moved forwards, they'd arrive inside it.

“Since it's a mysterious forbidden territory, we should disperse. If we're too many people at once and face danger, we could all die at the same time,” said someone. Everybody nodded. Indeed, even though they were very strong, they knew they weren't strong enough to ignore all dangers in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. Even Saints could be in danger in the forbidden territories.

“I think so, too. The problem is how many groups should we form?” asked Mu Shan Zi.

“We're sixty-five people, we should form five big groups and then smaller groups of six. Smaller groups shouldn't stay too far from the others to help one another in case of danger,” said Ye Zhi Yun.

“I agree. That way, even if a small group is in danger, we can help out. That way, we'll also discover more mysteries about the place,” agreed Lan Ge.

Mu Shan Zi called out, “Everybody agrees?”

“Alright.”

Everybody nodded.

“Alright, you can form the groups yourselves,” said Mu Shan Zi. Instantly, people who knew one another and were friends formed groups. Of course, the most important thing was strength; if people considered that someone wasn't strong enough, they didn't want to be with them.

Lan Ge and the others had no problem forming a group, they were already six people. They had already fought together against the black phoenixes, so they were already used to joining hands.

Very quickly, all the groups were made, there was a group of five

people.

“Lan Ge, your group and mine should help one another,” said someone to Lan Ge.

“Alright,” Lan Ge nodded.

After that, Mu Shan Zi smiled and said, “Everybody, good luck! Let’s go!”

They got ready to go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell.

“Let’s go as well,” said Lan Ge, leading the way. Their figures flickered. The periphery of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell was boundless. They all headed in different directions.

---

After a short time, Lan Ge, Lin Feng and the others arrived in front of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. A cold wind brushed against their skin, containing ancient energy. There were some pale blood lights within it.

“Let’s go in!” said Lan Ge. The six of them entered the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. According to legends, the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell was a very mysterious place; no matter from where you entered the territory, it was impossible to reach the other end by walking straight. Nobody knew how big the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell really was.

“So many cliff caves, we could go inside,” said the fat guy, narrowing his eyes and gazing into the distance. There was a gigantic cliff cave in front of them, a blood pond in front of it. It was an incredible and daunting sight.

“The Qi is becoming stronger and stronger,” noticed Lan Ge.

Not far from them was another group of six people.

“Yes, it’s an evil Qi, as if there was a demon inside,” agreed Chi Lian Shan. He had incredibly acute perception.

“Let’s move slowly. We have to be careful,” whispered Ye Zhi

Yun. Her beautiful eyes glittered as the group continued moving. They could see blood everywhere on the cliffs. They didn't enter any cliff caves, though.

"How cold." At that moment, they sensed no life, only chill.

"What kind of Qi is that?" asked Ye Zhi Yun, at that moment. They could all sense that some Qi was approaching them.

"Behind!" They turned around and saw demon lights in a blood pond. The pond was boiling.

"What's that?" Ye Zhi Yun and the others frowned. That blood contained a terrifying demon Qi, and it was getting closer and closer.

"Let's go!" said Lan Ge. He shouted furiously, "Escape!"

They all flew away. The other group reacted at the same time. The Qi was too terrifying. What would happen if it surrounded them?

The other group also flew away.

"What's that?" said the fat man, looking back at the blood-red demon lake. It was extremely fast and following them. At their cultivation level, they didn't manage to lose it.

"There could be anything in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. Let's not think about it too much," said Ye Zhi Yun pulling a long face. She released life lights, but the blood-red demon lake absorbed them.

"How fast. It's catching up with someone," said the fat guy, pointing at someone who wasn't fast enough. The blood-red lake even sped up.

"Accelerate!" said Lan Ge. Lan Ge and the others accelerated. In the time needed to burn a joss stick, they crossed a gigantic distance. All they were sure of was that they had already left the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell's periphery, they were now in the

depths of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell.

“How fast. That guy won’t be able to escape,” said someone. They were astonished. Using their godly awareness, they realized that another strong cultivator had been caught by the evil energy. His eyes were bloodshot, and he shouted defiantly, but it was useless. The demon lake caught up with him and he turned into demon lights. His physical body was burned away, they could see his flesh melt and his bones appear. It was dreadful to see!

“He’s dead!” Lan Ge and the others were trembling. That guy was dead!

“Move!” Terrifying deployment lights appeared under Lin Feng’s feet. Empty space cosmic energies surrounded his body, and he moved at an incredible speed. The demon lake behind them was about ten li back. If they stopped for even a second, the lake would catch up with them and kill them!

In front of them was a desolate mountain. It looked like a horizontal dike.

Chi Lian Shan shouted furiously. He wasn’t as fast as the others, and the lake was catching up with him.

Lin Feng turned his head around and moved towards Chi Lian Shan, grabbing his arm. The lake was getting closer and closer. Lin Feng took him away.

“Thank you very much!” said Chi Lian Shan. But it wasn’t the right time to stop and express his gratitude. Because Lin Feng had lost a few seconds to come back and grab him, one step too slow and the lake would kill them.

Deployment lights flashed. Lin Feng accelerated again. The Qi behind them reached out, trying to slow them down.

“Hurry!” shouted Lan Ge furiously. They kept calm and continued moving towards the dike. It was a gigantic river of blood. Lin Feng and the others swept forwards without hesitation.

The blood-red demon lake was about to reach them, but at the moment they reached the dike, the demon lake stopped and drained away into the blood river.

When Lin Feng and the others reached the dike, they stopped and turned around. Their hearts were pounding. The river was extremely long, it seemed endless. It had many bends as it flowed through the valleys.

But Lin Feng and the others didn't feel relaxed at all. They had to be extremely vigilant.

The river flowed in the direction of a mountain range. There was a figure there, his robe was soaked with blood, his back turned to them. He looked like a cultivator from the old days, motionless as a statue. It was the first being they had seen in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell.

That person's Qi wasn't very strong, but they felt pressure from it.

"Master!" shouted Lan Ge. However, nobody replied. The person remained motionless.

Lan Ge and the others sensed a cold wind brush against their skin, and their sweat went icy. They sweated even more.

After a short time, the figure suddenly moved. The figure slowly turned around and looked at them. They felt they were about to drown in Demon intent. Those eyes made their souls shake.

Half of his face was putrefied flesh, the other half was distinct.

"Another one, is he a local?" wondered Lan Ge aloud.



# Chapter 2334: Terrifying Demons

---

Lin Feng and the others didn't move. They didn't dare. They just stared at the demon.

"Who am I?" said a voice.

Lan Ge and the others blinked. He didn't know who he was?

Lan Ge and the others didn't reply. The demon glanced at them, he looked dreadful.

The demon flickered and landed in front of Lan Ge. Lan Ge was shocked; he wanted to run away, but the demon stared at him, and he was unable to move. He had the impression the demon could destroy him instantly.

The others were terrified and felt chilled, they were all trembling.

"Who am I?" asked the demon, staring at Lan Ge.

"Master, you're Śakra, an ancient Demon King," said Lan Ge.

His eyes glittered. "Ancient Demon King, Śakra?" whispered the demon. He then turned around and repeated "Śakra" continually.

"Śakra, I'm not Śakra, I'm not..." Suddenly, he sounded angry. He then flashed away and disappeared from the group's field of vision.

Lan Ge was soaked in cold sweat and breathing quickly. He had thought he was going to die!

"What a dangerous being. The Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell is terrifying," muttered Lan Ge. They finally understood how horrifying the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell was.

"That demon lake is endless," Ye Zhi Yun turned around and noticed that the demon lake kept flowing into the blood river. Demon Qi kept spreading out. She felt really bad. She released life lights, which were instantly corroded by the demon strength.

But Hua Qian Yu didn't have life strength. She stretched out her hands and looked at them, noticing something kept changing in her body. She was astonished, "That Qi is corroding our bodies!"

Ye Zhi Yun frowned, her life lights disappeared. The demon strength was corroding her hands too!

"That guy's life was corroded, and then he turned into a demon?" wondered Ye Zhi Yun. The corroding strength was growing stronger...

"Let's leave quickly!" said Hua Qian Yu. The group hurried away. There was only one way to go. They kept moving forwards, into the depths of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell.

An invisible and intangible strength surrounded them. They had gotten ready, they knew what to expect, but actually it went beyond what they had imagined. They were really unnerved at this point. The demon lake and the demon were terrifying. If the demon had attacked, what would have happened?

"There's an ancient tree!" said Ye Zhi Yun, pointing at a tree in the mountain range. Her eyes twinkled. There was no life in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, yet surprisingly, there was a tree. Finally, a sign of life!

"Indeed, it's a tree. Let's go!" said Lan Ge and the others, veering towards it. After a short time, they arrived in the sky above the tree.

"Is it really a tree? It contains absolutely no life Qi," said Ye Zhi Yun. She looked disappointed. There were trees of all colors; they had leaves and looked real. There were even some trees which were blood-red, looking at them felt uncomfortable.

"Those trees are like the trees mentioned in some ancient books," said Lin Feng. Ye Zhi Yun looked at one of the trees and got closer to. When she was ten meters away from the tree, the air hummed and she was hurled away.

“What a terrifying Qi,” said Ye Zhi Yun, standing back up. Everybody looked at her, nervous now.

“They’re Cittotpada Demon Trees! According to legends and ancient scriptures, studying demon strength at the foot of a Cittotpada Demon Tree allows a cultivator to develop more acute senses, and it also helps them deepen their comprehension. When the old days were gone, according to legends, the Cittotpada Demon Trees disappeared. I never thought we’d see some in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. How amazing that their Qi hasn’t dispersed!” said Ye Zhi Yun solemnly.

The others were astonished. Those trees were Cittotpada Demon Trees?

“If we had the Three Lives Great Emperor’s Mirror of the Past, it’d be great, we would be able to see the past. It is said that he gave the Mirror of the Past to the woman who hates him the most, his daughter. Nobody knows where it is now,” said Ye Zhi Yun. Lin Feng was astonished. The Mirror of the Past? The Three Lives Great Emperor’s daughter? Empress Xi?

Lin Feng had an ancient mirror, but wasn’t it a Mirror of the Future? Was it a Mirror of the Past?

Lin Feng took out a bronze mirror and put it in front of a Cittotpada Demon Tree. Dazzling lights erupted and started interweaving. Suddenly, it was like time was been going backwards.

Lan Ge and the others frowned and stared at Lin Feng for a moment before looking at the tree. There was a figure at the foot of the tree. He was looking at the tree and looked pensive. After a long time, he sat down cross-legged and started meditating. The tree became distorted and illusionary, it didn’t look like an ancient tree anymore.

“It’s him,” said Chi Lian Shan at that moment. He was astonished. That figure was someone he had seen battle in

someone's memories.

“Who is he?” asked Lan Ge.

“Fifty thousand years ago, he was an incredible demon cultivator: Mo Ding! When he became a Saint, he became even more terrifying and he defeated another very famous Saint. The memory of their duel is transmitted from generation to generation. I've seen their fight!”

“He's Mo Ding?” The others were astonished. Even though they had never seen what he looked like, they had heard of him; a terrifying Saint of the old times! He was in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell...

At that moment, Mo Ding suddenly opened his eyes. Even if the scene was something that had happened fifty thousand years before, the group had the impression they were there, they all took steps backwards. Mo Ding groaned icily and flashed away. He rose up into the air, as someone else came and landed in front of the tree. The new man had his back turned to Lin Feng and the others. It was definitely not Mo Ding!

Lights flashed and he disappeared. People's hearts were pounding furiously. What about Mo Ding? Where was he?

“Who's that?” Lin Feng suddenly turned around, he was astonished, his facial muscles stiffened. Halfway up in the air, a figure was floating there. Half of his face looked human, the other half looked terrifying.

“He's... Mo Ding!” muttered Lin Feng and the others when they saw him. They were all trembling. A terrifying strength filled the air. Very quickly, Lin Feng and the others realized that a few demons had appeared in the mountain range and they hadn't noticed them before. They were just standing there in the air above the mountain range.

“Those demons are terrifying cultivators from the old days?”

murmured Lan Ge and the others. Mo Ding and the other demons slowly drifted towards them.

“Get ready to run away,” said Lan Ge telepathically. Lin Feng and the others took steps backwards. Mo Ding waved his hands, and a gigantic hand moved towards Lan Ge.

“No!” shouted Lin Feng when he saw that. Mo Ding waved his hands, and Lan Ge started turning into a demon. His blood Qi flew away, he released lightning, but it was useless. He looked like a tiny little insect in comparison with the enemy.

“No!...” shouted Lan Ge defiantly. Mo Ding threw Lan Ge extremely far away into the distance. Lin Feng and the others were trembling. They said nothing. They had just seen Lan Ge get killed like that, they felt powerless, like weaklings.

One of the seven forbidden territories, Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell!!!

Suddenly, they understood why it was called the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, why it was a forbidden territory. Nobody could invade and conquer this territory, not even the Shrines!

Mo Ding looked at them. They stepped backwards, wanting to escape, but could they?

At that moment, an ancient demon song spread in the air. The demons gazed into the distance, where they saw a figure on the top of a mountain. That person had his back turned to them as he played some music.

Mo Ding disappeared. Lin Feng and the others were startled. They glanced around, and realized that the demons had all disappeared in the blink of an eye. They were scared of that music, or more precisely, of the musician!

“Who could scare those demons away? Another demon?” Lin Feng and the others gazed into the distance. Next to the musician, another figure appeared. He was seated there, looking calm and

composed in a black robe. Lan Ge had seen him before!

# Chapter 2335: Demon Kings in Cliff Caves?

---

“Lan Ge!” Lin Feng and the others didn’t move, but they looked at the mountain where Mo Ding had thrown Lan Ge. They were so sad for him. A moment before, he was with them, and now he was gone. Mo Ding had killed him in the blink of an eye.

In the outside world, apart from Saints, Lan Ge was considered a terrifying cultivator, he was a genius of the Thunder Shrine. But in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, his life was so fragile.

Lin Feng and the others felt powerless and weak.

“Master!” At that moment, Hua Qian Yu looked at the musician and shouted. The others were astonished. She surprisingly took the initiative to call out to him.

“Master!” The music suddenly stopped and the musician slowly turned around. When he looked at Hua Qian Yu, Lin Feng and the others were stunned. That person wasn’t a demon, he was a human. It was an old man, who looked perplexed.

However, when Hua Qian Yu looked at him, she shuddered. How was this possible? What was he doing in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell?

“High Priest! I’m Hua Qian Yu from the Celestial Sound Shrine!” said Hua Qian Yu. Gigantic sound waves rolled out. The High Priest of her Celestial Sound Shrine was there!

Lin Feng and the others were astonished; that old man was from the Celestial Sound Shrine?!

“High Priest?” whispered the old man. He looked at Hua Qian Yu and asked, “Who am I?”

“He’s amnesic!” Lin Feng and the others were astonished. People in here all seemed to become amnesic and forgot who they were.

“High Priest! You’re the High Priest of the Celestial Sound

Shrine!” said Hua Qian Yu. She was speechless. She didn’t know the High Priest’s name. She had only seen him in memories. It was the first time she had seen him in reality!

“Is that so?” said the old man, he was muttering to himself, “Where is the Celestial Sound Shrine?”

A strong wind started blowing, and the old man disappeared. The figure in black clothes next to him rose up in the air and said, “Master, wait for me!”

“He’s calling him Master, is that normal?” wondered Lin Feng and the others. Their eyes were glittering. Very quickly, the two disappeared from the desolate mountain range.

“We must leave this place,” said Ye Zhi Yun. They all nodded. The demons had appeared without anybody noticing them a moment before. They couldn’t stay here.

“I want to go back,” said Hua Qian Yu suddenly. Everybody’s faces stiffened.

They had come to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell without knowing what was awaiting them. It was really horrible. It seemed like the only possible outcome for them was death.

The High Priest of the Shrine had disappeared for so many years, he was stuck in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, and now he had become amnesic! Hua Qian Yu didn’t feel brave anymore. She didn’t want to stay there, she wanted to leave.

However, could she go back now?

“Going back now is too dangerous,” said Ye Zhi Yun softly.

“No, I want to go back!” said Hua Qian Yu. Seeing the High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine had terrified her. She knew that the High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine was a terrifyingly strong cultivator. If he had become amnesic, she had no hope.

“Will you come back with me?” asked Hua Qian Yu.



Ye Zhi Yun shook her head. She looked at Lin Feng and the others, they said, “We’re here already. Even if we go back, we might die. Nobody knows.”

“I agree,” said the fat man. Hua Qian Yu didn’t say anything. She turned around and left quickly. She wanted to leave as rapidly as possible.

Suddenly, a gigantic hand appeared at the foot of the mountain, Hua Qian Yu’s face changed drastically. She turned around, she wanted to escape, but the gigantic hand grabbed her.

“No!” shouted Hua Qian Yu furiously. However, the hand suddenly disappeared and Hua Qian Yu along with it.

Lin Feng and the others were astonished and speechless. Their lives were truly in peril there.

“Let’s go,” said Ye Zhi Yun. Lin Feng and the others tried to keep calm and continued moving forwards, they had no choice.

Lin Feng and the others crossed a valley filled with a cadaverous Qi from the deaths of many people. There were some dazzling weapons as well, their Qi was formidable.

“Another group?” Lin Feng and the others bumped into another group. The group with whom they had agreed to stay near at the very beginning had disappeared a while before already! The group they were facing at that moment was only composed of three people.

“There are Saint’s Weapons and corpses, but those corpses haven’t decomposed, they aren’t even deteriorated, those people were incredibly strong,” said someone, looking at the corpses. He seemed enthusiastic.

“Don’t go down though, it could be extremely dangerous,” someone warned him.

“We’re in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, danger is everywhere. We’re very weak, they died in front of us, and we couldn’t do

much,” said that person. “Even if it’s dangerous, we have to try. We have to become stronger, that’s the only way for us to survive.”

He flashed into the valley and landed in front of a Saint’s Weapon, a bloody demon blade. He waved his hand and pulled at the weapon.

Peerless blood lights suddenly shot towards him and cut his body into two, he didn’t have any time to react. Even his soul was destroyed. Lin Feng and the others had seen that he was vigilant, but it hadn’t been enough.

The blood-red demon blade shook and hummed before calming down. They wouldn’t forget that sight for a long time.

“Let’s go,” said Lin Feng. They didn’t know where they were, they just knew that they were in the depths of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, and now leaving was impossible.

The two cultivators of the other group followed Lin Feng and the others, but didn’t talk to them, staying in the distance behind them. Lin Feng and the others understood what those people were thinking. If Lin Feng and the others faced danger while moving forwards, those two people would have time to leave!

“We can’t afford losing any more people,” said Lin Feng, stopping and looking at Ye Zhi Yun, Chi Lian Shan, and the fat guy. Two people had died in a short time. They couldn’t afford to lose anyone else.

Ye Zhi Yun hoped nobody would die again. They initially didn’t want Lan Ge and Hua Qian Yu to die either, but they weren’t strong enough, so they hadn’t been able to save them.

Lin Feng slowly turned around and gazed at the two people behind them. He said icily, “Are you guys moving forwards?”

The two of them stared back at Lin Feng coldly.

“If you don’t, then die!” He released Death Dao to surround those people. They frowned. Daimon from the World Clan controlled

## Death Dao?

“Indeed, if you want to use us to progress safely, die!” said Chi Lian Shan icily. He jumped forwards and oppressed them.

“If you don’t, then die!” said the fat guy. He wasn’t smiling anymore, either. The two others didn’t stand a chance against the four of them.

“How cruel!” spat one of them icily. They landed in front of Lin Feng and the others, and started running away, heading into the mountains.

————

Nothing had happened for some time. Then, a gigantic coffin-shaped building appeared in the sky. It looked like a coffin which would have been used for a demon king. It looked like a palace too... it looked a Pit of Hell!

Lin Feng and the others stopped and watched it. Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell!

Was the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell named after that thing? What was inside? Was there really a demon king inside?

“What to do?” whispered Ye Zhi Yun. They had arrived in front of a gigantic floating coffin. Her soul was being oppressed...

“We’re not the only ones here,” said Lin Feng, gazing into the distance. There were some people in the distance on the other side. It was like a demon had attracted them there.

“Let’s go inside?” asked Chi Lian Shan.

Lin Feng was grim and said, “I think that if we don’t go inside, we’ll never be able to get out, anyway.”

“What you mean is that getting inside is our only hope if we want to get out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell?” Ye Zhi Yun asked Lin Feng.

“There are only two paths: the one in front of us, or the one we

just went through. If you want to go back, I'll come with you and try," Lin Feng said to his group. Ye Zhi Yun's face froze. Going back the same way?

"We have only one option, then," Ye Zhi Yun smiled. She looked at the nest of devils and said, "Maybe we're going to die soon."

Their hearts felt heavy. They might be going to die. Nobody could tell...

# Chapter 2336: Great Demon Halberd of Desolation

---

They looked at the floating Pit of Hell. Lin Feng whispered, “Since we decided to continue, we have to advance courageously with an indomitable spirit.”

He slowly moved forwards. Very quickly, they arrived in front of the entrance of the blood-red Pit of Hell and entered.

When Lin Feng arrived inside, he realized it was another world, and there were ruins everywhere, complemented by corpses and skeletons. It smelled like death.

An evil wind brushed against their skin. Ye Zhi Yun shivered and said icily, “How cold!”

That chill pierced through their bones. The name of that place, the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, was becoming more concrete as they moved on.

“It’s the core territory of one of the seven forbidden territories. Is this the beginning of the real Pit of Hell?” whispered Chi Lian Shan. A weapon appeared in his hand, and diffused lights which contained Saint’s strength.

“A Saint’s Weapon!” Lin Feng was astonished. Chi Lian Shan had a real Saint’s Weapon! The fat guy and Ye Zhi Yun also took out weapons, all of them Saint’s Weapons. Lin Feng took out his Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron. He had to be careful here.

At that moment, in the distance, dazzling golden lights flashed and illuminated the blood-red sky. A terrifying Qi filled the air. Lin Feng said, “There’s a battle!”

Their figures flickered and they quickly saw two strong cultivators fighting against a corpse. That corpse only had the upper part of his body, his eye sockets were empty, and he released absolutely no Qi. He looked completely dead, but he could fight

against strong cultivators who had Saint's Weapons!

"What a terrifying physical strength. Even if he's dead, he's terrifyingly strong."

"A Saint's body is a Saint's body, Low-level Saint's bodies are even more durable than low-level Saint's Weapons," said Chi Lian Shan. But that Saint was dead, why was he fighting? And how?

"It's a zombie, I'll go!" said Ye Zhi Yun, jumping forwards. She released terrifying life lights which attacked the corpse. The corpse slowly collapsed softly and looked like a normal dead body.

The two strong cultivators said, "Your life lights can counter cadaverous Qi. Thank you!"

"The atmosphere is so lugubrious inside," said the other one. It was Situ Ba. He seemed extremely annoyed and said, "We should stay together and help one another."

Ye Zhi Yun looked at Lin Feng and the others and said, "We're in the heart of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, the more the merrier."

Lin Feng nodded, "Alright, good, let's stay together."

Chi Lian Shan and the fat guy didn't mind.

"How long have you been in here?" Ye Zhi Yun asked Situ Ba and the other one.

"Not long. We noticed a treasure, and the corpse attacked us," said the other one. His body was surrounded by golden lights, a sign that he was from the Empty Space Shrine. He was holding a magic weapon which became shrank down at that moment.

"A treasure?" Ye Zhi Yun was startled. "Where?"

"We'll take you there. There's an incredible treasure, but it must be dangerous there," said that person. Lin Feng and the others after followed him. They quickly arrived in front an altar, a broadsword stuck into it. At the foot of the broadsword was a

corpse, in perfect condition.

“Another Saint’s body. That broadsword is in his body, it means it killed him here. How incredible,” said Situ Ba. “I wonder whether we can control it or not?”

Chi Lian Shan went to take a step forwards, but Lin Feng stopped him. He glanced at him and said, “You remember the valley?”

“You think it’s that terrifying?” said Chi Lian Shan.

“Can’t you see that Situ Ba and the other one don’t intend to go and try to take the broadsword?” replied Lin Feng telepathically.

Chi Lian Shan was surprised, but replied, “Situ Ba wants to use us and see whether it’s dangerous or not?”

“Possibly. We should leave,” said Lin Feng telepathically. The fat guy and Ye Zhi Yun left with them. Situ Ba and the other one were startled. They looked after the four and frowned. The four weren’t stupid. If they hadn’t seen the valley outside, they would have tried to take the broadsword, but now they were cautious.

-----

Lin Feng and the others continued on. Very quickly, they bumped into a demon, different from the demons outside. One of his eyes was missing, but the other one was alert. He glanced at Lin Feng and the others, making them shiver.

Lin Feng and the others sensed a cold wind. The demon appeared in front of them. They didn’t move. The demon raised his fist and aimed at Chi Lian Shan.

“Back!” shouted Lin Feng explosively. A terrifying Ruler’s Sword moved towards the demon’s remaining eye, but the demon raised his hand and stopped it. He waved his hand and threw the Ruler’s Sword far away in the distance. There was a distant crash.

The demon looked at Lin Feng, who moved back with the others.

“You saved me again,” said Chi Lian Shan. He was soaked with

cold sweat.

“Saved you? We’ll see if we manage to leave alive,” said Lin Feng. The demon moved after him. Lin Feng flitted backwards, but the demon swooped towards him. He raised his hands, blood reincarnation strength appeared and attracted Lin Feng.

“Great Empty Space Technique!” said Lin Feng. He penetrated into empty space strength. A blood fog appeared around him, but couldn’t reach him. The demon continued moving towards him, his hands clasped behind his back.

Lin Feng felt ice-cold. The demon’s eye looked sharp and expressionless.

“Piss off now!” shouted Chi Lian Shan. He attacked the enemy with his Saint’s Weapon. The atmosphere around the demon crackled with unseen power. The demon simply punched out in his direction.

“I just need some people’s memories, who is willing to give me memories?” asked the demon suddenly. Chi Lian Shan and the others were astonished. He just wanted people’s memories?

“If I give you memories, will I become a vegetable?” asked Chi Lian Shan.

“If you’re so kind, I won’t corrode your memories, I will just have a look,” said the demon emotionlessly.

Chi Lian Shan took a deep breath and said, “Alright, I trust you, have a look at my memories.”

He walked up to the demon, composed and ready.

The demon stretched out his hand and put it on Chi Lian Shan’s head. Terrifying lights surrounded Chi Lian Shan’s head for a long moment before he took back his hand and looked at the sky.

“So many years have passed again!” whispered the demon. Then he turned around and left. Lin Feng and the others took a deep



breath with relief. How dangerous! He wasn't a pure demon...

"How audacious!" remarked someone at that moment. Lin Feng and the others spun around.

"Master!" shouted Ye Zhi Yun. It was the High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine. "I'm Ye Zhi Yun from the Life Shrine! Master, how can we leave?"

"Leave?" asked the High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine. He was surprised, raised his head and said, "I don't even know how long I've been in here, but I've never found a way to leave..."

"How did you lose your memories, Master?" asked Ye Zhi Yun.

"If I knew, I wouldn't be amnesic!" replied the High Priest, "Maybe demons corroded my memories, like that one."

"Where are we?" asked Ye Zhi Yun.

"Here?" The High Priest gazed into the distance and answered, "I've never been farther than here. I've heard that this was the demon king coffin chamber. The demons here are all strong cultivators from the ancient times."

How dreadful, thought Lin Feng and the others. Their hearts were pounding violently. The demon king's coffin chamber?

A terrifying light streaked across the sky, and thunder rumbled. Lin Feng raised his head and saw a beam of light dash to the skies. Suddenly, the blood moon in the sky exploded.

"Great Demon Halberd of Desolation! Who broke the seal?!" asked the High Priest, frowning. He flitted away and disappeared. Lin Feng and the others saw him in the distance.

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation? A seal?

# Chapter 2338: King's Grave Palace

---

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was still furious, the air thrummed with fury. It wanted to destroy the moon, but it failed.

“Maybe that that peerless demon killed its owner?” murmured Lin Feng and the others. It kept attacking.

Even though the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation didn't manage to destroy the moon, it at least managed to make the palace appear. The High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine wasn't far from Lin Feng and the others, looking up at the sky too. His eyes were glittering.

Who had made him become amnesic? Who had messed with this world? Who had made it become a forbidden territory, how come all the strong cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and the Supreme Animal World didn't dare come here? Was it because of the person on that palace?

The High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine rose up in the air, a guqin appeared in his hand and he started playing it. A deadly melody rose up, a silver river made of soundwave energy flowed across the sky. It crashed onto the palace, but nothing happened.

“There are words,” said Ye Zhi Yun, staring at the blood-red moon. Ancient writing had appeared.

“I don't understand those ancient characters,” said Ye Zhi Yun. Chi Lian Shan and the fat guy frowned. They didn't know those characters either.

“What's the matter?” Ye Zhi Yun asked Lin Feng. He was trembling. It was the second time he had seen this in his life.

“The demon emperor!” Lin Feng was shaking. A thousand years ago, what had happened then?

The demon emperor was supposed to have come to life a thousand years before, and the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell had

existed for a very, very long time. A thousand years before, there were already many legends about a demon. It had to be the demon king of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell!

“You understand those characters?” the fat guy asked Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded. He knew those words, of course, he had seen ancient words in the Jade Emperor’s palace, and they were completely different from characters they used at the moment, because they were ancient words.

“What is written?” asked Chi Lian Shan. He was curious.

“You could make the earth and the sky collapse, you made rivers of blood flow in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, I’ve been waiting for you for so long.”

Suddenly, the moon started trembling and illuminated Lin Feng’s body. Ye Zhi Yun, Chi Lian Shan and the fat guy were frozen with shock.

“You could make the earth and the sky collapse, you made rivers of blood flow in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, I’ve been waiting for you for so long.” Was that voice talking to Daimon from the World Clan?

Why did he understand those characters? Why was the moon shaking?

The terrifying demon lake strength gradually dispersed, the blood-red moon recalled it. A beam of light appeared and enveloped Lin Feng’s body before lifting him away. Lin Feng slowly rose into the air.

Lin Feng rose higher and higher into sky, getting closer and closer to the moon. He entered the sky palace as the astonished Ye Zhi Yun and others stared after him. He disappeared inside the palace.

“The demon lake is gone, we will survive,” said Ye Zhi Yun, taking a deep breath. Thanks to Daimon, they were going to

survive!

“How come Daimon went to the palace? Did the demon king call him?”

---

Qiong Hai Ya and Qiong Jiu Tian appeared. Qiong Hai Ya's lower body was missing, it had been corroded away. However, when the demon lake disappeared, some strength appeared around them and they recovered.

“I'm saved, it was the will of Heaven!” exclaimed Qiong Hai Ya, raising his head and looking at the moon. He had nearly died. Luckily, Qiong Jiu Tian had given him some precious treasures, which had protected him temporarily. But even then, his body had started being eaten away. He had almost died!

“Let's find the exit!” said Qiong Jiu Tian. They had to leave.

“Yes, let's leave this horrible place,” nodded Qiong Hai Ya. At that moment, they just wanted to leave, they were terrified. Nobody wanted to stay in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell anymore. Even Saints risked their lives in here.

Qiong Hai Ya swore he would never come back to this place.

They managed to leave thanks to the will of Heaven, ignoring all the demons who had lost their pasts and were just staring at the sky. The two just wanted to escape!

---

Lin Feng saw an ancient throne inside blood-red main hall of the palace. There were demon king statues all around, and a demon king was seated on the throne. He was the only living being there, holding a demon blade with both hands. It was stuck in the ground before him.

“Who are you?” asked Lin Feng. He tried to keep calm as he said, “You're not the demon emperor; where is the demon emperor?”

Nobody replied. That person seemed like he had stayed there in that position forever.

The silence was oppressive. Lin Feng glanced around and said, "Demon Emperor, you summoned me here. Why don't you show up? Why are you waiting for me?"

Lin Feng didn't understand, there were many things which seemed to refer to the Demon Emperor. And now he was in that palace, was it really the demon king's coffin chamber?

"I am the Demon Emperor," said a dimly discernible voice. Lin Feng had the impression he was hallucinating. The king on the throne seemed like he was coming back to life, raising his head.

"No, it's an illusion." Lin Feng bit his lips.

"It's not an illusion. I've been waiting for you for so long," the voice sighed. It seemed like that voice was traveling through space and time to reverberate in Lin Feng's head.

"Why did you wait for me?" asked Lin Feng.

"I've been waiting for you to be able to use my demon blade, for you to summon me, for you to crush the earth and sky, and for you to make rivers of blood flow in the Continent of the Nine Clouds."

"You are asleep, how could I wake you up and call you?" said Lin Feng. He didn't understand. Was the demon king sleeping?

"Only you can call me because I am you and you are me," said the voice.

"Come, take the blade and wake me up.. Then, you'll defy the earth and sky, my blood will be your path. You will create a gigantic palace of blood," said the voice. Lin Feng was trembling. I am you and you are me?

The demon emperor meant that Lin Feng was the demon emperor? He was the demon emperor?

"You're still hesitating? With my strength, I could destroy you

instantly. I don't need to lie to you. Wake me up and receive my peerless strength, that palace will be yours. Do you understand?"

"I've seen the Demon Emperor's picture, you're not him," said Lin Feng, "You must be the demon king of the Pit of Hell. How could you be someone who lived a thousand years ago?"

"Do you think the Demon Emperor really exists? It was just your image, or you are his image. If you wake me up, you'll receive my strength and you'll understand everything."

"Come and try. I don't need to fool you to kill you."

Lin Feng was astonished, the ancient words, the Demon Emperor, the images...?

Who was who?

And the voice was right, he could kill him easily, he didn't need to lie. Lin Feng slowly walked forwards. He wanted to know the truth.

He arrived in front of the throne. He stretched out his hand and put it on the demon blade, a terrifying strength filled the air. At that moment, he started trembling. He had the impression he was turning into the demon king.

"You are me. I am you. Wake me up. You'll become a real god," said the voice to Lin Feng. Would he be able to become one with the demon king if he woke him up? Would he become a peerless cultivator if he did that? It was tempting. He was trembling more and more violently.

Am I really the Demon Emperor?, thought Lin Feng. He had been brought into the palace, why did he need to wake him up like that? Why didn't he wake up himself if he had such powers?!

"I don't believe you!" said Lin Feng.

# Chapter 2339: Back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds

---

Lin Feng pulled his hand away. He didn't believe him. He had gone through so many hardships to become so strong, how could such an incredible power be within reach so easily? Lin Feng didn't need such external strength, he wanted to keep everything under his own control. He didn't believe he was an ancient demon king, he was just himself, Lin Feng!

A terrifying demon strength penetrated into his body, but he stopped touching the blade and took steps backwards, staring at the figure on the throne as that cultivator was staring at him. He looked like a god, but he was motionless.

"He didn't try Body Capture using force!" Lin Feng was perplexed. At that moment, the demon king could do anything to him, but he didn't.

"Since you don't want to wake me up, does it mean you think you want to see how strong you can be?" said the voice. It had only one thread of intent left. He was sound asleep.

"I don't believe you," said Lin Feng. He became calm again. He was Lin Feng, and had a Forbidden Body!

"Someday, if I reach the clouds, I will go against the will of Heaven. Why would I need to wake you up and borrow your strength?" Lin Feng asked calmly.

"Will you regret?"

"I will have nothing to regret," said Lin Feng indifferently.

"You have a palace within reach, that is a tempting offer. Anyway, good, you have time to think anyway. If you change your mind, come back and wake me up," said the voice. Demon strength reappeared around the moon and the air thrummed angrily.

Boom!

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation landed next to Lin Feng. A terrifying Qi filled the air.

What a terrifying strength. One thought and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation acknowledges allegiance to him?!, thought Lin Feng. He was astonished. He looked at the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, it looked unhappy. However, its mental state seemed like it was being oppressed.

Lin Feng was still trembling. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation appeared in front of the demon king, was it going to submit?

“The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation is a great weapon. Since you don’t want to wake me up, take it. Maybe you’ll come back someday,” said the voice. Lin Feng was stunned. Considering the words he had read and all the clues he had found, the Demon Emperor had to be somewhere around, but surprisingly there was only this demon king, what was his relation to the Demon Emperor?

Why did he say that Lin Feng was the Demon Emperor?

He had brought Lin Feng there, asked Lin Feng to wake him up. Lin Feng refused, and yet he didn’t do anything to him. On the contrary, he even offered him the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, a terrifying Saint’s Weapon.

“It will listen to you. Don’t forget that you are me. You just can’t control its full strength yet, but I will help you and oppress its strength, it will be less arrogant. You will be able to control it, and it will acknowledge allegiance to you.”

Lin Feng grabbed the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and terrifying strength started corroding his body. In front of the demon king, the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation couldn’t do anything, but against Lin Feng...



“Rise!” Lin Feng raised his hands, a terrifying Qi made the whole palace shake violently. Demon intent rang out viciously. He was still holding the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and looked like a demon god.

“Can I leave?” asked Lin Feng.

“Of course. But you will probably come back. I will be here waiting for you to wake me up. I will transmit you my strength, and you will become the god of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell,” said the demon slowly. “Then, you will control a peerless strength and enter this imperial castle and it will be yours, you will be a peerless demon god.”

“Alright, I will come back if I think it’s the right choice,” said Lin Feng indifferently. He was thinking he would never come back to this horrible place. It wasn’t a castle, but a coffin chamber.

“Go. Nobody will prevent you from leaving,” said the demon. Lin Feng put the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation away and left the castle.

What an incredible experience!

“The Sky Palace, what’s the date tonight! Who was the Demon Emperor? Who was the demon king of that place?”

Lin Feng went down the flight of stairs and went back to the Pit of Hell. He looked at the moon in the sky, it was dark again. The terrifying Demon intent continued enveloping the area. The demons of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell forgot everything that had just happened.

Lin Feng landed next to Ye Zhi Yun and the others. They looked back at Lin Feng, curious but silent.

“Let’s leave the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell,” said Lin Feng. They had to leave, otherwise the demon could regret, and they would have no chance to leave anymore. Even Saints could die in here!

“Alright,” Ye Zhi Yun and the others nodded. Could they leave, though? They had thought a bit too much of themselves when coming to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. They had thought they’d have lots of opportunities, but actually, once inside, all they faced was danger. Some of them had been killed instantly.

---

After Lin Feng and the others left, the demon king was still in the palace, motionless. He was waiting for someone to wake him up.

Demon intent filled the air. Under the palace, a demon king appeared where Lin Feng was standing a moment before. He was wearing a black robe, and he looked up at the unseen demon king calmly.

“He refused such an incredible opportunity!” whispered the cultivator, before turning into black smoke and disappearing again.

---

Five days later, Lin Feng and the others escaped the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. Luckily, this time, nothing happened to them.

“We’re out and alive,” said the fat guy, grinning with joy. He raised his head and looked at the sun, it was such a beautiful day. After spending days in the Pit of Hell, it felt so good to see the sun again!

“We’re out!” Ye Zhi Yun smiled. They were alive, so awesome!

“Daimon, thank you!” Chi Lian Shan said to Daimon. He was deeply grateful. “Without you, we’d be dead.”

“Indeed, Daimon, thank you so much!” agreed Ye Zhi Yun. They didn’t look proud and arrogant at all anymore.

However, Lin Feng just smiled wryly and sighed, “Unfortunately, Lan Ge and Hua Qian Yu died. it wasn’t worth it.”

They had died for nothing.

“I’m done with these damn forbidden territories!” said Chi Lian Shan angrily. Dying there was worthless. Dying after an incredible and explosive battle was worth it, but dying in that horrible world was useless, and it was all up to luck!

“Don’t tell anyone what happened in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell,” said Lin Feng. Everybody nodded. They knew that Daimon had found something; he had gone into the palace of the moon, but they were going to keep that secret.

“There are things people don’t need to know,” said Ye Zhi Yun smiling, “Alright, we’re alive, and I think it’s the first time so many people come out of a forbidden territory alive. Let’s go back and see what people say.”

“Yes, let’s go back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said Chi Lian Shan.

The group of four left, and didn’t look back.

---

People from the Supreme Animal World didn’t pay too much attention to the humans who had gone to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, but the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds paid a lot of attention to them, especially since Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya had gone there too and had come back. Many people in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds admired them. They wanted to know the secrets of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. People talked about Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya everywhere and all the time those days, they had come out from a forbidden territory alive!

The others were probably dead inside, including Mu Shan Zi.

Some people who had explored the mystery of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell told some powerful groups what the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell looked like, but those groups didn’t share those pieces of information.

Ye Zhi Yun, Lin Feng, and the others separated. Lin Feng went back to the World Clan. What had happened in the forbidden territory felt like a dream, he would never forget it!

# Chapter 2340: Canonization Area

---

In the Fortune Shrine, Lin Feng's clone was seated with the Diviner. The Diviner frowned and looked at Lin Feng, stunned.

"You're saying that there's an ancient palace in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell inside the crimson moon, and that a demon king is inside?" The Diviner was amazed. He didn't know what was in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, either. Therefore, when Lin Feng told him about his experience, he was astonished.

"Yes, in the castle, there's a demon king with a demon blade, asleep. But he could still communicate with me, and he asked me to wake him up, he said he'd transmit his strength to me," Lin Feng said to the Diviner. In this world, nobody else knew as many of Lin Feng's secrets as the Diviner, so Lin Feng didn't need to hide anything from him.

"But I didn't trust him, so I chose to leave, and he let me go peacefully," finished Lin Feng.

"What you mean is that the ancient demon king is sleeping and can still control the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell? He let you leave alive and didn't do anything to you?"

"Indeed. Otherwise, I would be dead."

"It's such an incredible mystery. People are all talking about Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya who have come out alive, and they don't even know that those two were able to come out alive thanks to you. They don't even know about that demon king you're telling me about," said the Diviner, shaking his head. "If I have the opportunity, I will talk to the leader of the Shrine and see if he knows something. The High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine has been imprisoned in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell for such a long time. How terrifying..."

"All the demons inside are terrifyingly strong. Also, you've

probably heard of that demon a thousand years ago?” said Lin Feng. He was wondering who the demon emperor was. The demon king said that Lin Feng was the Demon Emperor...

“The Demon Emperor of a thousand years ago?!” The Diviner was surprised, “You must be talking about Saint Emperor Xi the Demon, he didn’t leave many traces in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Not many people know about him, but those who do know how terrifying he was. The Fortune Shrine knows more about him than the other Shrines because a thousand years ago, the Fortune Shrine’s Destiny Wheel rotated because of him! This time around, it was because of you!”

“Saint Emperor Xi the Demon!” Lin Feng frowned. A thousand years ago, the Destiny Wheel of the Fortune Shrine rotated, and now it had spun because of Lin Feng. Was it reincarnation? Was the demon king right? Was Lin Feng the Demon Emperor?

“What kind of person was Saint Emperor Xi the Demon?” asked Lin Feng.

“Mysterious, extremely strong, and he became strong very quickly. He also disappeared mysteriously. The Shrines were looking for him, but he had completely disappeared. Some people say he’s probably traveling the world, some people say he must have been killed by the Shrines,” said the Diviner slowly.

“I think they’re all wrong. Maybe the Demon Emperor is in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell,” said Lin Feng.

The Diviner frowned, “Saint Emperor Xi the Demon in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell?”

“Indeed, I saw some scriptures in there which were written by him personally. He seems to have many connections to the demon king.”

The Diviner frowned, “Are you sure about the scriptures?”

“I’m sure. I’ve seen them before. Nobody can have the exact same

writing in this world,” said Lin Feng. He was certain.

“So, I really need to talk to the leader of the Shrine,” said the Diviner sharply. Saint Emperor Xi the Demon had an extraordinary destiny, he was mysterious and terrifying. If he was in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, it wasn’t surprising that there was no news about him in the outside world.

“Lin Feng, you need to get prepared, your fighting abilities have reached the top of the Sheng Di Layer, right?” said the Diviner to Lin Feng.

“Yes,” said Lin Feng nodding.

“Not bad, you need to try and become a Saint now,” said the Diviner. Even though Lin Feng had no cultivation level, he could also try to become a Saint, or at least, have a similar level.

Lin Feng was surprised at this, and stared at the Diviner.

“In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there’s a sealed area called the Canonization Area, that place opens once every thousand years. In there, some people have the opportunity to be canonized, it happens only every thousand years. Every thousand years, people at the top of the Sheng Di Layer go there and try their luck. The Canonization Area doesn’t disappoint people. At least three people must become Saints, or even more. It depends on their luck and abilities.”

“Now, it will soon open and many people from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds will go there to try their luck,” the Diviner smiled.

Lin Feng was amazed. The Canonization Area sounded like an incredible place!

“Who build such an awesome place as the Canonization Area?” said Lin Feng.

“People in the old days. I’ve heard that there are mysteries inside, there are some details only known to insiders. It’s one of the most

mysterious places of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” replied the Diviner. Lin Feng nodded. Few people knew what there was inside!

“Unfortunately, this time, when you went to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, many Saint Emperors died. They could have become Saints. Of course, the opening of the Canonization Area will draw people’s attention even more than your adventure in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. People refused to go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, including some old terrifying cultivators, but the Canonization Area draws people’s attention,” the Diviner smiled.

Lin Feng understood. Some Saint Emperors practiced cultivation for many years, but didn’t manage to transcend worldliness and attain holiness. They couldn’t miss this opportunity. They were even ready to risk their lives.

“At that time, will I participate as Daimon from the World Clan, or as Lin Feng?” Lin Feng grinned.

The Diviner smiled back. “As you wish, as long as you separate those two people carefully. Don’t let anyone know that Lin Feng is Daimon.”

“I understand,” said Lin Feng nodding.

“The disciples of the Fortune Shrine rarely go out, but this time, some of them will go and try to become Saints, don’t fight against them there,” the Diviner directed. Lin Feng nodded.

All the Shrines were gathering their Saint Emperors and asking them to get prepared for the Canonization Area’s event. It was extremely rare. It was also an opportunity to see the strongest cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Even the Supreme Animal World would participate.

“How are things going for the Void Phoenix Clan?” asked Lin Feng.



“Nothing has happened. Qing Feng was imprisoned, but Shi Jue Lao Xian went there, so they can’t do much to her. However, since Qiong Hai Ya came out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, the Void Phoenix Clan is even more enthusiastic and really hopes they’ll be able to make a marriage alliance with the Fire Shrine.”

“Alright,” Lin Feng nodded. He had to get more information.

“There are many hidden Saint Emperors in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They’re waiting for the event. I wonder who will become a Saint,” the Diviner mused.

Lin Feng could feel that the Canonization Area was going to be an extraordinary event. Saints were rare, but Saint Emperors were also strong in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Mu Shan Zi had invited some of them to come to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, but he didn’t know all the Saint Emperors of the region.

Becoming a Saint wasn’t easy, there were some old people who had been stuck at the Sheng Di Layer for a long time, and nobody needed to be invited to go to the Canonization Area. Even the Supreme Animal World could come!

Lin Feng’s real body was calmly practicing cultivation in the World Clan. Few people knew that he had come out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell alive and gone back to the World Clan. He also wanted to try and become a Saint at the Canonization Area!!!

# Chapter 2341: Saint Luck

---

The Canonization Area was in the central part of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Usually, it was a desert, because there was no Qi left there, and a poor place to practice cultivation. It was difficult to imagine that in this place was the Canonization Area.

A great many strong cultivators appeared there.

Those strong cultivators looked composed, but on the inside, they weren't, especially those who had lived for a very long time.

For people who didn't need a very long time to reach the top of the Sheng Di Layer, or some geniuses from Shrines, becoming a Saint wasn't as difficult as for other people. However, for old people, it was quite difficult. They needed some help, luck, and opportunities!

The Canonization Area was a great opportunity!

In the Northwest, an old man who was wearing a grey robe frowned angrily. "Another thousand years have passed! Last time, I brushed past the opportunity to become a Saint; this time, I have to succeed!"

In the West, another white-haired old man seemed calm, but on the inside, he thought, Another thousand years have passed... how could I miss this opportunity again? The incredible Qi which fills the air every thousand years shall be mine this time!

Apart from them, many other old men arrived and thought the same. They had missed the opportunity to become Saints a thousand years before, so they had cultivated really hard for another thousand years and still hadn't managed to become Saints. They had to seize the opportunity now!

When Lin Feng arrived, he looked around in astonishment.

"So many strong cultivators. Are all the Saint Emperors of the

Continent of the Nine Clouds going to come?” He was riding on Aomo’s back. Indeed, for Saint Emperors, the opportunity to become a Saint was incredible, one more step and they’d transcend worldliness and attain holiness!

“Father, have you asked about the details?” asked Aomo. He was curious.

“I’ve heard that there was Saint Luck, I don’t really know what it is though,” said Lin Feng. It was difficult to imagine that such a desolate place could give birth to an essence called Saint Luck and could help cultivators become Saints. There was no spiritual Qi there.

“Do things turn into their opposite when they reach the extreme?” whispered Lin Feng.

“Daimon!” called out a voice at that moment. Lin Feng turned around and saw Chi Lian Shan. Chi Lian Shan smiled and said, “Daimon, you also came to try and become a Saint?”

“Indeed,” said Lin Feng. Chi Lian Shan arrived next to him and said, “So many old people are here. They’ve gone through a lot in life.”

“You’re so strong, and yet you feel under pressure?” asked Lin Feng.

“Of course,” Chi Lian Shan nodded. “The more Saint Luck you absorb, the more chances you have to become a Saint. Every thousand years, when someone obtains Saint Luck, the others want to kill them to steal it from them.”

“I see. The Saint Emperors go insane in such circumstances,” said Lin Feng. Becoming a Saint was a Saint Emperor’s most important goal!

“The cultivators of the Shrines are extremely strong. They have Saint’s Weapons. When Saint Luck appears, the situation becomes very dangerous. Look over there, you know who that old man in

black clothes is?” asked Chi Lian Shan to Lin Feng.

“I don’t,” admitted Lin Feng. The old man turned around, he looked dangerous.

“That’s Saint Emperor Freeze, he controls Freezing Dao and his Dao has reached the maximum level. Not only can he freeze your body, but he can also freeze your thoughts and your soul. He can kill you a hundred times in the twinkling of an eye. Apart from Freezing Dao, he also understands a terrifying type of strength: empty space strength. You see?”

Chi Lian Shan looked nervous. Lin Feng looked at the old man in dark clothes and nodded. “He’s a dangerous cultivator indeed. He can use empty space strength and freeze you in the blink of an eye.”

“Indeed, the twinkling of an eye is enough. A thousand years ago, he was already at the very top of the Sheng Di Layer. He couldn’t become a Saint, and was unlucky. Now, another thousand years have passed, he can only be stronger,” said Chi Lian Shan. Lin Feng nodded.

“I can tell you one thing, the old people here are all terrifyingly strong. Even though there aren’t many of them, they’re all terrifying. They have a thousand years of experience. With all the members of the Shrines, it’s going to be a tough competition.

“Over there, the members of the Fire Shrine have come. Qiong Jiu Tian is quite famous these days,” said Chi Lian Shan. Lin Feng turned around and looked at Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya. They were with a group of strong cultivators from the Fire Shrine. Even Huo Shang was there. Even though he was weaker than many people who were present, he was still quite strong. He also wanted to try his luck. Qiong Jiu Tian was the dangerous one, though...

“Strong cultivators from other Shrines keep arriving. I’m going back to the members of the Earth Shrine. Daimon, be careful,” said Chi Lian Shan. All the members of the Shrines would join hands to

grab as much as Saint Luck as they could.

“I understand,” Lin Feng waved. That area seemed boundless. There were people everywhere.

“Daimon!” said someone coldly at that moment. It was Qiong Hai Ya. He said coldly, “You came out alive! You’re quite lucky.”

Lin Feng looked at Qiong Hai Ya, and replied calmly, “You sound like you came out relying on strength.”

Qiong Hai Ya was surprised, and smiled, “Of course, anyone who comes out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell alive is lucky. But now we’re going to rely on strength to steal Saint Luck. Be very careful though; you’re probably not going to get any, but you could also die here.”

“Thank you very much for your advice,” Lin Feng replied coolly.

At that moment, an invisible and intangible strength filled the air. This area contained absolutely no strength for a thousand years and then, once every thousand years, it was filled with energies again.

There’s an exit there, thought Lin Feng. The Canonization Area was sealed after that, people couldn’t come in anymore, they could only leave. After obtaining Saint Luck, cultivators could escape through the exit. However, the less luck energy a cultivator managed to obtain, the less chance he had to become a Saint using that method. Strong cultivators wanted to get as much luck energy as they could.

“Father, look over there. The map of the Canonization Area.” Aomo raised his head and saw a pattern; it was a map of the Canonization Area.

“Indeed, it’s the map of the Canonization Area. It appears in the sky. That’s amazing, but it’s also going to make things much more complicated. The Canonization Area actually has eight exits, so people who obtain Saint Luck can escape through those eight

exits,” said Lin Feng. Many people were staring at the map in the sky.

Those who had already been there a thousand years before immediately started moving towards the center of the Canonization Area. They knew that their chances of getting Saint Luck were the highest there.

“Father, I still don’t understand what Saint Luck is. What does it look like?” asked Aomo.

“Get ready and we’ll find out soon,” said Lin Feng, staring at the map. There were several dazzling dots on the map, as if a mysterious strength were there.

A dragon chanted, and a dazzling golden dragon appeared on the map. Aomo’s eyes twinkled. “That dragon means Saint Luck?!”

“I think so! Let’s go!” shouted Lin Feng. Aomo rose up in the air at full speed, many other people rose up in the air too.

# Chapter 2342: Fighting Over the Saint Luck

---

Dazzling golden lights appeared where the Saint Luck was, and people could find the coordinates on the map. When Lin Feng and all the other cultivators saw the golden dragon on the map, they all started flying in that direction.

“Father, I have the impression that that golden dragon is alive and terrifying. Is it really Saint Luck?” asked Aomo uneasily.

“It’s Saint Luck, indeed,” said Lin Feng. He was surprised too. The golden dragon glittered and was extremely fast.

A gigantic wall appeared in the air, and the dragon landed on the wall before passing through it.

The golden dragon roared, trying to escape, but the crowd sensed a terrifying Freezing intent, it surrounded the dragon and he started freezing. The other strong cultivators had the impression their souls were going to freeze.

“Saint Emperor Freeze.” Lin Feng looked at the old man in dark clothes at the very front. Lin Feng was impressed; Saint Emperor Freeze was terrifyingly strong.

“Father, should we attack?” asked Aomo. He was eager to try.

“No rush. It’s going to be a fierce competition. We should be patient, otherwise, everybody will be after us,” said Lin Feng. He didn’t participate in the battle. Many people thought the same as him, and didn’t attack. Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya were staying on the side, too, their eyes glittering. A great deal of Saint Luck was going to appear in the Canonization Area, and nobody wanted to be chased by everyone else.

But some people were very self-confident, such as Saint Emperor Freeze. He appeared in front of the dragon and stretched out his hand; the dragon roared angrily and became even more dazzling and then turned into lights. Saint Emperor Freeze took him. For

the time being, that Saint Luck was his.

Many strong cultivators threw themselves at him, but Saint Emperor Freeze shot into the distance and said coldly, “Freeze!”

The atmosphere around him froze. Nobody dared get too close to him, otherwise their souls could freeze, and they could die.

Lights flashed, and Saint Emperor Freeze disappeared. He had an extremely powerful teleportation technique.

“Chase him!” said a few strong cultivators coldly. Nobody wanted to let him escape with Saint Luck!

“How strong.” Lin Feng was astonished. Saint Emperor Freeze’s freezing Dao had reached the maximum level, and with his teleportation technique, he could get so much done in such a short time. Saint Emperor Freeze was probably one of the strongest Saint Emperors present here!

A dragon roared, dazzling lights appeared again, and formed an ice dragon. The crowd was stunned; another gigantic dragon, a different one... was it Saint Luck too?

“Go!” Strong cultivators started moving towards the dragon, but at that moment, they heard a dragon roar extremely loudly, behind the golden dragon and the ice dragon, a red dragon appeared, and then a fire dragon, and then an earth dragon, a dark dragon, a life dragon! Seven dragons had appeared, they were all Saint Luck!

The crowd shot off in all directions towards all the dragons. Those seven dragons were Saint Luck? Or were they actually one cosmic body that represented Saint Luck?

“Father, I want the dark dragon, let’s go see,” said Aomo, and flew towards the gigantic dark dragon. He passed in front of many strong cultivators, his speed was astonishing. He turned into a beam of light and crossed the Canonization Area in the blink of an eye.



“I see it, many people are fighting over it,” said Aomo. Lin Feng released dazzling empty space lights. People used strength to fight, they didn’t use weapons. If anyone dared used Saint’s Weapons, then everybody else would, and it would become a disaster.

Aomo roared out and charged in. The dark dragon was also very fast, but many people surrounded him. It glanced at them, very lifelike.

“Father, that guy is a Great Oriental Greenfinch Roc from the Roc Clan. He’s incredibly strong,” said Aomo to Lin Feng. The one who was the closest to the dark dragon had a gold holy helmet and sharp feathers.

“Zha Mao Niao also wants to steal the dark dragon’s Saint Luck, damn! He’s so fast!” swore Aomo. The great roc’s wings were gigantic and blotted out the sky, he was very impressive.

Aomo jumped into the crowd, he didn’t want to let the dark dragon’s Saint Luck go, but at that moment, some terrifying sharp claws moved towards it. The atmosphere was lacerated around everyone. The Great Oriental Greenfinch Roc’s wings turned into sharp swords and swept everything away in his path.

“How fast!” Lin Feng was astonished. He sensed a strong wind brush against his face. He couldn’t even follow the great roc with his eye!

“The Great Oriental Greenfinch Roc’s speed is astonishing, but expected too.” The other strong cultivators pulled long faces as the Great Oriental Greenfinch Roc ran away with the Saint Luck. They had encircled him, but he had managed to get through and now chasing him would be difficult.

“There’s still Saint Luck left!” The crowd looked at the sky and realized that there was no Saint Luck left on the map. Many strong cultivators wanted to get the Saint Luck from those who had taken it already.

“Someone has escaped already. He couldn’t handle the pressure so he escaped,” They could see that on the map, someone had escaped with Saint Luck.

“Father, I can sense that Saint Luck is incredible, but stealing some will be extremely difficult,” said Aomo. Lin Feng nodded. “Saint Luck just increases the chances of becoming a Saint, it’s not because you have Saint Luck that you will definitely become a Saint. If you have Saint Luck but can’t become a saint, it’s useless.”

“However, if you have the Saint Luck of the seven dragons, then the chances of becoming a Saint are extremely high,” said Aomo, taking Lin Feng to the center of the Canonization Area.

“The Saint Luck is weakening,” said Lin Feng when he saw the lights disperse slowly. The strong cultivators were slowly consuming the Saint Luck.

“Daimon,” said someone at that moment. It was Ye Zhi Yun.

“You’re here too,” Lin Feng smiled.

“Yes, I wanted to try my luck too,” smiled Ye Zhi Yun. “So, do you think you’ll manage to get some Saint Luck?”

“Not necessarily. There are too many strong cultivators,” replied Lin Feng easily.

“Indeed. That one is extremely strong. I saw him fight, he’s scary,” said Ye Zhi Yun pointing at someone. Lin Feng saw a cultivator in black clothes, his Qi strong.

“There are always talented individuals in hiding,” agreed Lin Feng. At that moment, the person turned around. His eyes were bloodshot and proud. He looked like a demon from the pit of hell.

“It’s him!” Lin Feng was astonished, he recognized the man!

“How come he looks so evil now?!” Lin Feng was startled. According to legends, after King Chu, another genius had emerged in the Chu Clan, but he had gone insane. Was Chu Chun Qiu going

to become insane too now?! Because that cultivator was Chu Chun Qiu!

There's something wrong. That's the Qi of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell! He came out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, so could it be that he absorbed some evil creatures there?, thought Lin Feng. Everything was possible when it came to Chu Chun Qiu, he was insane.

In the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, there had been many terrifying creatures, demons, and corpses. It was filled with death.

Chu Chun Qiu smiled at Lin Feng coldly. Lin Feng frowned. Did Chu Chun Qiu recognize him?

"Father, Saint Luck, three golden birds," shouted Aomo suddenly. Not far from them, three birds moved in different directions.

"A bird disappeared." Lin Feng was stupefied. A bird suddenly disappeared as quickly as it showed up.

"There's something wrong. He went into some empty space strength. He's there." Lin Feng saw the bird reappear. The figure of the bird on the other side kept flickering.

The last bird kept whistling, fissures appearing in the atmosphere around. It was moving very quickly.

That's... a terrifying empty space energy. Those birds all control empty space energy. With those three sources of Saint Luck, any strong cultivator could become a Saint!, thought Lin Feng. Many cultivators who controlled empty space strength understood that and started chasing quickly!

# Chapter 2344: Killing!

---

Chi Lian Shan and Qiong Jiu Tian were fighting. Qiong Jiu Tian's fire was terrifying, but Chi Lian Shan was strong too, and kept attacking him and forcing him backwards!

“Qiong Jiu Tian, we'll have a big battle today!” shouted Chi Lian Shan cheerfully, oppressing Qiong Jiu Tian. Both of them were very strong, Saint Emperors of the very top of the Sheng Di Layer.

The fat guy laughed at the two other cultivators of the Fire Shrine. He was very dangerous, and they knew it.

Lin Feng and Qiong Hai Ya were fighting. Energies surged towards Lin Feng. Qiong Hai Ya smiled coldly and said, “Last time, you escaped! Today, I won't make the same mistake and let you run away!”

“Dream on!” replied Lin Feng smiling coldly. He was wondering what would happen if he killed a member of the Fire Shrine?

Would the Fire Shrine dare go and start a war against the World Clan, even though they were a Shrine?

The Fire Shrine kept oppressing Qing Feng. Qiong Hai Ya wanted a marriage alliance with the Void Phoenix Clan using Qing Feng. If Qiong Hai Ya died, that marriage alliance would be nullified. Lin Feng smiled coldly, his eyes filled with murder.

A terrifying fireball appeared and surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng felt he was in an ocean of flames. He frowned at Qiong Hai Ya. Qiong Hai Ya wanted to kill him, too...

“Since it's that way, I won't be polite!” swore Lin Feng. His eyes suddenly became pitch-black and a Cage of Darkness appeared around Qiong Hai Ya. Qiong Hai Ya was shocked. He was now in a dark illusion, no life in there, just death and cold!

The earth and sky roared around him. God strength invaded that world, and it became a realm of death.

Qiong Hai Ya felt ice-cold, he was shuddering. He released even more flames, and behind him, a fearsome spiritual fire appeared.

Lights flared, Qiong Hai Ya threw himself at Lin Feng. Nine spiritual fireballs appeared and shot in all directions. However, a gigantic pitch-black fist appeared and moved towards his head, forcing him to retreat rapidly.

“You can’t leave my death world,” said a voice. Qiong Hai Ya saw Lin Feng appear in front of him. At that moment, Lin Feng looked like a death god, an ancient demon, aggressive and frightening. Qiong Hai Ya sensed that Lin Feng’s Qi had changed and was astonished, was this world a skill of the World Clan?

Lights flashed and a fire hand appeared, fire Qi filled the air.

Qiong Hai Ya moved too, the gigantic fire hand shooting towards Lin Feng. It contained a little bit of Saint’s strength. Lin Feng was surrounded by that gigantic hand, like a cage.

Qiong Hai Ya was using a Saint’s Weapon!

Lin Feng released demon strength, which swept through the air. Lin Feng took out the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and a terrifying demon strength rose up and washed everything away. His Great Demon Halberd of Desolation streaked across the sky and destroyed the gigantic fire hand as Lin Feng continued moving forwards.

“Feeble!” said Lin Feng to Qiong Hai Ya emotionlessly. Qiong Hai Ya was staring at the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and his heart started pounding. How was that possible? It was the Saint’s Weapon they had seen in the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell; how had Lin Feng obtained it?!

“Initially, I wanted to have a fair battle with you, but you don’t deserve fair treatment,” said Lin Feng icily. He disappeared, empty strength lights flashed, and he reappeared in front of Qiong Hai Ya. His Great Demon Halberd of Desolation pressed forward with

an indomitable will and broke everything in the way.

“No!” Qiong Hai Ya sensed the terrifying power of the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, he couldn’t compete with it. He raised his hands in front of him, and something shattered loudly. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation had destroyed his hands.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng coldly. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation pressed towards Qiong Hai Ya’s throat.

“Destroy!” snarled Lin Feng as Qiong Hai Ya’s body was being corroded by the demon strength and turned into demon Qi. He wasn’t a Saint, his body could easily be destroyed using a Saint’s Weapon!

—

Lin Feng put the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation away and the cage disappeared. He reappeared outside and shouted, “Chi Lian Shan, fatty, here!”

Chi Lian Shan and the fat guy looked at Lin Feng. When they saw that Qiong Hai Ya wasn’t there anymore, they were astonished; had Lin Feng really killed Qiong Hai Ya?

Qiong Jiu Tian and the other members of the Fire Shrine were stunned. Qiong Jiu Tian had been killed?!

However, Lin Feng didn’t care, he looked at Chi Lian Shan and the fat guy, and together they left at full speed.

“Daimon, you’re too brave!” chortled the fat guy to Lin Feng. Even though it was the Canonization Area and dying was a risk all the cultivators agreed to take, there were still some people whom other people didn’t want to kill, such as those members of the Fire Shrine whose family name was Qiong.

But Daimon was insane, he had killed Qiong Hai Ya!

Qiong Jiu Tian and the others didn’t chase after Lin Feng. It was useless. They hadn’t thought that Qiong Hai Ya would be killed.

Daimon had dared to kill him!

“It doesn’t really matter, does it? Chi Lian Shan, fatty, since we found each other here as well, let’s join hands, alright? I want the two other birds; after that, if some birds who have Saint Luck you need appear, I’ll help you, too. What do you think?” said Lin Feng indifferently, as if nothing important had happened.

He didn’t care about Qiong Hai Ya, Qiong Hai Ya had died because the members of the Fire Shrine had chased him. They probably understood that.

“Damn, you’re brutal! I’ll follow you,” laughed Chi Lian Shan. The fat guy smiled and said, “Alright, let’s join hands. Some people are fighting against one bird and the other one is still flying away. Where do we go?”

“Let’s go to the one who’s fighting already,” said Lin Feng, accelerating. They all turned into beams of light, quickly arriving on the battlefield. Blood kept flying. A strong cultivator was killed by a group of people, and the Saint Luck reappeared. When a cultivator who had stolen Saint Luck was killed, as long as he hadn’t assimilated and modified it, the Saint Luck reappeared.

For someone like Aomo, assimilating Saint Luck was extremely difficult, a long process. He needed to study it while assimilating it, or it was useless. Everybody understood that. Therefore, when Lin Feng and the others arrived, everybody looked at them coldly. There was Saint Luck in Aomo’s body, visibly glittering.

“It’s incandescent, there’s even a Saint’s Weapon here!” the fat guy sensed a terrifying Qi.

“Leave this one to us, please. If Saint Luck reappears again, we won’t try and take it,” said a strong cultivator from the Empty Space Shrine. They really wanted this bird’s Saint Luck, it contained empty space strength!

“You want us to leave it to you, but what if others don’t leave it

to you? In the end, you might not be able to keep it, and then don't tell me you won't try to get the others," said the other strong cultivators around coldly.

"As you said, if nobody steals it from us, we won't take the others, but if we don't get it, we'll continue trying to get Saint Luck. So what will you do?" retorted the Shrine cultivators, releasing empty space strength.

"I can't possibly give up," said a strong cultivator coldly. He was also wearing an empty space robe. A light curtain appeared around him.

"Fatty, stop them, but be careful, don't let your attack affect me," said Lin Feng telepathically. The fat guy nodded and slowly drew closer to the group. An ancient mirror which looked like a shield appeared in his hand, he threw it out and shouted furiously. The soundwave caused by his voice bounced off the mirror and instantly, everybody was stunned, their souls trembling.

At that moment, a light covered the bird, a gigantic set of jaws appeared and devoured the bird.

"Oh no!" The crowd saw a dazzling sword shoot towards Lin Feng, and he disappeared in empty space strength and reappeared in the distance. Someone released ancient imprints to surround him, but Lin Feng's Great Demon Halberd of Desolation streaked across the sky and the ancient imprints shattered. The strong cultivator who had released them was astonished, he couldn't believe it his eyes!



# Chapter 2345: Guarding the Gateway

---

“Father, it’s awesome!” exclaimed Aomo after absorbing the bird. The fat guy didn’t disappoint Lin Feng, and his Saint’s Weapon was terrifyingly powerful, it had stunned everyone for a few seconds. After that, Lin Feng and Aomo flew away.

“How do you feel?” asked Lin Feng to Aomo.

“It contains an incredible empty space strength, it’s in my brain now. If I were a cultivator of the very top of the Sheng Di Layer, I would really become a Saint now. Unfortunately, I can only study it slowly,” admitted Aomo. He was very happy. “I need to study it calmly. You deal with the rest, be careful.”

“Alright, go and study. Leave the rest to me. If I get the last bird’s Saint Luck, I’ll call you,” said Lin Feng. The air was thrumming as a group of strong cultivators was chasing him. They were extremely fast. Lin Feng didn’t turn around, he just glanced at the map in the sky now and then. He moved towards the last bird, strong cultivators had finally managed to catch up with it and someone had already captured it.

Aomo needs the three birds, the Saint Luck will be complete only if he gets the three of them, thought Lin Feng moving as fast as lightning. He glanced at the battle. People had already taken Saint’s Weapons out, and were dying one after another. Everybody was vigilant, and the one who had already captured the Saint Luck was covered with blood. He could die anytime, the only reason why he hadn’t died yet was that people were trying to think of a strategy for themselves. If they stole it now, then everybody else would encircle them.

At that moment, everything seemed to stop, and a figure appeared in front of the one who had taken the Saint Luck. A terrifying spear thrust towards his head and an illusionary hand closed on him. The hand grabbed him, and the figure left with the

cultivator.

“We’re too slow!” The crowd’s faces froze. They were too slow! They felt extremely slow. After that person disappeared, a terrifying wave washed through them, many people withdrew.

“What a powerful Saint’s Weapon. It contains Saint’s deceleration strength. It was like time had stopped!” Lin Feng didn’t stop. Some people were chasing him. Aomo had obtained two birds already, how could he stop?

“Someone has Saint Luck there!” shouted someone. Lin Feng flew after him. Lin Feng realized that that person wasn’t extremely fast but he had two incredible Saint’s Weapons. One of them was a disc which contained deceleration Saint’s energy and slowed his enemies down. The other one was a terrifyingly sharp spear. He had used that spear to kill many people a moment ago. With those two weapons, he was truly redoubtable.

“There!” Lin Feng glanced at his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation; it was a high-level Saint’s Weapon. He could probably kill the man easily with it.

Lin Feng accelerated, he couldn’t fly any faster. People around heard sonic booms. He slowly got rid of the people behind him. Only people who controlled speed-related energies continued chasing the cultivator.

The one who had obtained the Saint Luck turned his head and looked back at Lin Feng, smiling coldly. Lin Feng had Saint Luck, a terrifying Saint’s Weapon, and dared chase him, he really wanted to die!

The cultivator activated his disc again, turning suddenly and the disc diffused lights which filled the air. The deceleration lights were so powerful that space and time became chaotic.

Lin Feng sensed an invisible and intangible strength surround his body. His muscles stiffened up as he slowed down against his will.

The spear moved towards his head, undeterred. That cultivator wanted to kill Lin Feng as quickly as possible!

Lin Feng was soaked with cold sweat. This man was terrifying!

Lin Feng released an awesome strength. He had god strength, how could he sit and wait for death?

“Go in!” said Lin Feng coldly. The Cage of Darkness appeared, but the spear destroyed the Cage of Darkness and continued shooting towards Lin Feng.

“Great Empty Space Technique!” Lin Feng jumped into empty space and released strength, then his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation streaked across the sky.

The spear pierced through the empty space strength and appeared in front of Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng’s Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was moving towards his enemy’s throat and beheaded him!

“How dangerous.” Lin Feng left the empty space and the terrifying spear moved behind him already. If he hadn’t used the Great Empty Space Technique, he would have died!

Another terrifying Qi filled the air. Lin Feng continued flying forwards at full speed. Then, he called Aomo again for him to eat the man. “Father, I have the three birds’ Saint Luck, but now the situation is difficult for you, they’re all chasing you.”

“Yes, I have to escape,” said Lin Feng. If a group of people with Saint’s Weapons surrounded him, he would definitely die. Otherwise, he had just obtained two terrifying Saint’s Weapons!

But this time, Lin Feng had obtained three birds’ Saint Luck and the strong cultivators behind wouldn’t leave the matter at that. They were all chasing him as quickly as they could!

Lin Feng grunted coldly. He was holding his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation firmly and his Qi was ominous.

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was a high-level Saint's Weapon, but Lin Feng didn't really understand its particular strength. Maybe he was still too weak. He couldn't use it to overrun all fortifications. But even this way, it was sufficiently terrifying!

"They want to die!" Lin Feng landed at the top of a mountain and suddenly stopped. The two fastest cultivators behind him controlled empty space strength and continued flying towards him.

"Imprison!" said Lin Feng coldly. The two cultivators suddenly saw darkness fill the air around them. They used their Saint's Weapons to destroy the cage, but the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was sweeping towards them. His face turned deathly pale. He released as much empty space strength as he could.

Boom! The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation contained a terrifying Saint's power. The demon Qi instantly corroded that cultivator's body, and he vanished. The other one was so scared that he fled as fast as he could. Lin Feng raised his Saint's Weapon and moved back. He went back to the top of the mountain, looking apathetic.

The strong cultivators who were chasing him all stopped. Lin Feng had the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, he looked like a demon king. He said to the crowd coldly, "I have the three birds, and if anyone attacks me, I can guarantee that I will kill them. We came out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, rogues of all kinds running wildly. So be careful."

"You also came out of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell?"

"His halberd contains a terrifying demon Saint's strength, could it be that it's from the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell?"

Lin Feng sensed terrifying golden lights appeared around him. Someone charged him, trying to crush him.

Lin Feng started bleeding, his skin was cracking. Against such a terrifying attack, only someone who had a Saint's body could resist.

"You want to die!" said Lin Feng coldly. He suddenly disappeared, condensed empty space and wind cosmic energies in the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and it hacked towards his attacker and instantly killed him.

The people behind didn't get involved. Those who wanted to attack realized it was too late. Lin Feng was already back at the top of the mountain, standing there like a demon king.

"With that halberd, he can kill us in one strike." They were astonished, he didn't lie to them. If anyone dared attack, he'd kill them instantly!

"Very quickly, some more Saint Luck is going to appear. Are you going to stay here and waste your time?" asked Lin Feng detachedly. The crowd's eyes glittered. Lin Feng was too fast, and his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was terrifying!

# Chapter 2346: Leaving with the Saint Luck

---

Lin Feng was standing there, holding his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. Even though his enemies were cautious, they didn't give up. Some of them charged him. Lin Feng was angry. These people were dangerous. If they had a single opportunity, they'd kill him!

“Eh?” At that moment, Lin Feng sensed danger and shot up in the air, but sharp blades still crashed onto his body and blood gushed out extremely painfully!

“Empty Space Saint's Weapon!” Lin Feng grimaced. He had been attacked by a Saint's Weapon which contained empty space strength, but was invisible and intangible. He raised his head and saw a strong cultivator who was holding an extremely sharp crankset, spinning it at high speed.

The crankset disappeared, Lin Feng sensed a sharp energy surround him again. His Great Demon Halberd of Desolation turned into a gigantic demon dragon and lunged towards the man. He retreated quickly.

There was an explosion, Lin Feng groaned with pain, his muscles twitching, he had the impression his brain was going to explode.

A peerless and sharp Qi shot towards Lin Feng. One person had attacked, so the others chipped in as well.

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng. He didn't turn around to look at the man behind him, but knew his Qi was terrifying. His dripping Great Demon Halberd of Desolation came back, there was a rumble behind him, and Lin Feng's mind trembled, his iron will keeping him conscious.

“Die!” The attacks blotted out the sky and covered the earth. They really wanted to kill him!

Deadly empty space strength surrounded him. He was

surrounded by millions of threads of empty space cosmic energies.

Lin Feng suddenly disappeared and reappeared in the crowd, instantly removing someone's head.

“Daimon!” shouted someone. The fat guy appeared behind the crowd. He helped him and bombarded some people in the crowd, they hadn't expected that someone would help Lin Feng here.

Lin Feng's Great Demon Halberd of Desolation swept away cultivators all around him. Heads exploded one after another. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was a devastating weapon, they couldn't withstand a single attack.

“Go!” Chi Lian Shan also arrived and descended from the sky. They continued destroying people and fighting their way forwards. Thunder rocked and boomed, shaking the earth and sky. When their enemies recovered enough to look at Lin Feng and the others, they were already far away.

—

Lin Feng and the others went to a place with fewer people. If the fat guy and Chi Lian Shan hadn't helped Lin Feng, it would have been dangerous for him. Even with the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, he wouldn't have been able to deal with so many people who had Saint's Weapons as well.

“Thank you!” Lin Feng smiled.

“Why would you thank us? You saved us last time,” replied Chi Lian Shan happily. “You're really brave. Three birds and you gave them all to the dragon. His cultivation level is not high enough, even with the three birds, he won't become a Saint, unfortunately.”

“As long as he understands them, then when the right time comes, he'll become a Saint. When conditions are ripe, success is naturally achieved. There's nothing unfortunate,” said Lin Feng indifferently. The two others just nodded.

“He should assimilate the Saint Luck quickly, otherwise people are going to chase us unceasingly,”

“I’ll take him to the exit. When he leaves, nobody will be able to steal his Saint Luck anymore,” said Lin Feng. Chi Lian Shan and the fat guy followed Lin Feng to an exit. That was a good solution.

—

After a short time, Lin Feng and the others arrived at the exit, there were no strong cultivators guarding it. When the other people saw that Lin Feng and those two had joined hands, they didn’t dare attack them anymore.

“Little boy, you leave first. I’ll get to you when I leave.”

“Father, be careful!” said Aomo, roaring as he became gigantic again and left. Lin Feng didn’t leave, he stayed at the gate waiting for Aomo to get far enough away.

“Finally, things calmed down again. I wonder when Saint Luck is going to appear again,” whispered the fat guy, frowning.

Lin Feng looked at the sky and said, “I wonder what this place is. How come Saint Luck appears here every thousand years?”

“Who knows? Maybe a terrifying cultivator created this place, but we can’t see those people,” Chi Lian Shan mused.

At that moment, dazzling lights appeared on the map in the sky. The three friends were astonished, “What an incredible Qi, let’s go! There could be Saint Luck!”

“Indeed.” The three friends’ figures flickered. After a short time, they arrived, along with ever more strong cultivators. A momentous Qi was rising there.

Is it the way Saint Luck is formed? What exactly is Saint Luck?, wondered Lin Feng. From what Aomo had told him, Saint Luck allowed him to understand things, it was a kind of Celestial Dao. Lin Feng understood that such understanding was related to the



process people went through to become Saints. After understanding one's own Dao perfectly, a cultivator could fuse it together with the Celestial Dao, the Dao of the earth and sky. The cultivator's body became a part of the land, it became sacred.

Everything seemed to be about fusing together with the earth and sky. Lin Feng was on a strange path, the earth and sky had abandoned him. He hadn't been able to break through to the Huang Qi layer, then becoming a Great Emperor had been completely impossible; he had his own cultivation!

For people to become Saints, they had to understand Celestial Dao, the earth and sky, the world; therefore, to Saints, people who hadn't reached that cultivation level were like tiny little insects. Even Saint Emperors at the very top of the Sheng Di Layer couldn't compete with Saints. Saints had transcended worldliness and attained holiness.

A dazzling fire unicorn appeared.

"Fire-type Saint Luck!" Many people charged ahead, but many other people were waiting.

The crowd saw a terrifying Qi surging out. Many different figures which contained Saint Luck appeared, and they were all different, unlike a moment before.

"Seven Saint Luck entities!" The crowd was dumbstruck.

"And that gigantic ancient imprint must be an earth-type Saint Luck," said Chi Lian Shan, staring at an ancient imprint flying in the sky. He flashed towards it. Lin Feng followed, he had promised he'd help them.

"Everybody, stop!" said someone coldly at that moment. The crowd was startled and saw a group of people.

Lin Feng and the others stopped and looked at them.

"They're all Shrine members! They all joined hands!" Many people were astonished.

“Chi Lian Shan!” called out a strong cultivator of the Earth Shrine.

Chi Lian Shan was shocked, he said to Lin Feng, “The Shrines are joining hands, don’t get involved this time. I’m off.”

Chi Lian Shan followed after the members of the Earth Shrine. The fat guy nodded at Lin Feng and headed over to the group of cultivators from the Soul Shrine.

The Shrines stopped everyone, including the birds, after the seven creatures appeared distinctly and clearly.

At that moment, a few other strong cultivators gathered.

“Saint Emperor Freeze, Saint Emperor Xie Feng, they’re together, do they want to stop the Shrines?” thought the other cultivators. The Shrines joined hands and wanted to share the Saint Luck between them.

“The strong beasts of the Supreme Animal World are with them.” When the crowd saw a unicorn, a white lion, and other terrifying beasts together, they understood.

“Apart from the Shrines, other people are also making alliances. If they don’t form groups, they won’t be able to get any Saint Luck, and the Shrines will get all of it!” they said to one another.

Lin Feng looked at the members of the Fortune Shrine, they were wearing white robes, they had an elegant and smart carriage.

“That Saint Luck unicorn is ours,” said a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine, pointing at the fire unicorn.

“It’s mine!” retorted a unicorn coldly. How could he give it to the Fire Shrine?!

# Chapter 2347: Canonization Mountain

---

All the strong cultivators were standing there, and a great battle was on the verge of breaking out.

At that moment, some special strength filled the air. The atmosphere was distorted. Instantly, two Saint Luck entities were absorbed.

“Go!” All the strong cultivators of the Empty Space Shrine released empty space strength in a dazzling display. Their figures streaked across the sky and they disappeared.

“Oh no, they took two Saint Luck entities away!” swore the crowd. Even the other members of the Shrines were stupefied. The strong cultivators of the Empty Space Shrine were extremely strong, with empty space energy and their Saint’s Weapons, they could do things quickly. They had just taken two Saint Luck entities and were already at the exits. Nobody could catch up with them!

“Damn Shrines! And they joined hands!” said someone coldly.

The atmosphere started freezing. A cultivator threw himself at a Saint Luck creature.

“Condense!” Ancient imprints appeared all around and turned into gigantic words. That person could only watch it come in horror.

“Die!” Many dazzling lights struck him and he vanished, killed in the blink of an eye. He hadn’t had even a second to react. Even if he had time, how could he have resisted a Saint’s Weapon?

“It was Saint Emperor Xie Feng, he was killed in the blink of an eye even though he was a Saint Emperor at the top of the Sheng Di Layer. That’s the power of Saint’s Weapons, especially when people join hands.”

When Saint Emperor Freeze saw that, he pulled a long face.

Nobody would dare steal Saint Luck creatures in such circumstances. What a tragic death!

“Seal the area, and when we agree on who the Saint Luck entities belong to, we can reopen it,” said a strong cultivator from a Shrine. Everybody was stunned; seal the atmosphere? People who weren’t from Shrines were furious!

Lin Feng glanced over at someone who was going to a place nobody had noticed. The reason Lin Feng paid attention to that person was because it was Chu Chun Qiu!

What is the secret of this place? How is Saint Luck created?, Lin Feng repeated to himself. Chu Chun Qiu slid over to the place from which Saint Luck seemed to come.

“I don’t want that Saint Luck, you enjoy yourselves,” said Saint Emperor Freeze coldly. He followed Chu Chun Qiu as well. Many people noticed this. Could the place where the Saint Luck was created harbor other mysteries?

Lin Feng’s heart was pounding. There was a vortex where the Saint Luck was created. Lin Feng could sense a thick Qi there.

Chu Chun Qiu flew ahead and penetrated into the vortex. The crowd was astonished, how brave. Nobody dared do that, but he plunged right in!

A thousand years have passed again, if I don’t become a Saint this time, when will I?, thought Saint Emperor Freeze. Then he flew ahead and dove into the vortex also, not caring about the consequences.

Lin Feng was just standing under the vortex and he sensed some Celestial Dao. He raised his head, looking perplexed. What kind of strength was Celestial Dao?

He had his own world, could his own world generate Celestial Dao too? God Dao was his Dao, but he had the impression something was missing...

—

Lin Feng flashed ahead. He entered the vortex and quickly realized he was somewhere else. It was another world. There was an endless amount of strength in there.

“Where are we?” whispered Lin Feng. It was a strange world. He couldn’t see clearly.

“Celestial Dao is dimly discernible,” whispered Saint Emperor Freeze. He had been a Saint Emperor for such a long time, he really wanted to become a Saint.

Suddenly, more figures appeared behind them. Lin Feng was startled; many cultivators were walking in there alone, and they weren’t from the Shrines. They knew they couldn’t steal the Saint Luck from the Shrines, so they had followed Saint Emperor Freeze.

“What a strange place,” murmured everybody. A terrifying strength appeared and made everybody shake. Clouds appeared and a strong wind started blowing. A mountain became visible. The crowd looked at the mountain. It seemed extremely close and extremely far away at the same time.

A figure flew up; he wanted to get closer to the mountain, but it looked enigmatic and unfathomable; it was extremely high and it seemed impossible to get close.

“This place is called the Canonization Area, so that mountain could be the Canonization Mountain,” said someone. Everybody looked at the mountain as if it were a holy mountain, a holy creature. It seemed so close and yet so far...

The crowd saw a demon fork appear in Chu Chun Qiu’s hand, and he suddenly threw it at the mountain. The demon fork crashed into the mountain, people’s hearts pounded. Was he insane? And why could his fork reach the mountain, and they couldn’t?

Boom boom boom! A terrifying Celestial Dao oppressed the atmosphere. People couldn’t compete with it.

“That kind of strength!” Lin Feng frowned and looked at Chu Chun Qiu. Was Chu Chun Qiu the same as he used to be? Or had he changed after the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell?

“Celestial Dao deceives people,” said Chu Chun Qiu. He released Demon Qi and absorbed the vitality of the area. He slowly walked forwards, moving farther and farther from the crowd. When he stopped, the crowd realized he was at the foot of the mountain.

“How come he managed to get there?” the crowd frowned. Lin Feng was astonished too. Nobody could get close to the mountain but Chu Chun Qiu could. Did it mean that he was going to become a Saint? and what did “Celestial Dao deceives people” mean?

Lin Feng’s figure flickered, he moved towards the mountain too. However, he realized he couldn’t get close. Lin Feng wondered whether it existed for real or not.

Maybe it’s just an illusion, a mirage. But why did Chu Chun Qiu manage to reach it?, thought Lin Feng. He continued walking forwards, but couldn’t get close to it. The distance between him and the mountain remained the same.

Some strong cultivators released empty space strength and tried, but they failed too.

It’s fake? Maybe it’s a mixture of truth and falsehood?, thought Lin Feng with a sudden smile. He regained his calm. He didn’t try to walk towards the mountain anymore. However, his figure became blurry and he disappeared from their field of vision. After a millisecond, Lin Feng reappeared at the foot of the mountain. Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu then suddenly appeared in another area.

“What’s going on?” the crowd was astonished, dumbstruck, those two people had reached the mountain and then they had disappeared all of a sudden?

When Saint Emperor Freeze saw that, he started shaking with emotion. “I see! Transcend worldliness and attain holiness! I was

too stubborn all those years, and it had the opposite effect! Actually, it's just one step!"

Saint Emperor Freeze took a step forwards and disappeared. He arrived in front of the mountain, too. The crowd was astonished; Saint Emperor Freeze had understood something?

—————

At that moment, in the outside world, there was a great battle going on. Many people who were alone and didn't belong to Shrines died. Even some members of the Shrines died.

The Fire Shrine obtained one Saint Luck entity.

The Fortune Shrine and the Earth Shrine also obtained a Saint Luck entity and left the battlefield. They weren't greedy, and didn't try to obtain more.

Some people who were hopeless did like Lin Feng and the others and entered the vortex.

## Chapter 2348: Understanding

---

At the Canonization Mountain, Chu Chun Qiu, Lin Feng, and Saint Emperor Freeze were calmly standing there and could sense a clear Celestial Dao.

Saint Emperor Freeze looked at Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng and smiled. “Thank you very much, gentlemen. Without you, I wouldn’t have understood what Celestial Dao is. It’s an illusion, it’s not something you chase, it’s something that’s a part of you. Your body is like the Celestial Dao, the same rules which apply to nature also apply to your body. So many years have passed and finally, we’re going to have an opportunity to become Saints.”

Then, he sat down cross-legged facing the mountain. They didn’t need Saint Luck there. They could study Celestial Dao and see if they could transcend worldliness and attain holiness.

“The same rules which apply to nature also apply to your body?” whispered Lin Feng. He was different from other people; his body didn’t work like nature, he had his own world! He was a king there, but could there be Celestial Dao in his own world?

“Celestial Dao deceives people, how could it also make your body work like nature?” whispered Chu Chun Qiu. He looked furious, more like a demon than ever. He didn’t want to respect the rules of the world!

Saint Emperor Freeze, Lin Feng, and Chu Chun Qiu were all thinking about Celestial Dao. They all had different viewpoints, but who would become a Saint?

—

In the distance, many people looked at the mountain, wondering how they could get there. How had Saint Emperor Freeze, Lin Feng, and Chu Chun Qiu gone there? Had they understood anything in particular? And could they study something in



particular over there?

“Saint Emperor Freeze is practicing cultivation. He’s studying how to become a Saint,” said someone.

“How many people will become Saints this time?”

All those people were Saint Emperors, one step away from becoming Saints, but they needed to understand how. Becoming a Saint wasn’t something which could be done using strength.

———

Lin Feng’s eyes were closed, he had been there for five days already. He was sitting calmly in his own world. The last time, when strong cultivators had surrounded him in the black phoenix valley, he had understood a lot. However, he hadn’t modified his god strength enough. He could still improve it!

Lin Feng was in the sky of his world, above the clouds. A strong wind started blowing. He felt like a god. Could he create his own Celestial Dao?

Cultivators studied Celestial Dao to become Saints. They all had different ways of studying and understanding things. The goal was then to transcend worldliness. Lin Feng was different from other people, did he have to make his own Celestial Dao?

“Tian Dao is dimly discernible but it’s real, a mixture of truth and falsehood, it’s like an illusion at the same time.” Lin Feng’s figure flickered and he disappeared.

He reappeared in a city in his own world. These years, Lin Feng’s world had evolved on its own, so there were many cities. It almost looked like a real world.

Lin Feng was in front of the Canonization Mountain and at the same time in his own world. Saint Emperor Freeze was trying to make his body become Celestial Dao itself. Chu Chun Qiu thought that Celestial Dao deceived people.

Time passed, things changed, there were fewer and fewer people in the Canonization Area. Many people had already left the area of the Mountain. The map in the world outside had already disappeared.

Far from the Canonization Mountain, Qiong Jiu Tian was in a fire city. Around him were many cultivators from the Fire Shrine, bathing in an ocean of flames.

The Fire Shrine had obtained a Saint Luck entity, and they had given it to Qiong Jiu Tian. Afterwards, they had made Qiong Jiu Tian practice cultivation and decided to practice cultivation around him to benefit from his Qi. That way, maybe everybody would be able to benefit from Saint Luck!

The members of the Earth Shrine gave the Saint Luck to Chi Lian Shan. Qiong Jiu Tian and Chi Lian Shan were both Saint Emperors of the very top of the Sheng Di Layer, they had better chances to become Saints than the others. The Fortune Shrine also obtained Saint Luck and they were all trying to use it. That way, everybody increased their chances of become Saints at least some. Becoming a Saint wasn't something which happened in one night.

Therefore, years passed and the Canonization Area grew truly calm. Nobody became a Saint.

---

A terrifying Qi filled the air in the cave where Qiong Jiu Tian was. Very quickly, it enveloped the entire Canonization Area.

People around Qiong Jiu Tian suddenly opened their eyes. They looked sharp.

“He broke through!” They all looked at Qiong Jiu Tian, who was bathing in flames: Saint Qi! It was very intense! Qiong Jiu Tian was in the process of becoming a Saint!

“I’m about to become a Saint!” shouted a voice furiously in another place, Saint Qi rolled in waves there too.

“Someone else leveled up! Two people became Saints!” thought the crowd, shaking. Every thousand years, there were at least three people who became Saints thanks to the Canonization Area. So far, two people seemed to have become or were becoming Saints. It was incredible!

Qiong Jiu Tian was bathing in flames. He opened his eyes and stood up, much taller now. Now, if he wanted, he could stretch out his hands and touch the sky!

“What a powerful strength! That’s the spirit.” Qiong Jiu Tian touched the sky. A hole appeared there. Using Celestial Dao was incredible. He took back his hand, and left behind a hole with fire in the sky.

That was the power of a Saint. The sky was burning!

The members of the Fire Shrine felt released from pressure. Would the World Clan dare do anything to him now?

“Let’s go!” Qiong Jiu Tian slowly walked towards the exit of the Canonization Area.

“Qiong Jiu Tian, go back to the Fire Shrine, your teacher will be so happy! You’re so young and you’re already a Saint!” a strong cultivator smiled.

Qiong Jiu Tian looked at him coldly, which made that person shudder with fear. He immediately lowered his head. Qiong Jiu Tian had become a Saint, and looked completely different.

“I’ll go to the World Clan before going back to the Fire Shrine!” said Qiong Jiu Tian coldly.

“World Clan?” that cultivator was surprised.

“Yes, I’m going to kill people,” said Qiong Jiu Tian with murder in his eyes. Very quickly, he left.

A strong cultivator also left after him: Chi Lian Shan!

“You want to go to the World Clan? But now we are both Saints,

we're going to see who's stronger now!" said Chi Lian Shan. He also headed to the World Clan.

He didn't know that Lin Feng wasn't there...

-----

At that moment, next to Lin Feng, Saint Emperor Freeze opened his eyes and smiled. He looked at Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu, his eyes twinkling. Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng had made him understand something and thanks to them, he had finally become a Saint. Now he had become a Saint without Saint Luck! Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu were still meditating...

Chu Chun Qiu kept absorbing the Qi around him. A terrifying pitch-black vortex appeared around him. Celestial Dao deceived people, he wanted to go against the gods. He wanted to transcend worldliness and absorb the skies, that was his way!

Lin Feng was in his world, his god strength becoming more and more ominous, but it wasn't as aggressive anymore, it had become gentle and subtle. In front of Lin Feng was an ancient tree with green leaves. The leaves fell from the tree and landed on the ground; they turned orange; then it snowed, and the tree blossomed again: Lin Feng witnessed the four seasons.

"That's God strength?!" Lin Feng controlled everything around him. His God Dao was his Celestial Dao. He could create any kind of strength!

# Chapter 2349: Gathering in the World Clan

---

Lin Feng raised his head, his eyes still closed, and condensed strength, his Qi much more powerful.

However, after that, Lin Feng opened his eyes and looked disappointed.

“I still don’t understand, why can’t I understand?” whispered Lin Feng. He could control an incredible God strength, but he couldn’t make his body work in resonance with Celestial Dao.

Only a little something was missing, but that little something was huge. If he understood that little something, he’d reach the second level of his God layer!

But that little something seemed to be so far...

----

Outside, Lin Feng opened his eyes and looked at the mountain, the Celestial Dao was dimly discernible. Saint Emperor Freeze’s body had become nature itself. Chu Chun Qiu had started a war against Celestial Dao. That was their way, not Lin Feng’s.

He glanced at Chu Chun Qiu. Chu Chun Qiu seemed like he was going to destroy the Canonization Mountain. Lin Feng didn’t do anything. Even though there were tensions between Chu Chun Qiu and him, he couldn’t attack him by surprise in such circumstances, that would have been a blasphemy as a cultivator.

Lin Feng turned around and slowly walked away. After a few seconds, the Canonization Mountain seemed so far away from him. As Lin Feng left, he looked natural and unrestrained, confident and at ease. He didn’t need to force himself, and staying there was useless. He needed a good opportunity to become a Saint, and good comprehension.

-----

After leaving, Lin Feng contacted Aomo. A short time later, he heard a dragon chant and golden lights appeared in the distance.

“Not bad, you understand empty space strength really well now, little boy!” Lin Feng smiled.

“Father!” Aomo greeted him, landing in front of Lin Feng.

“How did it go?” asked Lin Feng. Even though he wasn’t strong enough back then, the Saint Luck had been very beneficial to him.

“Very good. It’s a mysterious feeling through, I can’t really describe it. I made great progress, though! Do you want to see?” asked Aomo smiling.

Lin Feng patted his head and smiled, “No rush. I’m going back to the World Clan first.”

Lin Feng jumped onto Aomo’s back, golden lights flashed and Aomo rose up into the air.

-----

Qiong Jiu Tian took some members of the Fire Shrine to the World Clan. They started setting the atmosphere on fire in the World Clan. An ocean of fire appeared, scorching hot. Buildings were burning down one after another.

A group of strong cultivators from the World Clan showed up and watched the members of the Fire Shrine coldly. An old man asked, “Fire Shrine, what is this supposed to mean?”

“Where’s Daimon?!” demanded Qiong Jiu Tian coldly, releasing his Saint’s strength. A terrifying and oppressive fire surrounded the old man, who pulled a long face. A Saint!

That person was completely different from the rest now, he had transcended worldliness, he could easily crush them if he wanted!

“Daimon hasn’t come back,” said the old man.

Qiong Jiu Tian groaned coldly and said, “Daimon killed some of the members of the Fire Shrine in the Canonization Area, and now

you think he can continue hiding?”

More fireballs appeared in the sky and oppressed the strong cultivators of the World Clan. They all pulled a long face. How could they compete with a Saint?

“Qiong Jiu Tian,” warned someone at that moment. Chi Lian Shan had arrived. He owed Lin Feng, and was worried that Qiong Jiu Tian would kill him, so he rushed over.

“You also became a Saint. Fight against me,” said Chi Lian Shan. He looked so strong, as strong as a real mountain. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine felt great pressure. Some of them could barely breathe.

Qiong Jiu Tian suddenly turned around and said to Chi Lian Shan, “Since it’s that way, we’ll fight!”

Qiong Jiu Tian suddenly disappeared and a gigantic hand with fire strength descended from the sky.

“Hmph!” Chi Lian Shan grunted coldly. He wasn’t afraid. A terrifying earth punch smashed into the fire hand. The energies exploded and disappeared. Qiong Jiu Tian reappeared in front of Chi Lian Shan.

“Die!” said Qiong Jiu Tian, pointing a finger filled with Saint’s strength.

Chi Lian Shan released earth strength to surround his body. That finger was too fast and crashed onto his head, as sharp as a sword. Chi Lian Shan moved backwards.

Qiong Jiu Tian wasn’t going to let him go, but he also felt the pressure.

Chi Lian Shan couldn’t see Qiong Jiu Tian anymore. He still raised his fist, and earth strength surrounded the atmosphere around him. Thunder rumbled as Qiong Jiu Tian threw himself at him.

What a powerful shell, thought Qiong Jiu Tian. He was annoyed. More and more energies surrounded him.

At that moment, Chi Lian Shan was amazed because he had used the best defense he could already, his fist became even harder and Saint's lights twinkled around it.

The finger and the fist collided, both fighters were propelled backwards violently. They were both half-Saints so far. Their cultivation wasn't very stable.

"Chi Lian Shan, you want to cause trouble!" swore Qiong Jiu Tian. His arms were shaking.

"Haha, Qiong Jiu Tian, you're a Saint too now! And now you want to avenge Qiong Hai Ya, who was so useless? He was so weak. He chased Daimon to kill him, and Daimon killed him, you can't really say anything about it."

"Indeed, but now I'm strong enough, and I can come and destroy the World Clan if I want to!" said Qiong Jiu Tian emotionlessly. "The Fire Shrine isn't far from here. I've informed the Shrine and soon many strong cultivators are going to come. Of course, they won't get involved, I will take care of Daimon personally."

Chi Lian Shan remained silent. Qiong Jiu Tian really wanted to kill Daimon. Even though Daimon was extremely strong, if he hadn't become a Saint, he'd definitely die.

People from the World Clan looked extremely worried. Saints were really terrifying. If Lin Feng came back and that Qiong Jiu Tian tried to kill him, they'd do their best to protect him.

The members of the Fire Shrine didn't move, they were waiting. The Fire Shrine wasn't far from the Northwest Area.

——

As expected, after a short time, a group of strong cultivators appeared in the distance. Their leader was a middle-aged man, he looked free from inhibitions and happy. He smiled and said, "Jiu



Tian, you've broken through to the Sheng Layer! You're a Saint now, how wonderful."

Qiong Jiu Tian turned around and looked at the middle-aged man. "Teacher, how come you came here personally?"

"My disciple became a Saint, how could I not come?" replied the middle-aged man with a smile.

Next to him was a young man who looked cold, but then smiled indifferently and said, "Congratulations, fellow disciple."

"You've been a Saint for hundreds of years, I just became one, you're much stronger than me," said Qiong Jiu Tian casually.

"Right, fellow disciple, what are you doing here?"

Qiong Jiu Tian looked furious and said, "Hai Ya was killed by a member of the World Clan, I had to come here."

"What is that supposed to mean?" said the young man, glancing at the members of the World Clan coldly. "The World Clan disappeared for a long time; now you're back and you think you're rulers here?"

"Eh?" At that moment, some people gazed into the distance sharply.

"Daimon!" Qiong Jiu Tian saw Lin Feng and Aomo. They were going to die, definitely!

"Hmph!" Qiong Jiu Tian charged towards Lin Feng instantly.

Chi Lian Shan flashed forwards to stop him, but Qiong Jiu Tian's fellow disciple prevented him from moving. He said coldly, "Earth Shrine, don't intervene here."

"Piss off!" shouted Chi Lian Shan coldly. He released a terrifying strength and rose up into the air. Qiong Jiu Tian's teacher grunted coldly and disappeared.

Qiong Jiu Tian shot towards Lin Feng quickly.

Lin Feng frowned, he hadn't thought Qiong Jiu Tian would try to kill him so quickly. He had become a Saint and was even faster than before. He pointed at Lin Feng with all his fingers. He wanted to destroy him!

# Chapter 2350: What a Turnaround!

---

Lin Feng looked at Qiong Jiu Tian and pulled a long face. Qiong Jiu Tian had become a Saint!

His fingers contained a terrifying amount of Saint's strength. There was fire all around him. Qiong Jiu Tian's attacks reminded Lin Feng of the Ancient Holy Techniques or Sky Absorbing Dao strength. His attacks now contained Saint's power.

Aomo's figure flickered and disappeared from there, but Qiong Jiu Tian just grunted coldly, he could still see them clearly. He released strength to surround them. Lin Feng and Aomo sensed a terrifying fire penetrating into their bodies.

Lin Feng released as much god strength as he could in his body, trying to escape, but Qiong Jiu Tian continued chasing him. He stretched out his fingers towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the impression he was surrounded by invisible and intangible chains. His face instantly turned deathly pale.

Aomo roared furiously, golden lights surrounding him. At the same time, he also released Demon intent and brandished his claws. Flames struck his body and started burning away his life.

Aomo raised his head and roared even louder. He was a gigantic dragon, but those fingers could destroy him!

"Aomo!" shouted Lin Feng, his expression changing drastically. He hadn't thought Aomo would jump in the way!

"Father, leave!" shouted Aomo. Lin Feng's heart twitched as he glared at Qiong Jiu Tian. Qiong Jiu Tian wanted to kill Aomo, Lin Feng couldn't accept that! He immediately threw himself at him.

"Die," said Qiong Jiu Tian. Lin Feng sensed a terrifying Saint's strength surround him and could only snarl.

Qiong Jiu Tian was much, much, much stronger than before. Lin Feng took out his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and shouted

furiously. It streaked across the sky, a demon trail appeared in the sky and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation moved towards Qiong Jiu Tian's fingers.

"Hmph!" Qiong Jiu Tian grunted icily and continued moving towards Lin Feng without slowing.

"Die!" Lin Feng released as much strength as he could. However, at that moment, a gigantic fire curtain appeared in front of Qiong Jiu Tian. It looked like a gigantic fire pearl. It enveloped the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. Cracks appeared in it instantly, but then Qiong Jiu Tian appeared in front of Lin Feng, condensing a terrifying strength in his fist and punched out in Lin Feng's direction.

Lin Feng condensed strength in his left hand and struck back against the fire fist. Saint's strength struck his fist and penetrated into his body. A terrifying black fire surrounded him. He couldn't escape, and now he was burning.

"Father!" shouted Aomo furiously.

The strong cultivators of the World Clan turned deathly pale and moved towards Lin Feng at full speed. Lin Feng couldn't compete with a Saint!

"Daimon!" shouted Chi Lian Shan. His face stiffened. Was Daimon going to die there?

If Lin Feng didn't have an incredible God strength in his body, he would have died already. But he couldn't break free now. He looked at Qiong Jiu Tian, who looked like a fire god.

"Saints understand Celestial Dao. How could you compete with me? Die, Daimon!" said Qiong Jiu Tian coldly. He sounded like he was fire incarnate. He was fire Dao!

Qiong Jiu Tian and Saint Emperor Freeze are the same, their body turned into an element for them to become Saints, thought Lin Feng. Qiong Jiu Tian had turned into Celestial Dao at that

moment. It was the first time Lin Feng had fought against a Saint and really sensed his strength. In the past, he had seen Saints, but he had never had a real fight.

“He became Celestial Dao, he studied Celestial Dao!” At that moment, Lin Feng had many thoughts.

“Die!” said Qiong Jiu Tian. He released even more strength, but at that moment, Lin Feng released a particular kind of strength and smiled back at Qiong Jiu Tian. He thought, “Since it’s that way, I’ll use God strength. With God strength, I can control anything. I wanted to turn into a real god, but I was wrong, because I am a real god already! Yes, the god of my body! My body is a god, I represent my body. Why would I use god strength? I am god strength. God strength is me. Celestial Dao is me. Here is my world, so I am this world. I am his god too!”

“You’re not dead yet?” said Qiong Jiu Tian when he saw Lin Feng smile. He was a bit surprised; not only had he not managed to kill Lin Feng yet, but Lin Feng was now smiling.

“I am afraid you won’t see me die,” replied Lin Feng indifferently. Qiong Jiu Tian was stupefied. Why? What was going on? Lin Feng had suddenly changed. Suddenly, he looked like a completely different person.

Lin Feng’s injuries healed instantly. He opened his hand and smashed Qiong Jiu Tian, smiling indifferently. Qiong Jiu Tian was astonished.

“How is that possible?” Qiong Jiu Tian couldn’t believe it his eyes. He had become a Saint, he had to kill Daimon from the World Clan!

“You’re disappointing,” said Lin Feng indifferently. He put his fingers on Qiong Jiu Tian’s head, Qiong Jiu Tian’s face changed drastically and he retreated as quickly as possible. However, Lin Feng chased him and put his fingers back on Jiu Tian’s head.

Qiong Jiu Tian was dumbstruck. His eyes suddenly became empty, his life was being corroded, his soul slowly shattered and vanished. He fell softly to the ground.

Everything had happened so suddenly. At first, Qiong Jiu Tian had almost killed Lin Feng, and then Lin Feng had suddenly changed and then killed him!

Aomo, the members of the Fire Shrine, the strong cultivators of the World Clan were all astonished. Nobody had thought there would be such a turnaround!

“Father!” Aomo roared happily. His father had broken through during the battle! Otherwise, there couldn’t have been such a turnaround, Qiong Jiu Tian had become a Saint, he would have destroyed Lin Feng easily. Lin Feng had actually easily endured Qiong Jiu Tian’s first attacks, which meant that ordinary Saints couldn’t do anything to him!

My father is terrifyingly strong. He can now easily defeat people who have just become Saints!, thought Aomo happily. He had never heard of such a thing in the Supreme Animal World, either!

“Jiu Tian!” Qiong Jiu Tian’s teacher shouted furiously. His face was extremely unsightly. His disciple had just become a Saint, and now he was dead!?!?

Qiong Jiu Tian’s body was on the ground, thoroughly dead. At that moment, Qiong Jiu Tian’s teacher immediately released a terrifying strength which moved towards Lin Feng and bore down on him.

However, in front of him was a Saint, who just looked back at him calmly!

# Chapter 2351: God Strength

---

“What? You don’t seem to care when you kill people, but when your people are killed, you react with such ardor?” said Lin Feng when he saw the members of the Fire Shrine looking at him icily. If Lin Feng hadn’t suddenly understood something, Qiong Jiu Tian would have killed him!

“You really want to die that much?” said the Saint of the Fire Shrine, Qiong Jiu Tian’s teacher. He was furious.

“We want to die?” said the leader, smiling. “Your Saint got killed by someone who suddenly understood something? You intend to send your Saints to avenge him? Of course, I understand how strong Shrines are, you directly send big armies to fight your enemies. Welcome!” said the World Clan leader.

Qiong Jiu Tian’s teacher frowned. The World Clan welcomed them?

The World Clan had been silent for so many years, why did they dare act so arrogantly? Did they think they could compete with the Fire Shrine?

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards and stopped next to the World Clan leader, he smiled at the Shriners icily and said, “Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya thought highly of themselves, but they brought about their own destruction. They deserved to die. We attempted the impossible, and it worked.”

Those people had no morals, no principles. They hadn’t thought Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya would get themselves killed!

Qiong Jiu Tian’s teacher was staring at Lin Feng. He didn’t sense any Saint’s strength emerging from Lin Feng’s body, but Lin Feng had really broken through, or he wouldn’t have been able to kill Qiong Jiu Tian. He couldn’t have been feigning before.

However, it was possible to see that Lin Feng had broken through

and regained a natural state. He had returned to the source, to his true self. He now looked completely ordinary, like someone who didn't practice cultivation at all.

The members of the Fire Shrine had no choice to admit that Daimon was incredible, and that someday he'd reach a terrifying cultivation level.

The Shrine teacher started walking, but not towards Lin Feng and the others. He walked towards Qiong Jiu Tian's corpse. Even though Lin Feng had killed Qiong Jiu Tian, Qiong Jiu Tian's corpse was a precious treasure for the Fire Shrine. He had many Saint's Weapons, including weapons which he had won in the Canonization Area. Lin Feng didn't need them, he had broken through and had the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation which would allow him to become even stronger.

Qiong Jiu Tian's teacher took his body away and left with the other members of the Fire Shrine. Chi Lian Shan landed in front of Lin Feng, his eyes twinkling, and said, "Daimon, you're really strong. You suddenly broke through and killed Qiong Jiu Tian. I couldn't kill him, which means you could probably kill me! Luckily, we're not enemies!"

"Thank you very much for coming here today!" Lin Feng smiled back. Chi Lian Shan had come to help him even though he was from the Earth Shrine and had nothing to do with the World Clan. Getting involved hadn't been necessary.

"It wasn't much. You saved my life once. However, you killed Qiong Hai Ya, it didn't really matter, but now that you killed Qiong Jiu Tian also and have suddenly broken through, things are different now. I don't think the Fire Shrine will leave the matter at this. You have to be careful now. Even though I am willing to help you, I can't ask the Earth Shrine for help," said Chi Lian Shan honestly. Even though he was a Saint, he couldn't ask the Earth Shrine to help Lin Feng fight against the Fire Shrine. Shrines didn't get involved in such things, especially since Lin Feng was a



stranger to them.

“I understand. And I know that the Fire Shrine won’t leave the matter at this,” replied Lin Feng. Lin Feng had had no choice but to kill Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya; they wanted to kill him, so he couldn’t let them live. That was his vision of cultivation.

“Be careful. Anyway, I can’t do much more here. I’m off!” said Chi Lian Shan, and quickly left.

“Let’s go down,” Lin Feng said to the people on his side.

---

The news that Daimon from the World Clan had killed Qiong Jiu Tian, a Saint from the Fire Shrine, didn’t spread anywhere because only a few members of the World Clan and a few members of the Fire Shrine had seen it, as well as Chi Lian Shan. The members of the World Clan weren’t the kind of people who went outside to brag about their military achievements, and the Fire Shrine wasn’t going to tell people about something which was quite humiliating for them. Qiong Jiu Tian had just become a Saint and Daimon had killed him, what a joke!

Lin Feng was alert, however. After he returned to the World Clan, the World Clan wasn’t afraid of the Fire Shrine coming to get their revenge at all. The army Lin Feng had obtained from the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was incredibly powerful, of course, but it wasn’t strong enough to fight against a Shrine and their Saints. And Shrines didn’t lack for Saints!

The Shrines of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds had been in existence since the ancient times. They had an incredible heritage, and many geniuses. Every generation, they had people who became Saints. And Saints, unless they had terrifying battles, didn’t die; on the contrary, they kept getting stronger. There were more and more Saints over time, unless great wars like in the ancient past occurred. Most of the time, they just didn’t show up. However, Lin Feng was convinced that the Fire

Shrine, as well as all the other Shrines, had many Saints.

How many Saints were there in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Supreme Animal World, Hell, or the Continent of the Nine Clouds? Usually, they looked like ordinary middle-aged or old people, they went fishing, they had families, they had ordinary lives and people couldn't see that they were Saints. But they did exist in the world.

Since the World Clan seemed to be unworried, Lin Feng didn't need to worry too much. He went to meditate in seclusion. Even though he was now terrifyingly strong, his cultivation level wasn't stable yet.

---

Lin Feng was in his own world, floating in the air. He really had the feeling he was an authentic god this time. He felt free from inhibitions and happy.

"Spring!" said Lin Feng. Suddenly, it was spring in his own world. Everything changed in his small world, many people raised their heads. It wasn't cold any more, the weather became mild... the mortals were astonished.

"That's genuine God Dao. My Dao is different from other people's Dao. God Dao is like Celestial Dao. I can use to control everything. I am the Celestial Dao of this world!" whispered Lin Feng. He could see the whole world in his mind. He could also modify it as he wished. He could create oceans, cities, villages, forbidden territories, desert... and people in his world could go and explore those places!

naturally, many mysterious worlds, caves, weapons, and palaces appeared in that world. Now, the people had to find and explore them!

Lin Feng enjoyed this feeling a lot. He modified his world for a while, it was quite enjoyable!

After a time, he stopped and disappeared from there. After that, he reappeared in the Imperial Palace of Yangzhou City.

“Little Lin Feng...,” said Yue Meng He, smiling at him. “How come it’s spring all of a sudden?”

“Mom, do you like spring?” asked Lin Feng smiling.

“I prefer autumn, I love orange leaves. I feel natural and unrestrained in autumn,” smiled Yue Meng He.

“Alright, then autumn it shall be,” said Lin Feng nodded. Instantly, orange leaves appeared. An orange light appeared in the palace, some orange leaves entered the palace through the windows. Yue Meng He was stupefied.

“Little Lin Feng, it’s autumn now? So suddenly?” Yue Meng He couldn’t believe it.

“You’ve become even stronger, Little Lin Feng!” said Lin Hai, grinning.

“Father!” smiled Lin Hai. Yue Meng He and Lin Hai had progressed a lot in terms of cultivation. Even if they didn’t want to progress, it would be difficult.

“Master Lin Feng, you’re getting stronger and stronger. You must be a legendary great emperor now,” said Yi Xue looking at Lin Feng admiringly. She had seen him grow up and become stronger. She was astonished each time she saw him.

“You underestimate him!” said Xiao Ya, “Now, he just has to shout and he can kill ordinary great emperors!”

“Don’t exaggerate,” said Lin Feng, shaking his head, “Father, mom, let’s have a meal.”

“Alright, I’ll go to the kitchen,” said Yue Meng He smiling and walking away. Lin Feng was so happy to spend time with his family!

# Chapter 2352: Studying Peacefully

---

Lin Feng had a big meal with his friends and family members, and then continued studying. He was thinking: since his God Dao was the equivalent of Celestial Dao in his world, he could probably make the population of his world sense cosmic energies too. Could he make them sense Celestial Dao, too? He was like a god in his world, so could he help people become stronger, too?

Lin Feng thought of the Canonization Area, that place could help people sense Celestial Dao and become Saints. In his world, he was Celestial Dao, he could create such a place too, but first, he needed to understand all those things much better.

—

Lin Feng was in a boundless place. There was a mountain suitable for cultivation. He was the only one who could go there, so nobody could disturb him. Lin Feng had his hands clasped behind his back. He looked at the sky, there was a mysterious Qi, that was the boundary of his world.

“Now, my world is complete. My body is Celestial Dao, or God Dao in my world. Therefore, I can recover very quickly. When I fought against Qiong Jiu Tian, I noticed that no matter how explosive his attacks were, he couldn’t kill me because the strength of my own world allows me to recover at an incredible speed. Qiong Jiu Tian’s attacks were incredible, but he didn’t even manage to injure me,” Lin Feng murmured. He didn’t feel like his body was a normal body with internal organs and everything, he had the impression his body was a whole world and that world was his life. He was already “half-immortal”.

Now that he understood that his God Dao was his own kind of Celestial Dao, he needed to improve that strength, it was how he had easily killed Qiong Jiu Tian. It wasn’t because the Celestial Dao in his body was incredible that it had the same level in the outside

world. If he bumped into very powerful Saints, they would easily be able to kill him. In his own world, he was a god; in the outside world, he was a stranger. He didn't control the outside world.

Last time, when I woke up from my dream, I understood God Dao and suddenly became much, much stronger. That's how I reached the God level. Now, it's the second time I broke through, I can say I have reached the second level of the God layer. I don't know how strong I can become, though, he thought. He was a Forbidden Person, he didn't have a real cultivation level, he could only guess, and he couldn't learn from other people...

Now, with the Celestial Dao in my own world, I am stronger here than in the outside world, which means I can create my own attacks, he pondered. His deployment spells had also reached an incredible level, he could cast deployment spells within milliseconds with the power of his mind. Could he improve his deployment spells?

Lin Feng still had an endless number of possibilities before him. He could do whatever he wished.

---

After studying for a long time, Lin Feng left his own world and went back to the World Clan to study in a cave. He was on a stone and suddenly opened his eyes. A terrifying Celestial Dao had filled the air around him, before turning into a black cage made of God Celestial Dao.

As expected, I can do it. Even without the Celestial Dao of the outside world, I can use my own, but my strength is restrained. If an enemy's understanding of the Celestial Dao of the outside world surpasses my understanding, then he'll be able to kill me easily, he thought. If he dragged people from outside into his own world, however, he'd be able to fight against and kill some terrifying opponents.

Lin Feng continued studying. It felt like the first time he had

understood God strength.

He had no cultivation level, he was his own god. But it was also a difficult journey, and a lonely one.

---

“Father!” said Aomo as he landed in front of the cave, smiling when he saw Lin Feng. He was happy and asked, “Father, when your cultivation is stable, what will you do?”

Lin Feng smiled and said, “You came at the perfect time, I wanted to see if you could come into my world.”

Aomo and Lin Feng disappeared, reappearing in his world, at the mountain where nobody else could come.

“Little boy, you’re a demon dragon, you control demon and empty space strength. If I used my most powerful demon and empty space attacks, would it help you understand those two kinds of strength?” asked Lin Feng. Suddenly, Aomo was in a dark world, surrounded by demons, aggressive, violent, brutal, all sorts of demons! Aomo shuddered with fear.

At that cultivation level, cultivators could only rely on themselves. The better their understanding abilities, the faster they progressed. Lin Feng now gave the opportunity to sense all sorts of strength.

“Father, you’re so strong! You can now create cultivation places which are as advanced as some cultivation places you’d find in Shrines or in the Supreme Animal World!” exclaimed Aomo. In the Supreme Animal World, there were many places to practice cultivation, and he had tested out many of them.

Lin Feng looked at the space. There was Celestial Dao in his demon energies, he wanted to create Saint Luck for Aomo to understand it. Of course, he needed to reach a certain level first.

Even though he was like a God and understood all sorts of strength, he needed to think a lot to overcome all the difficulties.

Aomo roared and came out of the demon abysses, he said, “Father, only a little bit more and I have the feeling you could create Saint Luck!”

“Nah, I still need to progress a lot,” replied Lin Feng, shaking his head. “But I could make some mysterious worlds in my world. Of course, first, I need to improve my understanding of cultivation to create useful mysterious worlds.”

“Alright,” said Aomo, nodding his understanding.

“I wish I could understand time strength and create special mysterious worlds to modify time. It would be great. Unfortunately, the Time Shrine disappeared a long time ago. There are only a few books about them in the Shrine, and they’re about acceleration and deceleration most of the time. They only contain threads of time strength,” he sighed. Unfortunately, the Time Shrine had been destroyed, probably because they were too strong, so the other Shrines couldn’t let them live. Controlling time was something terrifying!

“There is time strength in Ganges Time, according to rumors. Nobody dares go into the depths of Ganges Time though, people are too scared they won’t be able to come back,” remarked Aomo. He also wanted to see how powerful time strength could be. Time strength was an interesting kind of strength because it had nothing to do with the five elements.

“Time strength is the only thing which applies everywhere. Even though my world and the outside world are different, there is time strength in both. Even if they’re not entirely the same, modifying time strength in my world seems impossible for the time being.” he thought, his eyes twinkled. But time strength was something difficult to study. How did the cultivators of the former Time Shrine study time strength?

Of course, there was nothing about that in the books. But maybe there were some incredible cultivators from the Time Shrine still

alive? There were always details only known to insiders...



# Chapter 2353: Meeting with the Void Phoenix Clan

---

The Fire Shrine didn't come to the World Clan to cause trouble for Lin Feng. It was like they had forgotten about Qiong Jiu Tian and Qiong Hai Ya's deaths. However, the strong cultivators of the World Clan didn't seem to think that the Fire Shrine would let Lin Feng off.

Lin Feng practiced cultivation for a while calmly. His cultivation gradually became more stable. Lin Feng was confident, convinced that no Half-Saint could compete with him. He had faith in his God strength!

——

The World Clan received an invitation letter. The Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan were going to make their marriage alliance official. The cultivators of the World Clan didn't have a good premonition about it. Of course, they also showed it to Lin Feng. Even if it wasn't a good sign, Lin Feng had to know about it.

When Lin Feng saw that letter, the old man in front of him said, "The Fire Shrine is probably looking for an opportunity to kill you, even if they didn't show it before."

The Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan were getting closer and closer. Everybody in the Northwest Area knew it. Inviting the World Clan wasn't necessary at all.

Of course, people knew that Lin Feng and Qing Feng were extremely close to one another, but they didn't know about Daimon and Qing Feng, so some people still wanted to know whether they had an intimate relationship or not.

"Maybe," said Lin Feng with a smile. "But even if they want to kill me, could they resort to high-level Saints to kill me?"

"I'm not sure, I don't think so. There aren't many high-level

Saints. I don't think the Fire Shrine can easily send high-level Saints to fight against you. Even if they could, I don't think they'd do it, there are limits," said the strong cultivator of the World Clan.

"Since it's that way, I'll go to the Void Phoenix Clan, I don't risk anything. Even if they send Saints to fight against me, I should be able to get through in one piece," said Lin Feng. The strong cultivator of the World Clan was floored, but in the end he smiled and nodded acceptance. Lin Feng was very confident of himself. He was already convinced that low-level Saints couldn't kill him.

Of course, he also knew that Lin Feng had terrifying Saint's Weapons. He had seen Lin Feng kill Qiong Jiu Tian. What had surprised him the most was that Qiong Jiu Tian's attacks were so dangerous, but he hadn't managed to injure Lin Feng at all.

He smiled at Lin Feng and said, "You became a Saint, you understand Celestial Dao, you transcended worldliness and attained holiness... but how powerful is your physical body, your Saint's body?"

"My Saint's body?" repeated Lin Feng. Actually, describing Lin Feng's body with such a simple concept as "Saint's body" wasn't enough. It was a euphemism.

"It's alright," laughed Lin Feng. The old man laughed too, and didn't ask more.

—————

The atmosphere was lively in the Void Phoenix Clan. The Fire Shrine wanted to make their marriage alliance with the Void Phoenix Clan official. There were many powerful groups in the Northwest Area who came to congratulate them. Even though they didn't understand why the Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan wanted to do something as useless as that, they still came. The Void Phoenix Clan and the Fire Shrine had already talked about that in the past, why do it again? Anyway, the visitors still tried to

look like they were having fun.

Even the high-officials of the Void Phoenix Clan didn't understand why the Fire Shrine wanted to have another meeting, but since they wanted to come and talk about the details of the marriage alliance again, why not? It wasn't anything negative.

There were many guests out on a vast public field. In the front were strong cultivators from the Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan, chatting happily.

Standing next to a Saint from the Fire Shrine were two young people: one of them was Huo Xing Zi, the other one was Huo Ling. Back then, the Fire Shrine wasn't sure about the potential grooms, and Qiong Hai Ya was a potential candidate. But he had been killed by Lin Feng, so they decided to replace him with Huo Ling. The groom didn't matter anyway. To the Fire Shrine, the most important thing was to have a marriage alliance with the Void Phoenix Clan, and the Void Phoenix Clan didn't mind, either.

"Qing Feng and Jing aren't here yet? Poor Huo Xing Zi and Huo Ling," said a Saint of the Fire Shrine with a smile.

"Brother Bei Shan, those two girls are really lucky. I already sent someone to call them. They'll arrive soon," replied the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan cheerfully. "Huo Xing Zi and Huo Ling are two geniuses, such cultivators are rare. They will become incredibly strong in the future."

"I know, right?" Bei Shan Wang nodded. He looked over at the crowd. After a short time, Jing and Qing Feng arrived. They looked furious: the members of the Fire Shrine were there, and they didn't want to see them!

"You made Brother Bei Shan wait for such a long time," smiled a middle-aged man, Jing's father.

"We don't want to get married to those people!" said Jing icily, yet in a low voice. Even though she didn't want to, she knew that

infuriating the Fire Shrine wasn't a good idea, the Void Phoenix Clan couldn't compete with the Fire Shrine. Therefore, she tried to control herself.

“Insolent!” said the middle-aged man in a low voice. He glanced at Jing and said, “It’s the best thing which could happen to you in life.”

“That’s what you think!” spat Jing.

“Get down,” said the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan icily. Jing and Qing Feng landed next to them, and were surrounded by guards.

“Sorry, Brother Bei Shan, they’re just joking,” said the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan.

“It doesn’t matter, it’s good to be a strong woman. They’re perfect for Huo Xing Zi and Huo Ling,” Bei Shan Wang smiled. The crowd turned around and looked at them. Nobody knew what all those people were really thinking.

At that moment, someone arrived discreetly. Huo Xing Zi, who was drinking a cup of tea, turned around and looked at that person, frowning. His expression suddenly changed. People in the outside world didn’t know that Daimon had killed Qiong Jiu Tian, but the members of the Fire Shrine did!

Surprisingly, he came here! He’s acting recklessly!, thought Huo Xing Zi.

Many people from the Fire Shrine frowned when they saw Daimon.

Bei Shan Wang recognized Daimon too; people from the Fire Shrine had all seen Daimon, either in reality or in illusions.

“Let’s take Jing and Qing Feng back to the Fire Shrine today. That way, they’ll be able to make friends with the young people of the Fire Shrine,” proposed Bei Shan Wang, smiling indifferently at the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan.

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan didn't know what to say, he just smiled and nodded along. "No problem, sounds good."

"The Void Phoenix Clan seems impatient to sell their women to the Fire Shrine. Do you think the Void Phoenix Clan will become stronger that way?" interrupted a voice caustically. The members of the Void Phoenix Clan looked astonished and turned around, frowning at Daimon. This guy dared cause trouble?

"Insolent!" shouted someone icily. A few people suddenly appeared in front of Lin Feng, all from the Void Phoenix Clan. Their eyes were filled with murder.

"Let him pass," said Jing's father casually. Those people moved away, but they looked angry. The middle-aged man smiled at Lin Feng icily. "World Clan, Daimon!"

"Indeed," replied Lin Feng with another cold smile.

"You came, you think the older members of the Void Phoenix Clan won't do anything to you?" said the middle-aged man indifferently. He didn't know much about what had happened between Daimon and the Fire Shrine, but he hadn't asked, either. Therefore, he didn't even know that Lin Feng had killed Qiong Jiu Tian.

"If you can, do it. You can try. But I think the only thing you're capable of is selling your daughter," replied Lin Feng mockingly.

The man frowned. "Interesting little boy. You came to the Void Phoenix Clan to have a sense of presence."

## Chapter 2354: Fierce Battle

---

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan glared at Lin Feng icily. He was amazed. Daimon from the World Clan really wanted to die!

The World Clan was in the Northwest Area like the Void Phoenix Clan. Many people compared them all the time. Daimon had become famous, he was considered as a genius. Not many people in the Void Phoenix Clan were that famous. Now he had come to the Void Phoenix Clan to cause trouble, did he want to die?

Of course, he was the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, so he controlled himself. He said calmly, “Daimon, you were invited to come today, we didn’t invite you to cause trouble. If you’re not here to enjoy yourself, leave.”

“I don’t like the way you act. You amazingly want to sell women to the Fire Shrine. I prefer warning you, forget about the marriage alliance, or the Void Phoenix Clan will...” Lin Feng said easily. The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was astonished. Daimon was threatening him?

“What an insolent little boy!” said the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, glaring at Daimon, “You’re a little boy of the World Clan. I will give you one opportunity only, kneel down and apologize! Otherwise, I will not be merciful, and nobody will be able to say I wasn’t magnanimous!”

“You think you can act like that just because you’re old? Ridiculous,” said Lin Feng dismissively. The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan grew even more furious!

“Leader, you’re too polite. Daimon is an evildoer. No need to talk to him, just get rid of him,” said Jing’s father casually. The people who had just let Lin Feng pass landed in front of him again and released an ice-cold Qi.

Phoenixes started whistling, four flames shot towards Lin Feng.

The crowd looked surprised; was Daimon going to die there? He didn't even try to do anything to protect himself.

"There's something wrong. He's still there!" noted someone. Lin Feng was bathing in the terrifying fireballs, and they didn't hurt him at all.

"Back everybody!" shouted Jing's father instantly. Their attacks couldn't do anything to Lin Feng, so continuing the battle was useless. If Lin Feng counterattacked, he might kill them!

However, as Jing's father said that, terrifying flames surrounded those people. They didn't have time to react.

"Ah...!" they screamed as they burned alive. They were fire cultivators, they were supposed to have a great defense against fire attacks, but at that moment, they were burning and shrieking in pain. How terrifying!

"Saint's fire?" the crowd frowned. They didn't understand, the four people had suddenly started burning but it wasn't their flames. The middle-aged man moved too, turning into a beam of light. However, the four people were already dead...

"They're dead!" The father's expression changed drastically, he pulled a long face. He stared at Lin Feng and thought, That was Saint's fire? However, he didn't sense Saint's strength emerge from Lin Feng, and that fire was different from anything he had seen before.

Lin Feng was still standing there calmly, he hadn't moved from the beginning to the end.

I underestimated you, thought the father, frowning. He released Saint's strength, which moved towards Lin Feng and oppressed him with Fire Celestial Dao. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to burn.

"Die!" said the girls' father. The wind howled. A fire phoenix winged towards Lin Feng, full of Celestial Dao.

A gigantic firewall appeared in front of Lin Feng, then turned into an ice wall. The phoenix crashed onto it, but failed to pierce through.

“Destroy,” said Lin Feng. The ice wall rolled forwards, freezing the phoenix and the deadly flames around it.

“Sheng Layer!” The father was astonished. Daimon had become a Saint! Only a few years had passed, and he had become a Saint! What a terrifying cultivation speed! Many people practiced cultivation their entire lives and never understood what Celestial Dao was. However, Lin Feng had done it in a very short time!

“Daimon from the World Clan is a Saint!” The whole crowd was astonished. Only Saints could compete with other Saints!

“No wonder you’re so arrogant, you’re a Saint now. But so what? Even if you’re a Saint, you think you can come to the Void Phoenix Clan and cause trouble here? Ridiculous! There are level differences between Saints as well!” said the father, smiling icily.

He flashed forwards, his whole body filled with celestial Dao. He stretched out his fingers and pointed at Lin Feng. An illusionary black fire fused together with the earth and sky and moved towards Lin Feng. Suddenly, a phoenix called out, the middle-aged man’s fingers turned into phoenixes, trails appearing behind them. The energies were overwhelming!

“Oh wow, the attack is intensifying!” thought the crowd as they retreated.

Lin Feng slapped out, and a dauntless earth shield appeared, then moved towards the black fire phoenix and blocked it. The father’s attacks couldn’t pierce through Lin Feng’s shield!

“How strong. Daimon is a Saint? How come he looks so relaxed?”

“I have the impression his attacks contain deployment strength. That shield contains a special kind of strength, but there’s definitely deployment strength inside.”



The crowd now realized that Daimon was really strong.

The girls' father released a mighty flame, and a black hole made of fire appeared. It started absorbing Celestial Dao greedily, blazing furiously. That attack was really powerful, like he was trying to absorb the whole strength of the world.

“Saints' attacks are terrifying.”

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan frowned. That Daimon could fight against the girls' father? Daimon was really incredible...

The father landed in front of Lin Feng, the black hole filled with phoenix fire crashed onto Lin Feng's shield. The vortex absorbed the shield and started to burn it. Lin Feng was in danger.

“How strong.”

The vortex was a hundred meters high and contained a terrifying black phoenix fire. Lin Feng seemed like he could be overwhelmed anytime.

“He's just become a Saint, he obviously can't compete with a cultivator who has been a Saint for a long time whose cultivation is stable. Daimon's opponent has been a Half-Saint for a long time already, and he's a disciple of the Fire Shrine as well, so he controls incredible fire attacks. Daimon could hold on so far, it's already a miracle!” the crowd murmured. They already considered Daimon a dead man.

At that moment, Lin Feng's eyes went pitch-black, and suddenly, the middle-aged man had the impression the world around him was changing. He was now in a cave, in an empty world of darkness.

“How is this possible?” he frowned. How could he end up in another world after a single glance?

“You're not strong enough!” said a voice indifferently. The middle-aged man's head started pounding. He sensed Celestial Dao move towards him, and the air was vibrating madly. He didn't

know where the energies were coming from...

Boom!

A peerless strength smashed into him. His body trembled. In the outside world, his body was slammed away and he coughed up blood.

“How is this possible?” The man couldn’t believe his eyes.

Daimon was in front of him and said indifferently, “If you weren’t Jing’s father, I would have killed you!”

# Chapter 2355: If Anyone Dares Stop Me, I'll Kill Them!

---

Daimon had easily defeated a man who had been a Saint for a very long time. He was a Saint of the Void Phoenix Clan, and if he weren't Jing's father, Daimon would have killed him!

When the crowd heard that, they were speechless. The World Clan had disappeared for a very long time. Now they were back in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and they had such a genius with them. They had heard about his battle against Huo Shang when they were just Saint Emperors.

Only a few years had passed, and Daimon had completely changed. He could now crush some Saints! What a beast!

Jing's father looked at Lin Feng, visibly stunned. He had been a Saint for so many years, his cultivation was stable, he understood Celestial Dao quite well, he had good fighting skill... and yet, someone who hadn't been a Saint for a very long time had defeated him so easily. He felt humiliated. If it wasn't for his daughter, he would be dead already!

"Because of Miss Jing, I decided to let you live. However, even if you're her father, you can't force her to do anything. If she wants to join the Fire Shrine and get married to one of their cultivators, fine, but nobody can force her. I'm her friend and I really don't understand how her clan could sell her to the Fire Shrine, are the members of the Void Phoenix Clan the Fire Shrine's slaves?" wondered Lin Feng calmly.

Many people who had been invited looked amused. Even though they were from the Northwest Area like the Void Phoenix Clan, they had come to give them face, not because they were excited to party with them. But now something interesting and funny was finally happening, they hadn't come for nothing. Daimon was humiliating them, awesome!

The members of the Void Phoenix Clan looked at him icily, especially the leader. This little boy had just defeated a Saint of the Void Phoenix Clan!

He slowly turned around and looked at the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine. However, some of the members of the Fire Shrine were laughing, others were smiling, some others looked calm, as if all this had nothing to do with them. It infuriated him. Did he have to solve this issue himself? Did the Fire Shrine want to see how strong they were?

“I’ll take Qing Feng and Jing back to the Fire Shrine first. You can solve the issue appropriately,” said Bei Shan Wang to the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan calmly.

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was furious. How humiliating! Lin Feng had embarrassed them, and now the Fire Shrine wasn’t helping at all.

Shrines are Shrines. They’re proud. They don’t care about the Void Phoenix Clan, thought the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan. He was disappointed. However, he couldn’t tell anyone how he felt, he had to keep it to himself. The Fire Shrine didn’t care about the Void Phoenix Clan’s face.

“Alright,” said the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan. “Take them away!”

He sounded furious. He wanted to insult Bei Shan Wang, but he couldn’t. Bei Shan Wang smiled coldly. The Void Phoenix Clan couldn’t know that the Fire Shrine hadn’t come for Qing Feng and Jing, they had come for Daimon!

They hoped that the Void Phoenix Clan would kill Lin Feng. That way, they wouldn’t need to do anything. Nobody would be able to say that the Shrines bullied younger people. Of course, if the Void Phoenix Clan didn’t manage to kill him and he escaped, the Fire Shrine would have an excuse to kill him.

“How shameless. The Void Phoenix Clan is just watching their women get kidnapped. They really have no sense of honor and integrity,” said Lin Feng icily.

“Shut up!” shouted the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, throwing himself at Lin Feng. The crowd heard a sonic boom. Lin Feng sensed a terrifying phoenix strength oppress him, despite the distance.

Lin Feng stretched out his hands and his shield appeared again. Everyone heard it starting to crack, and his shield broke when the phoenix wings crashed against it. Dazzling wings moved towards him. Flames appeared around Lin Feng and he was driven backwards violently.

He suddenly disappeared and reappeared far away in the distance, his heart pounding.

Lin Feng touched his forehead. There was blood there but he recovered almost instantly. He raised his head and smiled at the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan. “No wonder you’re the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, you’re only a low-level Saint. You’re a tiny little insect compared to the Saints of the Shrines. You can’t contradict them if they say anything. You can only submit to them, and now you’re releasing your anger on me.”

Daimon sounded like a real demon. He raised his hands and his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation appeared, demon strength surging out like a tide. The crowd all around was trembling. Demons were wailing furiously all around them.

Lin Feng walked forwards. The Void Phoenix Clan’s leader looked at Daimon and saw only an evil smile, and a terrifying weapon. It looked like the weapon of a demon king! Demons kept wailing mournfully. It wasn’t very loud, but it was scary, and those mournful cries contained cursing strength.

Empty space energy surrounded Lin Feng; he disappeared and a millisecond later, reappeared in front of the leader of the Void

Phoenix Clan. He raised his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, which swept forwards as fast as lightning.

A demon king roared in primal rage. Demon lights appeared all around. The crowd saw demons surround the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, even as cursing strength swarmed towards him.

The face of the Void Phoenix Clan's leader changed drastically. He felt he was in a demon ghost town, he could see rivers of blood all around him, he had the impression his mind was going to explode.

"Piss off!" shouted the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan. At the same time, he withdrew, a phoenix's wings surrounding him. He tried to expel the demon strength from his mind, but the demon king continued roaring and the cursing strength contained a weird essence which made it hard to control his Celestial Dao anymore.

"Break!" A terrifying Qi kept bombarded him. A fire sword appeared, even more dazzling than the sun. It hacked forwards, there was an explosion, and the fire sword broke apart. He was driven backwards violently. The crowd just saw the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan crash back into a wall, and then shattering sounds followed.

"How strong. That demon halberd is overwhelming!" muttered the crowd. They were trembling. The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan kept getting smacked around.

"Their attacks don't even influence their surroundings, they have a perfect control over their strength. Saints' strength is terrifying!" whispered the crowd. The figure of the Void Phoenix Clan's leader flickered, even those who were trying to take Jing and Qing Feng away were astonished.

"You dare bully me, a young cultivator? You think the Void Phoenix Clan is imposing and awe-inspiring?! Today, I will take Jing and Qing Feng, and we'll see who dares stop me!" said Lin Feng, holding his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and walking

forwards. Demon strength kept surging out. Daimon looked like a demon king, his eyes pitch-black and dreadful.

“If anyone dares stop me, I’ll kill them!” said Lin Feng, walking towards Jing and Qing Feng. He had come to take them away, he didn’t want them to stay in the Void Phoenix Clan. There was nothing good for them here!

# Chapter 2356: Mysterious Demon Skill

---

Qing Feng knew that Daimon was Lin Feng, so she was very happy and smiled. She didn't like the Void Phoenix Clan. She had gone to the Void Phoenix Clan only for Lin Feng. She was happy yet nervous, even if Lin Feng was extremely strong.

Jing was confused. She didn't know that Daimon was Lin Feng, so she didn't understand why someone she had seen only a few times in her life would help her like this. But she was like Qing Feng, she didn't want to stay in the Void Phoenix Clan anymore. She felt angry and disappointed, she had never thought the Void Phoenix Clan would treat Qing Feng and her like bartered goods. The Clan didn't care about what they wanted, and her father had even decided to ignore her mother!

Lin Feng stepped forwards, the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan could only grimace. He had just been overwhelmed by Daimon, this guy had a Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and looked like a demon king with it. The members of the Fire Shrine continued remaining silent, as if all this had nothing to do with them.

Everyone was looking at Daimon. He was so strong! The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, a low-level Saint, had been defeated. Even if Lin Feng's Saint's Weapon was very powerful, the crowd knew that if he hadn't been strong, he wouldn't have been able to use it properly, either. Even a low-level Saint could have killed him.

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was growing more and more furious. The members of the Fire Shrine still said nothing. Nobody could help them. He had been attacked by Lin Feng, and if he had been a Half-Saint, he would have been killed. Lin Feng hadn't even used a Saint's Weapon against Jing's father and could have easily killed him!

How humiliating, the Void Phoenix Clan couldn't do anything against someone so young! Such a thing had never happened to



them before...

“If you don’t piss off, I’ll kill you!” said the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan icily, releasing phoenix fire energies which filled the air. A phoenix Taoist robe made of feathers appeared on his body.

The leader hoped Daimon would leave, he didn’t want to kill Daimon.

“Empty words,” said Lin Feng, glancing at him with his pitch-black eyes. He continued walking towards Jing and Qing Feng, the strong cultivators around them suddenly turning black.

“Release them!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. The two strong cultivators there started trembling and sensed death invading their bodies. They saw illusions of death gods in their minds. Rivers of blood appeared in their minds, and they started transforming into demons before the two powerful Saint Emperors abruptly disappeared.

In front of a Saint, a Saint Emperor was nothing. Daimon could shout and kill them. Many people were dazedly wondering how long Daimon had practiced cultivation to become a Saint.

“Insolent!” The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was bathing in flames, a dazzling flame dashed to the skies. Fire was everywhere inside the Void Phoenix Clan. In the distance, a phoenix light curtain appeared and enveloped the whole clan.

“What’s that?” someone blurted out. A gigantic phoenix looked down at them, making them shiver. Was it a trump card of the Void Phoenix Clan? What a terrifying Qi!

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, unconcerned as he mused, “A Saint’s Weapon which contains real phoenix blood?”

“You want to die, so I will kill you!” said the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan. He stretched out his hand and a sharp phoenix sword appeared. It absorbed the strength of the earth and sky

greedily. The sword became even more dazzling. The air began to hum strongly.

The sword floated above the leader, containing a terrifying strength.

“How strong. That weapon is a Saint’s Weapon of the Void Phoenix Clan, it must have been absorbing phoenix strength for thousands of years! Daimon is doomed this time!” thought the crowd.

People started running away, they didn’t dare stay too close.

“Throw your Saint’s Weapon away and cripple your own cultivation, I won’t kill you,” the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan said to Daimon. How could Daimon possibly obey him, though? He stopped walking towards Jing and Qing Feng, he knew that he had to take care of the leader if he wanted to take Jing and Qing Feng away.

“So you really want to see how powerful my Great Demon Halberd of Desolation is? A short time ago, I realized a terrifying peerless demon skill was inside it. If you want to continue fighting, we’ll fight!” replied Lin Feng.

A black demon armor appeared around him. He grew to several times his former size, still holding the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, which seemed to be keening in anticipation. People could sense that the weapon had been used to kill billions of people! It was filled with demon blood!

“That Saint’s Weapon is the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. Who was the initial owner? Why does Daimon have it?” wondered those who saw the ancient demon weapon. Did it really contain a terrifying demon skill?

“Since you’re a peerless demon cultivator now, please, let’s exchange views on cultivation!” said the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan icily. He raised his head and shouted, “Void Phoenix,

lacerate!”

An incredible number of sharp phoenix swords shot towards Lin Feng. The leader wanted to contain him and kill him. This attack could easily kill a Half-Saint!

“That Saint’s Weapon is not bad,” Lin Feng said dismissively. A strong wind filled with strength was blowing, surrounding Lin Feng and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. Lin Feng attacked with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, moving like the wind. Demons surrounded him and lunged towards the incoming phoenix swords.

“Die!” The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan jumped forwards and shouted loudly. A dazzling phoenix suddenly appeared in front of Lin Feng.

“Go!” Lin Feng threw his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, shaking the earth and sky. It rose up into the air and tore apart the phoenix in front of him. All the sharp swords around Lin Feng shattered like glass.

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan suddenly threw himself at Lin Feng. A gigantic phoenix appeared behind him.

“Die!” He punched out and an ancient phoenix moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng recalled his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and walked forwards. He vanished, the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation created a terrifying wind around itself.

“Hmph!” the Clan leader smiled icily. Many phoenixes appeared, but the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation destroyed them all, before the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation drove into his body.

The crowd gaped; the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation had been driven into the leader’s body?

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan smiled icily and said, “Phoenixes are immortal, I have a phoenix body now!”

He let the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation pierce right

through him, and continued moving towards Daimon. Phoenixes fell upon the younger man.

“Die!” A terrifying fireball smashed into Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng recalled his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and was driven backwards, coughing blood, paling a bit. A mighty life strength surrounded him.

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was stunned; he had barely injured Daimon with his attack?

Lin Feng used his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation like a pole to rise up in the air and said icily, “Immortal, huh? I forgot to tell you that I had an immortal body. We’ll see who’s more immortal!”

He threw himself at his opponent again. Everybody was shaking. Their fighting abilities were terrifying, but their defenses were too. Did they both really have immortal bodies?

“Let’s see if your immortal body can resist my Great Demon Halberd of Desolation’s skill!” snarled Lin Feng as he lashed out in front of him with the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. Everybody heard a berserk demon song.

“Enjoy it!” said Lin Feng. He disappeared and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation moved forwards. Millions of demons appeared. Everybody started hallucinating: they saw corpses and blood everywhere. The terrifying demon song made everyone hallucinate.

“Countless demons, the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation contains a song, the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony!”

---

Ed. Note: Before you Google it like I did, a seriatim is a music piece made for a small group of people.

# Chapter 2357: Taking Control

---

“The Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony!” The crowd was astonished. One of the nine famous songs, a demon song, and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation contained it, so it was even more terrifying! Everything turned into demon strength around them and absorbed the fire energy.

Real demons appeared in the sky and chanted together in unison. It was overwhelming.

“The Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony summons real demons to fight, and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation activated the song!” thought the panicking crowd. A terrifying demon holding a steel fork threw himself at a gigantic phoenix and cut it apart instantly. The other demons then all started ripping into the phoenixes with their steel forks.

As expected, it’s like when I fought against the Nine Netherworlds Emperor back then, the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation contains the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony. Did the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation already contain the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony, or did the cultivator who created it put it inside?, Lin Feng wondered. He didn’t know.

He cut apart everything around him while walking towards the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan. The Void Phoenix Clan’s leader grimaced. That Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was too powerful, and it contained the Demogorgon Seriatim Symphony!

A gigantic dazzling light appeared in the sky and illuminated the fire phoenix, which looked even more dazzling that way.

“Die!” said Lin Feng icily. His demons moved in all directions, sweeping away everything. Four demons charged towards the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan.

Golden lights surrounded the demons, and the air shrieked with

them. The four demons attacked with the momentum of an avalanche and at the same time, Lin Feng carried out a powerful attack with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. Millions of steel forks chimed in mad harmony. The Void Phoenix Clan's leader's phoenixes broke apart; he shouted furiously and released more fire Celestial Dao.

The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was staring at Lin Feng. He really wanted to kill him!

He flashed forwards, ignoring the demons. He wanted to kill Lin Feng; if he did, the demons would disappear and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation would be his!

A terrifying demon steel fork stabbed into his phoenix body, but he continued walking forwards. Was he really indestructible?

"Eh?" Lin Feng was surprised, he looked at the phoenix on his opponent's body, was it indestructible?

"Hmph!" Lin Feng grunted icily, and assaulted the phoenix silhouette around his opponent's body with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation as he rose up in the air.

"You'll die!" The phoenix instantly shot towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng was startled. His Great Demon Halberd of Desolation thrummed wildly. It crashed onto his opponent's head, but the man's head looked like an illusion and didn't break apart, bathed in phoenix flames. At the same time, a phoenix landed in front of Lin Feng and fire penetrated into Lin Feng's body.

He had the impression he was going to burn to death. He released as much life strength as he could. Nobody could destroy him. He was the god of his own body, he controlled the vitality of his own body.

"Those two really have immortal-type bodies!" swore the shaken crowd. This battle transcended worldliness already. It was awe-inspiring.

“Destroy!” shouted the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan. He could sense that Lin Feng’s body contained a special kind of strength, it was difficult to destroy his inner power!

Lin Feng pulled a long face. Even with his own world’s strength, he could recover quickly, but there were limits. If his opponent’s Celestial Dao was too powerful in the outside world, he couldn’t do much.

A demon attacked the phoenix, the phoenix became dimly discernible and weaker.

“I’ll definitely kill you now, no matter what!” said Lin Feng icily. He waved his hand and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation turned into a light beam, there was a peal of thunder, and the phoenix exploded. The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was hurled away. Lin Feng moved towards him, his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation crashing onto his opponent’s third eye. The leader instantly disappeared.

“He’s dead?!” The crowd was astonished. The leader of the Void Phoenix Clan was dead? On the day when the Fire Shrine had come to make their marriage alliance official, killed by a young man!

“If Daimon doesn’t die, the World Clan will become a dazzling group!” thought the onlookers. That fight just now had been just breathtaking. Who could stop Daimon in the Void Phoenix Clan?

The demons turned into demon strength and flowed back into the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation disappeared. Many people were impressed. What an amazing weapon!

“How audacious!” said someone icily. The crowd was stupefied, they turned around and saw a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine: it was Bei Shan Wang. He stood up and stared at Lin Feng while releasing Qi.

“Daimon from the World Clan, you came today to cause trouble

on the day of the marriage alliance between our Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan. We don't like bullying younger people, so we didn't attack you, but you're too insolent. You even killed the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan, and now you want to kidnap our women!" said Bei Shan Wang icily.

The members of the Void Phoenix Clan were all shaking with fury.

Daimon had fought against them, the two duels had been tragic for them, and the Fire Shrine hadn't done anything. Now their leader was dead, and finally the Fire Shrine was intervening?!

Marriage alliance?! The Fire Shrine wanted good relations with the Void Phoenix Clan?!

How ridiculous! The Shrine had let their leader die. If they had helped and killed Daimon, that would have been fine, everybody would have said Daimon wasn't strong enough.

"Brother, from now on, you're the leader of the Void Phoenix Clan," said Bei Shan Wang to Jing's father. He was surprised, but nodded. Everybody was even more shaken.

Jing's father was a disciple of the Fire Shrine and just a son-in-law to the Void Phoenix Clan, he wasn't from the same bloodline. He was very close to the Fire Shrine, closer to the Fire Shrine than to the Void Phoenix Clan. And now Bei Shan Wang from the Fire Shrine said that?! Just a few minutes after the leader's death?!

Two people appeared next to Jing and Qing Feng. Those people looked ordinary, they had no Qi, and actually had been there the whole time.

Those people had regained a natural state, they have transcended worldliness and attained holiness?!

The crowd was astonished. Those people were definitely from the Fire Shrine. Daimon was furious, had the Fire Shrine organized everything?



Lin Feng looked at Bei Shan Wang, then he looked at Jing and Qing Feng again. He looked furious. Finally, the Fire Shrine was going to act!

“First, why would you get involved in the relations between the Void Phoenix Clan and me? Second, when did Miss Jing and Miss Qing Feng agree to become women of the Fire Shrine?”

Bei Shan Wang laughed, and retorted, “Mind your own business, will you?”

“I killed Qiong Hai Ya, I even killed Qiong Jiu Tian, who had just become a Saint. If you want to fight against me, continue sending people to me, no need to hide. I despise people like you,” said Lin Feng smiling icily.

Qiong Jiu Tian had become a Saint and Daimon from the World Clan had killed him?!

“No wonder.”

Bei Shan Wang ignored Lin Feng and said, “Take them away.”

After that, the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine grabbed Qing Feng and Jing. Lin Feng frowned. The Fire Shrine was going to attack?

# Chapter 2358: Lin Feng Crushes Saints

---

He waved his hands and his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation streaked across the sky. Lin Feng looked at Bei Shan Wang icily, a terrifyingly explosive Qi emerged from his body and surrounded the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was like the king of weapons.

“I told you, those who dare stop me will die!” said Lin Feng. Terrifying lights flashed around him. It felt like the atmosphere had been about to explode.

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation streaked across the sky and pressed forward with an indomitable will. Bei Shan Wang was astonished. If Lin Feng didn’t take Qing Feng and Jing now, he would leave the matter at that.

“How arrogant. Since it’s that way, I’ll respond to your request!” said Bei Shan Wang in a cold and detached way. Instantly, more silhouettes flickered. All those people were Saints!

The crowd trembled. The world was gigantic, but it was extremely rare to see so many Saints at the same time. Only the Shrines and the Supreme Animal World had that many Saints. The other groups usually only had a few.

At that cultivation level, battles were incredible. Those people were usually quite old, too. They stood at the very top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Lin Feng looked at the Saints, startled. Those people’s Celestial Dao was incredible. The stronger people were, the deeper their connection to nature was. One Saint was already incredible, but several...

“Very good. Let’s see how strong the Fire Shrine is!” said Lin Feng icily. Dazzling golden empty space lights flashed under his feet. Very quickly, a dazzling golden world appeared and enveloped

everyone. Millions of dazzling threads of consciousness emerged from his third eye.

“Deployment spells, one millisecond and so many deployment spells...” the crowd was trembling. At the beginning, they had sensed that Lin Feng’s attacks contained deployment strength, now they could see it!

“Great Deployment Master’s strength, one millisecond and he can cast such terrifying deployment spells. He’s not only a Saint, he’s also a Great Deployment Master!”

Deployment lights surrounded everybody, the world became golden. Everybody was in a golden world, including the crowd.

“What a powerful deployment spell!” The crowd was astonished, someone touched the golden wall, it was extremely hard, like a golden rock or fortress. That person condensed strength and attacked the wall, but nothing happened.

“It can’t be broken. I’m a cultivator at the top of the Sheng Di Layer, and I can’t break it. I’m so weak compared to a Saint,” mumbled that person, astonished. Everybody around was astonished.

That deployment spell was one of the Three Thousand Great Deployment Spells Lin Feng had learned called the Great Atmosphere Sealing Imprint Deployment Spell. He had modified it with God strength, it was even more resistant. Obviously, a Saint Emperor couldn’t break it.

Bei Shan Wang was stupefied. He realized how scary that deployment spell was.

He raised his hand and put a finger on the golden wall, and a strand of golden strength broke apart. He ran towards Lin Feng, but when he started running, he realized that the golden strand had reappeared.

“Oh no!” He suddenly thought of something. He looked at Jing

and Qing Feng, but Lin Feng had already reacted, right after having cast the deployment spell, he had taken them into his small world. He was the only one who could see inside that deployment spell, the others were blind in there.

The man who was initially next to Qing Feng pulled a long face. He attacked a golden line, and it exploded, but when it disappeared, his face turned deathly pale.

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was there, waiting for him!

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation beheaded him, then demon strength bombarded him and his body vanished. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation continued releasing demon strength.

Lin Feng looked like a demon god. He recalled the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and looked at another Saint, the one who had oppressed Jing.

“The Fire Shrine forced me to do that!” said Lin Feng flatly. His Great Demon Halberd of Desolation continued moving forwards, piercing through a golden pillar and punching through that cultivator’s head like the hook of a fishing rod. The Saint didn’t have time to dodge, he died instantly!

“Eh?” Lin Feng realized that Bei Shan Wang was also getting involved, charging forwards to kill him. However, Lin Feng just smiled icily. Bei Shan Wang was a low-level emperor; the Fire Shrine had underestimated him, and the consequences were going to be tragic!

Lin Feng pierced through a golden pillar, it was his own deployment spell, it didn’t stop him. He could do as he wished here!

When Bei Shan Wang arrived where Qing Feng was supposed to be, he realized that she had already disappeared, Daimon had already taken her away. He turned around and looked at the sky,

the best choice was to escape from there.

Bei Shan Wang rose up into the air. However, at that moment, a terrifying strength surrounded him, and a gigantic fire shield appeared to protect him.

The fire shield broke apart, the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation continued moving towards him. Bei Shan Wang turned around, shattered a pillar, and flew up again. He had been so startled that he was covered with cold sweat. How scary!

There was a rumble and eruption as he broke through the deployment spell and flew higher up.

Bei Shan Wang looked at the ground, seeing the gigantic golden deployment spell. If he hadn't come out, he would have died, because he couldn't see anything inside-

"Oh no... the others..." Bei Shan Wang hissed. He was soaked with cold sweat. Other Saints had come besides him. He was the only low-level Saint in the group, but they had thought that he alone would be able to kill Lin Feng, nobody had thought things would turn out this way.

A terrifying fire gathered in the sky. Bei Shan Wang condensed Celestial Dao. A gigantic black hand appeared and descended from the sky.

"Destroy!" shouted Bei Shan Wang furiously. The gigantic black hand smashed into the deployment spell from outside to help the others escape.

At that moment, terrifying golden empty space strength swept everything away, and the sealed empty space deployment spell turned into illusionary empty space strength, it was as if it didn't exist.

"No!..." screamed Bei Shan Wang. He saw the terrifying Great Demon Halberd of Desolation streak across the sky. The others weren't as lucky; the gigantic black hand smashed down on so

many people and killed them instantly. That was where Lin Feng was a moment before, but he had moved. People from the Fire Shrine and the Void Phoenix Clan were there, so that gigantic black hand killed many of them!

The destructive cloud slowly dispersed. However, another great deployment spell appeared. Bei Shan Wang looked at it, his mouth twitching. Lin Feng looked at him provokingly before disappearing into the great deployment spell. He could cast deployment spells in the blink of an eye.

Bei Shan Wang felt powerless.

“Uncle Bei Shan,” said a Saint, arriving next to Bei Shan Wang, one of his arms missing. Bei Shan Wang had done it with his gigantic black hand.

Bei Shan Wang looked at him and said, “I’m so sorry for you, I feel so sorry I made you all come today.”

“Uncle, we must destroy him and the World Clan!” said the Saint. His eyes were filled with murder. At the same time, some Qi rose in the distance. Maybe that the Fire Shrine had realized there was a terrifying cultivator here, so they had decided to send some backup?

# Chapter 2359: Ancient World's Hidden Strength

---

Bei Shan Wang and the Saints of the Fire Shrine turned around and watched three people arrive. Bei Shan Wang pulled a long face. Those three people were his fellow disciples, all of them were extremely strong. They had probably seen Saints' talismans break apart and rushed over.

Even though they were here, Bei Shan Wang didn't look happy at all. Saints had died, and the worst thing was that he had killed them accidentally. It was a tragedy. If he went back to the Fire Shrine, he'd be reprimanded severely.

"What's going on?" the three people asked. They were staring at Bei Shan Wang, he felt pressured, not physically, but on the inside. What to say? That a young man who had become a Saint a short time ago was difficult to deal with?

"Uncle, Daimon from the World Clan is a Great Deployment Master, his deployment spells are terrifying and he can cast them within seconds. He put us in a cage and started chasing us to kill us. When I was inside, I couldn't see anything anymore. Uncle Bei Shan saved me," said the other Saint. Bei Shan Wang glanced at him; this little boy didn't disappoint him!

"Great Deployment Master?" the few people said icily, "Is there anyone else?"

"They're all dead." replied Bei Shan Wang. He pulled a long face.

"So, let's destroy the deployment spell," said that person icily.

Bei Shan Wang nodded, "That's what I was thinking. We break the deployment spell and we kill Daimon. Then, we can go to the World Clan, and destroy them as well. Otherwise, the consequences could be severe."

---

Lin Feng could hear them perfectly.

He was still holding the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. The situation was getting dangerous. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine had arrived too quickly, they were all low-level Saints, no weaker than Bei Shan Wang, especially the one who had just talked. His Qi seemed more powerful than the others. Even Bei Shan Wang seemed to respect him. He couldn't do much against a group of people like that, even with the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation.

Besides, the members of the Fire Shrine were shameless; they had caused trouble, they had prevented him from leaving, then he had protected himself; and now they wanted to destroy the World Clan!

Lin Feng turned around and looked at someone in the deployment spell; it was Jing's father. Even though Lin Feng wanted to get rid of him, he was Jing's father, and if he died, she'd blame him.

He landed in front of the man. "You..."

Her father looked furious but Lin Feng said, "If you don't want to die, don't attack me, go now."

Then, he grabbed him and rose up in the air, the middle-aged man was stunned. He saw some strong cultivators from the Fire Shrine. They were about to attack!

"Daimon let me go!" said the middle-aged man in relief. He almost felt grateful.

"Over there!" shouted someone. The middle-aged man's silhouette flickered. He moved back. He saw a gigantic hand which moved towards the deployment spell and crush it.

After the deployment spell broke apart, the attack continued pressing down. People in the deployment spell saw a terrifying destructive hand descending, their faces turning deathly pale.



They were going to die!

“No!” shouted people desperately, but it was too late. A low-level Saint was too strong for them. People who weren’t Saints died instantly. They all died, one after another.

Many people from the Void Phoenix Clan perished. When the middle-aged man saw that, his face turned deathly pale and he pulled a long face. So many people from the Void Phoenix Clan died, just because the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine wanted to kill Daimon from the World Clan? Was it worth it?

A gigantic Great Demon Halberd of Desolation streaked across the sky. When all the destructive strength dispersed, demon Qi rose up, Lin Feng raised his head and stared at the Saints of the Fire Shrine icily.

“Not bad, it’s such a pity that you’re from the World Clan though,” said the strong cultivator next to Bei Shan Wang, sighing. It was such a pity this guy was from the World Clan. They were enemies with the Fire Shrine, and he had killed people whose family name was Qiong... such a genius was going to die.

Lin Feng smiled coldly, did they think they were going to kill him now?

“I think it’s even worse to be from the Fire Shrine. So many people from the Fire Shrine died today, you think it’s awesome to be from the Fire Shrine?” replied Lin Feng mockingly.

His interlocutor remained composed and replied, “Their deaths will lead to your death and the destruction of the World Clan.”

“How arrogant,” said a voice at that moment. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were startled and spun around. They saw someone arrive slowly. His Qi was terrifying and filled the air.

“Eh?” The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were stupefied. The atmosphere around the new arrival seemed to be sealed.

“World strength?” The Shriner’s expressions changed suddenly.

Someone from the World Clan had come? Did they think they could compete with the Fire Shrine?

The air hummed and wavered.

Strong cultivators arrived out of nowhere. The expressions of the Fire Shrine's members changed drastically, frowning and staring at all those people.

Lin Feng was astonished, too. Those people were from the World Clan?

Since when did the World Clan have so many Saints?

"How strong is the World Clan? Last time, when I killed Qiong Jiu Tian, I was in danger, and the World Clan didn't send anyone. Now they're showing their real strength because the Fire Shrine is threatening me!" Lin Feng was astonished. He hadn't thought the World Clan had become so strong.

"How strong is the World Clan!?" one of the Fire Shriners asked icily.

"You really consider yourselves unexcelled in the world. You despised the World Clan," said a strong cultivator flatly. The members of the Fire Shrine had to admit that it was the truth.

"So what do you intend to do now?" asked the one next to Bei Shan Wang coldly.

"The Fire Shrine said they wanted to destroy the World Clan, what do you think we want to do?"

The members of the Fire Shrine were even more astonished. Was the World Clan saying they wanted to destroy the Fire Shrine?

"The World Clan dares act that arrogantly?"

"We have to be intransigent. You just said you wanted to destroy the World Clan, what should we do? Tsk, tsk, tsk..." said the strong cultivator of the World Clan, smiling coldly. "Even if the World Clan gets destroyed, you guys won't see it."

The World Saints moved towards the Fire Saints together. Their world strength blotted out the sky. The Fire Saints were stupefied, one of them looked at Lin Feng and blurted out said, “Capture him!”

The air hummed. All the Saints of the Fire Shrine threw themselves at Lin Feng. They wanted to capture him to threaten the World Clan!

“How cold!” Lin Feng’s Great Demon Halberd of Desolation swept out, and a demon Dao trail appeared in the sky.

A terrifying fire hand imprint bombarded his demon strength and destroyed it. The Fire Saints flashed towards him as fast as lightning.

“Stay here!” said the Fire Saints. Celestial Dao surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng couldn’t escape anymore.

“Be careful!” World lights encircled the Fire Saints. The strong cultivators of the World Clan flashed in and surrounded those people, but the members of the Fire Shrine were very fast.

“Go in!” A Cage of Darkness emerged from Lin Feng’s eyes and the Fire Saints ended up in a cage, but they destroyed it instantly.

“Die!” A light beam dashed to the skies. Lin Feng released empty space and wind strength, then he condensed it in his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and then his weapon hacked towards Bei Shan Wang.

“Piss off!” shouted Bei Shan Wang furiously. A shield appeared, he wanted to block Lin Feng’s attack, while at the same time, fire dragons appeared in his eyes. Lin Feng’s soul shook and fire energies appeared inside him. A terrifying destructive strength surrounded Lin Feng. Bei Shan Wang’s fellow disciples were too strong!

“Great Empty Space Technique!” Lin Feng released empty space strength and threw his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation at the

same time towards Bei Shan Wang's shield. Bei Shan Wang moved back, but someone appeared just above him, attacking him from above.

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation pierced through his body, and his face went blank...

# Chapter 2360: Enigmatic and Unfathomable

---

Bei Shan Wang was attacked by a strong cultivator of the World Clan and Lin Feng together, and died. But Lin Feng was still in danger. He recalled his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and two more cultivators of the Fire Shrine attacked him. He used his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation again, but they destroyed the attack quickly.

Lin Feng was already coughing blood as he was attacked repeatedly, his face turned deathly pale. If he hadn't had an immortal body, he would have died instantly!

The Saints of the World Clan arrived close enough to attack, their World lights surrounding the Fire Saints. The latter ended up in another world.

The strong cultivators of the World Clan have a similar strength to mine. They use their worlds to deal with opponents. I can't even see anything with my godly awareness!, he thought, impressed. The Saints of the World Clan had completely disappeared into the world lights, which were flaring and surging. The battles inside were probably crazy.

"Come back!" shouted Lin Feng to the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation came back into his hand. There were world lights where Bei Shan Wang was a minute before, so Lin Feng jumped into that ancient world.

"A world in a world!" Lin Feng raised his head. It was a world in a strong cultivator's world, and they were fighting inside. The strong cultivators of the World Clan were incredible. Lin Feng didn't really understand them, but it seemed the strongest cultivator of the group of people from the World Clan had nothing to do, he was just blocking the members of the Fire Shrine.

“Seems like I underestimated the World Clan,” he mused. No wonder that they had let Lin Feng walk around in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds as a member of the World Clan. They had been prepared already.

The battle lasted for a long time before finally, the world lights flared a last time, dispersed, and the Saints of the World Clan reappeared.

“Daimon, let’s go!” said a strong cultivator of the World Clan. World lights surrounded Lin Feng and they disappeared.

Inside the other world, Lin Feng asked, “Did you kill all the Saints of the Fire Shrine?”

“Yes, we avoided killing just one or two, we killed them all at the same time. That way, when the Fire Shrine found out about it, it was already too late too come,” replied the Saint. Lin Feng was impressed. What a great strategy and result! It was difficult to kill everyone at the same time. The strong cultivators of the World Clan were enigmatic and unfathomable.

“But the Fire Shrine will know the World Clan killed their people, right?” asked Lin Feng.

“The issue is solved. Our strength resides in our hiding abilities. If we want to hide, even Shrines can’t find us,” said the Saint with a confident smile.

Lin Feng agreed. World strength was incredible. They could indeed hide easily. Before they even arrived, they had already gotten ready to kill Saints, otherwise, they wouldn’t have been able to plan everything.

“The World Clan hid for such a long time, I didn’t think you’d be so well prepared,” Lin Feng grinned.

Someone behind smiled at Lin Feng and said, “The World Clan had been hiding for such a long time, but what about the cultivators of the World Clan? Maybe they were in the outside

world, but didn't say they were from the World Clan."

Lin Feng nodded, "Maybe. Maybe you are famous. Maybe if you told people your names, they'd know you. But nobody understands the details and nobody knows your real social status. They just consider you members of the World Clan."

"The World Clan has been waiting for an opportunity for such a long time. I initially wanted to wait for Lang Ye to become strong enough, but then you showed up, so we didn't wait for him. And it's better; this way, he doesn't have so much pressure. He'll need more time to become like us and catch up."

---

What happened in the Void Phoenix Clan spread throughout the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds quickly. People used jade talismans to communicate, so the news spread quickly. In a few days, many people received messages about it.

It had been a very long time since something like that had happened in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Fire Shrine had lost a dozen Saints, including four low-level Saints. It was a disaster for them.

Some people started casting greedy eyes on the Void Phoenix Clan, since their leader had been killed.

And surprisingly, all of this had happened because of a young man who had shown up a few years before: Daimon from the World Clan! Back then, he had defeated Qiong Hai Ya by the Mo Jia's Battle Stage. A few years had passed, and then he had become much stronger than Qiong Hai Ya. Some people also said that he could kill Half-Saints alone, because he wasn't only a Saint, he was also a Great Deployment Master!

The Fire Shrine was furious. They sent some high-level Saints to the World Clan, but the World Clan had vanished. They were prepared, and the Fire Shrine couldn't find them anymore.

This time, not only the Fire Shrine was astonished, but the other Shrines, too.

---

In a hall of the Ice and Snow Shrine, someone wearing a snow robe said to someone else, “What do you think about the World Clan?”

“The Fire Shrine and the others forgot how the World Clan disappeared back then during their golden age. They all despised the World Clan, and the consequences were tragic.”

“So many years have passed, people from that era have all died, so people don’t know how strong the World Clan was during the golden era. The Fire Shrine seems to have completely forgotten about it!” said the other one, laughing. So many years had passed and the World Clan was starting to take their revenge. They wanted to destroy the Fire Shrine someday, too!

“I don’t think the World Clan can be that strong. They might be able to compete with some Shrines, but they can’t destroy a Shrine,” someone countered.

“Who knows? Everything is possible in this world. Daimon was a big surprise. Besides, there are geniuses in every generation, including the World Clan. A thousand years ago, where did that demon go? The mysterious Three Lives? Who was he? How strong was he?” asked another strong cultivator in a snow robe casually. Everybody remained silent and nodded. Anything was possible in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

“I have the feeling that the Imperial Court won’t be calm for much longer,” murmured a cultivator in a snowy robe. “The Destiny Wheel rotated; the Forbidden Person disappeared; Chu Chun Qiu is in the Supreme Animal World; Daimon went to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, came out alive and obtained the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation; the World Clan reappeared... how much longer will the continent be calm?”



---

The World Clan didn't know about what was going on there. They were in a dimly discernible mountain range surrounded by fog. It was a world in a world, the whole World Clan had moved there. The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was boundless, they had just chosen a random place. It was so vast, even the Shrines couldn't find them easily.

Lin Feng was in a world within a world. Next to him were two beautiful women: Jing and Qing Feng.

Jing knew that Daimon was Lin Feng now, and was astonished: no wonder that Qing Feng was drawn to him, he was so strong!

"How is the Void Phoenix Clan now?" asked Jing. It was her clan; even if they were cruel to her, she would miss them.

"The leader has been killed, many people died. But I released your father. The Void Phoenix Clan is going to go through many hardships. The Fire Shrine might take control over it," replied Lin Feng.

Jing remained silent. Indeed, the Void Phoenix Clan had accepted an alliance with a Shrine, it was a mistake.

"Daimon!" said someone at that moment. Lin Feng turned around.

"This time, the Fire Shrine won't let the World Clan off, do you intend to hide again?" asked Lin Feng.

The other smiled and shook his head, "No. We came out, and we won't continue hiding!"

When Lin Feng saw that smile, his heart twitched. He was amazed... how strong was the World Clan? And he didn't understand... if the World Clan could really compete with the Shrines, why did they do things slowly? Why did they do things that way at all?

# Chapter 2361: Godly Weapon Master

---

On that day, a guest came to the World Clan, and the old man of the World Clan brought him to see Lin Feng.

That young man was wearing clean white clothes with complex patterns that looked like constellations. His Qi made him look extraordinary.

“I’ve heard that Daimon has slaughtered Saints from the Fire Shrine recently. You must be Daimon,” the young man smiled at Lin Feng, without waiting for the old man to introduce them. He looked like a respected scholar.

“I didn’t slaughter Saints. I just managed to kill some people who had just become Saints, and it wasn’t easy. Who are you?” asked Lin Feng. He was very curious. Behind that young man were some of the Saints from the World Clan who had helped him kill the remaining Saints of the Fire Shrine. They seemed to respect the young man a lot, which made Lin Feng even more curious.

“Daimon, you’ve spent some time in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds already, you must have heard about His Holiness Ao Tian,” the old man of the World Clan smiled. Lin Feng was startled. He had read many books in the Fortune Shrine, and had obviously read about His Holiness Ao Tian.

This person had really reached the very, very top of cultivation. He was REALLY a peerless Saint, a king of kings, a sage of sages! But he didn’t like wealth and fame, and he rarely appeared in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. If he wanted to, he could easily create a Shrine!

And His Holiness Ao Tian had a nickname: The Godly Weapon Master. He was the only person in the whole world called that; he was the best weapon maker in the world!

“The Godly Weapon Master?” murmured Lin Feng, looking at

the old man.

“Indeed, His Holiness Ao Tian, the Godly Weapon Master,” the old man beamed.

The young man said to Lin Feng, “Master Ao Tian has three main disciples. They’re all weapon makers and they’re really good at it. They can make incredible and powerful high-level Saint’s Weapons. This young man is Weapon Master Kong’s disciple, Hua Yi. Weapon Master Kong is one of Master Ao Tian’s three disciples.”

“Weapon Master Kong...” Lin Feng had heard that name before. Kong had an extremely advanced knowledge of empty space strength. He could make incredible Saint’s Weapons using empty space strength.

His Holiness Ao Tian the Godly Weapon Master was almost considered a god, and his disciples had received all his teachings; they also didn’t appear often in the outside world. They all had an incredible prestige and influence, and could easily create an influential group... but the Godly Weapon Master didn’t want to. He preferred focusing on weapons. He wanted to surpass himself all the time, and create even more powerful weapons.

Lin Feng was surprised; what was this young man doing here? If he was here in the World Clan today, it proved one thing... the World Clan had never really disappeared, their members had just been traveling the world with different identities, not as members of the World Clan.

“I’ve heard great things of the Godly Weapon Master. If I have the opportunity, I’d love to meet him in person,” said Lin Feng, express his respect.

But Hua Yi shook his head and smiled wryly. “To tell you the truth, even I, as one of his disciples’ disciple, I’ve only seen him once. Seeing him is almost impossible.”

“The Godly Weapon Master wants to make the most powerful weapons in the world, so he is in constant need of the best materials in the world and is constantly traveling. Seeing him is not easy,” said the Saint of the World Clan. “Weapon Master Kong had Hua Yi come to the World Clan to bring us weapons. It’s already an incredible honor.”

“You’re too polite. And I’m just doing as my master asked me,” Hua Yi replied calmly. Even though he was a Saint and had an extraordinary social status, he wasn’t proud and arrogant at all, but rather easy-going.

“The Godly Weapon Master and all his disciples are very reliable, everybody knows that,” said the Saint of the World Clan. That was also one of the reasons why they had so much prestige and influence, because many people ordered Saint’s Weapons from them. It was mutually beneficial. When doing business, being reliable was essential. Therefore, even the most talented people in the world often gave the Godly Weapon Master their best materials as gifts. In return, he made weapons for them. They didn’t have to worry about him being greedy or anything.

“Come, let’s walk and chat at the same time.”

The group of people began a tour of the World Clan. Hua Yi said to Lin Feng, “Daimon, I’ve heard that when you killed the Saints of the Fire Shrine, you used some incredible deployment spells. You must be a Great Deployment Master already. There are many extremely strong cultivators in the world, but there are very few Great Deployment Masters, and deployment spells are necessary to make weapons. I’m sure you could make great weapons.”

“I am not a weapon maker. If I tried, it would have a negative impact on my cultivation,” Lin Feng demurred.

“The only time I met my teacher’s teacher, he said that on the path of cultivation, everything has the same root, and if you can return to the source, then you can do anything. Unfortunately, I’m

not smart enough. I didn't manage to grasp what he meant."

"Nobody can compete with the Godly Weapon Master in the world. He's a peerless cultivator, and incredibly strong," sighed the Saint of the World Clan "I suppose he means that weapon fabrication and cultivation are the same thing. Unfortunately, I am not talented enough."

"Maybe," said Hua Yi smiled. At that moment, the ground started trembling, as if an incredible strength was destroying the sky.

The Saints of the World Clan raised their heads, not surprised at all. "The members of the Fire Shrine are faster than we thought."

"Fire Shrine?" repeated Lin Feng, "The World Clan has incredible hiding abilities, how did the Fire Shrine find us?"

"If we didn't want them to find us, we would have naturally hidden better," said the Saint, smiling meaningfully. Lin Feng was surprised. The World Clan had done that on purpose?!

"Let's go. It's perfect timing anyway; the Saint's Weapons Hua Yi brought us today were precisely in prediction of the Fire Shrine's arrival. We'll try them out," said the Saint of the World Clan.

Fissures appeared in the sky. A group of people passed through and arrived in the foggy and misty world of mountains. The Saints of the Fire Shrine released a terrifying Qi, one of them prominently. It was like he could burn the whole world within seconds with the power of his mind.

The members of the Fire Shrine were shocked to see there was a Saint of the World Clan in front of them, looking quite calm. He was holding an Empty Space Picture Scroll. It seemed that the Empty Space Picture Scroll contained a world, with mountains and rivers inside. The most startling thing was that there was a strong cultivator inside, trying to destroy that world.

"What kind of weapon is that?" asked a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine coldly.

“You want to have a look?” the Saint of the World Clan smiled. He released world lights, which surrounded him. He immediately disappeared, as mountains and rivers appeared and turned into a world.

“Back!” shouted the intruders explosively. However, the Saint of the World Clan was standing at the top of a mountain and asked, “Where do you want to go?”

The area finished turning into a world, and world strength spread out quickly. The world turned into a gigantic black hole; the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine kept fleeing, but even with their speed, they could not escape, they could only tread space.

“Go in!” said the Saint of the World Clan coldly. World lights surrounded that cultivator, he was struggling to escape, but he was already in that picture scroll. He didn’t know he was inside that terrifying Saint’s Weapon already.

“Let’s go!” said the other members of the Fire Shrine. They all released fireballs.

“Since you came here, why would you want to leave?” asked the Saint of the World Clan with a cold smile. The world stretched across the sky and moved towards them faster than they could run. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine all pulled a long face.

The World Clan is already so strong, and they have such terrifying Saint’s Weapons, how fearsome!, thought that Saint. He continued running away while releasing fire strength around him. His fire was black and raged into the distance, and he finally managed to break free of the world lights.

The others wanted to escape, but the Saint of the World Clan wasn’t going to let them go, as his hand descended from the sky. He was a Saint, he was incredibly strong, the intruders couldn’t do anything but let go and let themselves get absorbed by the world of the Saint’s Weapon!

# Chapter 2362: Three Great Disciples

---

The members of the Fire Shrine had come and once again, it was a tragedy for them. Only one person managed to escape, a terrifyingly strong high-level Saint!

A breach slowly appeared in the world in front of him and the Saint of the Fire Shrine didn't dare to get close. He kept releasing fire strength.

"What a terrifying Saint's Weapon..." He was staring at the world, that Saint's Weapon was dreadful, especially when a high-level Saint used its full power. The Fire Shrine had lost once again. Their defeats were getting more and more tragic!

Not many people from the Fire Shrine could actually compete with such a terrifying enemy. Besides, was he the strongest cultivator of the World Clan? The World Clan had disappeared for so long, how come they were so strong?

"What do you intend to do with them?" demanded the Saint of the Fire Shrine, staring at the weapon. The Saints were still attacking, they didn't know they were in another world.

"So, this time, I just wanted to tell the Fire Shrine that even if you're strong and are considered extremely strong, you keep provoking the World Clan. You don't respect us, you even despise us. But, can you destroy us?" the Saint of the World Clan calmly. "Your Shrine lost some Saints, you lost face, you can't forget about it, so now you want to destroy us. But let me tell you, if the Fire Shrine continues trying to destroy the World Clan, they'll just bring about their own destruction. I'm going to send those people back, but I hope that in the future, you'll remember that."

The Saint of the World Clan waved his hand and suddenly, he flung the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine who were stuck in the weapon's world away. They were all stunned, but as soon as they came out, they released a terrifying fire, turning the sky red.

“Stop!” shouted the high-level Saint sharply. He glanced at them and said, “You’re shameless! Let’s go back!”

The Saints all pulled a long face. They were all incredible Saints, the World Clan had just humiliated and captured them. Now, they had to understand that if they continued provoking the World Clan, things would get worse.

“I hope we’ll meet again,” said the high-level Saint to the Saint of the World Clan. He rolled up his sleeves, and the Fire Shriners turned around and left.

—

Lin Feng watched all that, only a short time passed. Among the Saints of the World Clan who were next to him, one of them stepped forwards and smiled, “Teacher, will the Fire Shrine continue provoking us after what happened today?”

“I don’t know,” said the Saint, shaking his head. “However, I am convinced that unless they know how strong the World Clan really is, they won’t try anything risky. They already lost twice, they won’t lose thrice.”

“Indeed, they won’t offend us easily, I guess.”

“We relied on Saint’s Weapons this time. Hua Yi, please tell Weapon Master Kong that we’re very grateful,” said the Saint, smiling at Hua Yi. He was very satisfied with that Saint Weapon.

“We used your soul and vitality to make that weapon, that’s why it’s perfect for you. Besides, you also used World Dao, so the effects are perfect. Anyways, no need to mention it again,” replied Hua Yi affably.

“Haha, alright, thank you! Also, tell him that when he makes the sword, we’ll come personally as a sign of gratitude, no need for you to come to us.”

“It’s alright, he doesn’t like agitation, he prefers tranquility. I’ll tell you when we have finished,” said Hua Yi.



“No, no... Weapon Master Bing is a perfectionist. Only weapons can make him happy. I remember last time, when your teacher and I went to see his friend, I waited there for six months before he talked to me, he was too busy making a weapon,” said the high-level Saint of the World Clan. Everybody understood he admired Weapon Master Bing.

“You know how he is. My teacher is the same. Was my teacher annoyed?” said Hua Yi.

The Saint grinned. “Indeed, your teacher was angry for a long time.”

“Haha, my teacher mentioned it a few days ago again in front of his friend,” said Hua Yi, shaking his head. “Alright, we’re good for now. I’ll go back and tell my teacher everything.”

“You should stay in the World Clan for a few days, we’re happy to have you around.”

“It’s alright. I don’t know what kind of schedule my teacher prepared for me, so I better go back,” demurred Hua Yi.

“Alright, next time then,” conceded the Saint of the World Clan politely.

“Yes, we shall meet again soon,” said Hua Yi with a wave. He smiled at Lin Feng and said, “Brother Daimon, when my teacher’s colleague makes the weapon, you’ll come too.”

“If I can, I will,” Lin Feng agreed. Hua Yi rose up in the air and departed.

The high-level Saint watched him leave and whispered, “The Godly Weapon Master’s grand-disciples are all so free and unrestrained.”

“Master, is Weapon Master Bing going to make weapons in front of everybody?” Lin Feng asked. That was what he had just heard. Weapon Master Bing was one of the Godly Weapon Master’s disciples, and if he made weapons in public, many people would

want to attend.

“Weapon Master Bing is the weakest of the three disciples, but he’s also the most attentive one. He only thinks about weapons in life. He is very focused and meticulous, a perfectionist. He prefers making swords, spears, and halberds above all, sharp weapons. Weapon Master Kong is the second elder, he controls empty space energy, he’s very strong. The third one is Weapon Master Ling, he chose the path of spirituality. He’s the most talented of the three. Initially, the Godly Weapon Master just wanted two disciples, but after having recruited Weapon Master Bing and Weapon Master Kong, he realized that Weapon Master Ling was extraordinarily talented, so he recruited him as well.”

“At the top of the hierarchy, it’s not a secret that he’s going to make weapons in public. People from the lower tiers of society will never know about it, though.”

Lin Feng nodded. He had heard of the three disciples, too. Weapon Master Bing was an insane weapon maker, indeed. His spears were extremely sharp and quick. He was a perfectionist, and couldn’t stand it if his weapons had a single flaw. Many people had to be perfectionists to reach such levels.

“I’m a bit surprised,” mused Lin Feng. He didn’t know about it because he wasn’t high enough in terms of social status. Very few people knew about it in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“He has his own reasons. We’ll see. In the world, there are many strong cultivators, and not just enemies, there are friends too, so it makes life a bit easier,” said the high-level Saint to Lin Feng. Indeed, Lin Feng had a Forbidden Body, the Shrines couldn’t learn about that.

“Even though the Shrines have a very high social status in this world, it doesn’t mean that they’re invincible and that they can do whatever they want. They’re also cautious. There are some people they don’t dare offend. If you could appear in public with the

people the Shrines don't dare offend, then they wouldn't dare do anything to you, either."

"I understand," Lin Feng nodded. The Saint was teaching him the social codes of the highest parts of society, and the Godly Weapon Master was probably someone the Shrines all feared!

# Chapter 2363: Provocation

---

As the World Clan expected, the Fire Shrine calmed down.

The different groups of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds finally realized that the World Clan was truly rising again. They had fought a few times, and amazed everyone.

But the World Clan remained indifferent, as if their achievements were normal.

—

Two people left the World Clan and traveled east.

In the eastern part of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there was a city called Qing Ming City. It stood alone in a boundless area, and even though their territory was gigantic, there wasn't many people there, and few people traveled there. However, many strong cultivators of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds admired the city because there was a very famous person there: Weapon Master Bing, the Godly Weapon Master's disciple!

Weapon Master Bing was the symbol of that city. Many people were traveling to Qing Ming City, they were all extremely strong and extraordinary. They wanted to see Weapon Master Bing fabricate Saint's Weapons!

When ordinary weapon makers made weapons, people weren't interested in watching, but Weapon Master Bing was the Godly Weapon Master's disciple. He was very famous. He had made a few famous weapons: Supreme Upekṣā, Kasyapa, Celestial Mithyā, and so on. They were all famous and terrifying cultivators wielded them. He was a truly legendary weapon maker.

In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, many high-level Saints ordered weapons from him. The Godly Weapon Master's three disciples were all experts in their field, at the very

top.

---

There was a dimly discernible Qi in one of Qing Ming City's districts. There were many restaurants, tea houses, and bars here, however, it was very calm. This place was near the Weapon Master Bing's territory. Lin Feng was seated in a teahouse with the high-level Saint of the World Clan, Gu Zhu. Only Gu Zhu and Lin Feng had come from the World Clan.

Lin Feng glanced around, noting everybody around looked extraordinary. Those people usually never appeared in the outside world. When seeing them, one wouldn't know who they were, but when hearing their names, one knew. For example, Gu Zhu, he wasn't unknown in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he was actually very famous. Many, many people had heard of Mister Gu Zhu Xue, but very few people had seen him.

Gu Zhu had been famous for a long time in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, but because he hadn't appeared for a long time, many people didn't recognize him anymore. Even when he fought against the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine, they didn't recognize him.

"Brother Gu!" someone called out. Lin Feng and Gu Zhu turned around and saw a few people. The leader of the group was wearing a robe similar to the one Hua Yi was wearing when he paid them a visit. Next to him was a sword cultivator, and Hua Yi was there, too.

"Brother Kong!" responded Gu Zhu, standing up and smiling. This was Weapon Master Kong, the Godly Weapon Master's second disciple.

In the distance, many people put their tea cups down and stood up as a sign of respect.

"No need to be so polite, everybody. I also came to watch my

fellow disciple today. Make yourself at home,” said Weapon Master Kong to the crowd.

“Being able to see Weapon Master Bing and Weapon Master Kong today is an incredible honor,” spoke up someone, smiling before sitting down again. Lin Feng had the biggest smile when he saw the crowd. This weapon maker was incredible.

Weapon Master Kong sat down next to Gu Zhu and smiled, “I don’t know what he wants to do this, why he invited people to come and watch.”

“Weapon Master Bing must have an idea,” Gu Zhu smiled. Then, he raised his head and looked at the sword cultivator next to Weapon Master Kong. He smiled and said, “If I’m not mistaken, this must be Master Kasyapa’s disciple!”

“Indeed, Kasyapa’s descendant. Not many people know about Brother Tian Ruo, he seldom appears in the outside world,” confirmed Weapon Master Kong. Lin Feng was astonished. That sword cultivator was extremely young, and Weapon Master Kong called him Brother! It meant that he had a social status equivalent to Gu Zhu’s. Of course, he looked young, but he might be thousands of years old.

“Kasyapa, Kasyapa’s sword!” Lin Feng suddenly remembered the ancient remains in Qi Tian Holy Town. He had found Qin Shan there back then...

“Master Tian Ruo, I’ve heard of a Kasyapa’s sword in Dark Clouds, is it related to you?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious.

“That was my elder fellow disciple. I’ve never seen him, but our teacher said he was incredible, a very good sword cultivator. Unfortunately, he didn’t do things properly. He left, he wanted to create his own group, and in the end, he died abroad.”

When Lin Feng heard that reply, he was astonished. It meant that the real Kasyapa was their teacher and was extremely old, it

also meant that Weapon Master Bing knew him a long time before since he had made a sword for him. It also meant that Weapon Master Bing was very old.

“Your teacher, Old Master Kasyapa didn’t send anyone to investigate his death?” asked Lin Feng.

“Why would he? Everybody can choose their own path, they just have to bear the responsibilities,” replied Tian Ruo Jian. Lin Feng sighed. At such cultivation levels, people were different.

“How lively. So many strong cultivators,” said someone at that moment. Lin Feng was stupefied, he slowly turned around and frowned. A few people had arrived, one of them was a young man who looked valiant and heroic. His Qi was extraordinary.

“Zhe Tian!” Lin Feng was astonished. Zhe Tian was there in Qing Ming City?! He was there to watch Weapon Master Bing?!

That little boy is becoming incredibly strong really quickly. He’s already a Saint Emperor. Wow, thought Lin Feng. He was satisfied, though. Zhe Tian was progressing faster than he had. Lin Feng looked at the people next to Zhe Tian. They were all Saints, but Lin Feng didn’t know where they were from and why Zhe Tian was with them.

“Of course, Little Brother Zhe Tian, Weapon Master Bing is the Godly Weapon Master’s disciple. He’s a symbol in this world. The occasions to see them at work are rare,” said someone next to Zhe Tian with a smile.

“Indeed,” said Zhe Tian. He looked happy. It was great to be able to experience such things!

“Let’s find a place to sit!” said the strong cultivator next to Zhe Tian. They went to a table, they were about to sit when someone said aggressively, “Saints can come here, people who aren’t Saints yet should piss off. We don’t have unlimited seats.”

Zhe Tian looked over at him and smiled. He had been traveling a

lot these years and he had gone through a lot, he didn't get angry as easily as back in the days, especially on Weapon Master Bing's territory.

"I came because I admire Weapon Master Bing. I came with some Masters. If there is another place for me to sit, I'll go and sit there," replied Zhe Tian neither haughtily nor humbly.

"I told you to piss off!" said that person suddenly. The Saint's Qi was terrifying. Lin Feng frowned. Saints had to be controlled, few people were like that. Why was he provoking Zhe Tian?



# Chapter 2364: Revelation

---

The person next to Zhe Tian grunted coldly and said, “Your Excellency, you’re going a bit too far, it’s not your territory here.”

“Watch your words,” said that person coldly. A terrifying Saint’s strength oppressed Zhe Tian, which made him groan. He released Qi to protect himself, a golden armor appearing around him.

That Saint released empty space strength to surround Zhe Tian, Zhe Tian was stupefied, the strength took his away very quickly. The two Saints with Zhe Tian turned around and said, “Zhe Tian, since they don’t welcome you, you can leave.”

“Alright,” said Lin Zhe Tian nodding. Then, he left quickly. He wasn’t strong enough to be there, and he knew it.

“Go!” said that person, releasing Celestial Dao, a hand descending from the sky.

Zhe Tian pulled a long face. He hadn’t thought a Saint would bully him like this...

Zhe Tian condensed cosmic energies and a dazzling pure light appeared in his hand and streaked across the sky, ending in an explosion. The gigantic empty space hand broke apart and bombarded Zhe Tian. He crashed onto the ground and coughed up blood, but he was still standing steadily.

“He was just a Celestial Emperor, but he has a particular strength which makes him look like a Saint Emperor.”

“Not bad at all, that young man,” murmured Weapon Master Kong, “Even I thought he was a Saint Emperor. But even if he isn’t, he resisted a Saint’s attack, impressive. He’s definitely as strong as a Saint Emperor.”

Lin Feng nodded. He didn’t intervene because he wanted to see how strong his son was, but Zhe Tian had to be quite strong anyway, he was Lin Feng’s child, after all!

At that moment, the Saint who had just attacked walked towards Zhe Tian, looking at him coldly. Zhe Tian raised his head and looked back at him in a cold way.

“It’s Weapon Master Bing’s territory here, so I can’t kill you. But since you dared offend me, I will cripple your cultivation,” said the man coldly.

Lin Feng stood up and walked towards Zhe Tian, glancing at the two Saints who had come with Zhe Tian; they acted as if all this had nothing to do with them, which infuriated him.

“Since you know that it’s Weapon Master Bing’s territory here, why do you provoke people who didn’t do anything to you? Why do you want to cripple his cultivation?” Lin Feng interjected calmly.

The Saint glanced at him and smiled thinly. “Daimon from the World Clan, all this has nothing to do with you. Don’t get involved.”

“I don’t think Weapon Master Bing likes being disturbed,” said Lin Feng, ignoring him.

“I told you, it has nothing to do with you,” repeated that guy.

Lin Feng’s eyes suddenly turned pitch-black, a cage appeared and that Saint appeared inside.

“Die!” said Lin Feng. A destructive death Celestial Dao emerged from the Cage of Darkness, the Saint suddenly felt confused and panic-stricken. Why was Daimon so aggressive? Daimon was trying to kill him!

“Stop.” shouted a few people coldly. A few figures flickered. Empty space Qi surrounded Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng took a step forwards, a pitch-black vortex appeared, waves swept out and carried everything away. Lin Feng detonated the vortex and explosions rent the air. The Saint inside the cage exploded... but his soul was allowed to survive.

“Argh!” That Saint’s body had been easily destroyed, and he was furious.

But Lin Feng said calmly, “Since you don’t care about disturbing Weapon Master Bing’s cultivation, I am convinced nobody minds me getting involved.”

Lin Feng saw some people moving towards him, many Saints surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng frowned. Those who had come with Zhe Tian smiled coldly.

“Eh?” Lin Feng had a bad premonition, he heard one of the people who encircled him say, “As expected, like father, like son. Us members of the Fire Shrine knew it!”

Lin Feng was astonished. The man then said, “Lin Feng, you’re great at hiding and you progressed very quickly.”

“Lin Feng?” Many people looked astonished and excited. Even if those people were Saints, they had all heard about Lin Feng, because back then, the Fire Shrine was looking for him everywhere since people suspected that he was a Forbidden Person. But they were still stunned; Lin Feng was Daimon from the World Clan?

So he was the one who had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds back then? To ordinary people, a long time had passed since the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. For these Saints, it felt like a few seconds only. Now that guy had already transcended worldliness and attained holiness? He was the one who had slaughtered Saints in the Void Phoenix Clan? How fearsome!

“Father!” Zhe Tian looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng’s Qi changed, his face changed as he reverted back to Lin Feng. The Shrines had joined hands to attack Zhe Tian, which meant they had already guessed the truth.

Lin Feng said to Zhe Tian, “Zhe Tian, people’s minds are unfathomable. In the future, be careful before trusting people.”

“I understand, Father,” Zhe Tian nodded. Then, he looked at the people with whom he had come and said, “You got close to me on purpose, to use me. Who are you?”

“Empty Space Shrine,” said one of them coldly.

Zhe Tian said coldly, “You’re from a Shrine and you resort to such despicable methods? If he hadn’t been my father, you would have crippled my cultivation groundlessly? Don’t you have families?”

“You’re not qualified to speak with me,” said one of them. Then, he looked at Gu Zhu and said, “The World Clan and Lin Feng have established connections. We don’t mind, we are also willing to be friends with the World Clan and forget our tensions. However, you can’t get involved in Lin Feng and the Fire Shrine’s issues.”

He feared Gu Zhu, especially since Weapon Master Kong was next to Gu Zhu at that moment.

Gu Zhu looked at Weapon Master Kong. Weapon Master Kong said indifferently, “You can do whatever you wish outside, but here is my fellow disciple’s cultivation territory, we will not tolerate such behavior here. So please stop for now. What you do outside has nothing to do with me.”

The members of the Shrines were stunned. Weapon Master Kong didn’t give them any room to maneuver by saying that. They had to stop now, and give him face.

“Weapon Master Kong, the issue with Lin Feng is of utter importance, please allow us some latitude,” said a strong cultivator.

Weapon Master Kong frowned and said, “You didn’t understand what I just said?”

That person looked angry and said, “Since it’s that way, we’ll stop for now. When Weapon Master Bing is done making the weapon, we’ll take care of him!”

They all left and went to different places in town. They didn't intend to let Lin Feng off, so they were watching the exits.

Both Lin Feng and Daimon were supposed to die. In the end, they were one person, even better! It'd be easier to kill him!

Lin Feng and Zhe Tian walked back to Weapon Master Kong. Lin Feng nodded at Weapon Master Kong and said, "Thank you very much, Master."

"I don't know many people in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, especially younger people. But I've heard about Lin Feng and Daimon. I never thought you were the same person, and your son is surprisingly strong. Maybe you will both become very powerful and influential in the Continent of the Nine Clouds," said Weapon Master Kong.

"I really don't deserve so much praise, Master."

"It's just the truth," said Weapon Master Kong, shaking his head.

Tian Ruo Jian spoke up, "Indeed, it's very possible. I'm sure you have a Forbidden Body now, so it's not surprising that everybody wants to kill you. You're in danger."

Tian Ruo Jian talked straightforwardly. Lin Feng really was in danger, the Shrines wanted to kill him.

"I understand," Lin Feng nodded. Now that the Shrines had recognized him, he was really in danger. Even with the World Clan, he had too many enemies.

"You should stay here for a while," Weapon Master Kong smiled. Lin Feng was startled at the offer. He looked at Weapon Master Kong's smile and nodded. Weapon Master Kong wanted to help him!

# Chapter 2365: Gathering of Strong Cultivators

---

Lin Feng and Weapon Master Kong were together. The Shrines couldn't attack him, but they didn't intend to let him leave alive.

Everybody was extraordinary there. They knew that if Lin Feng was a Forbidden Person, he could pose a threat to them. He would definitely destroy some Shrines.

More and more people arrived and sat down calmly. They just chatted.

At that moment, in the distance, a figure appeared. The members of a specific Shrine all stood up and looked at that person respectfully.

Weapon Master Kong slowly turned around and looked at that person. That person looked at them and smiled., "Weapon Master Kong, Tian Ruo Jian, Gu Zhu!"

"Wu Ming!" Weapon Master Kong and the others seemed surprised. The Empty Space Shrine had made him come personally.

"Wu Ming from the Empty Space Shrine," repeated many people around. They were all astonished, their hearts pounding. There were so many extremely strong people here...

Weapon Master Kong, Wu Ming, and Tian Ruo Jian were very famous among Saints, people who weren't Saints never had the opportunity to see them.

Wu Ming smiled at those people and nodded. He looked at Lin Feng and smiled sharply. "Back then, when all the Shrines wanted to kill you, they should have done it. Trying to see if you were determined, if you were really the Forbidden Person, etc. is boring. Killing you directly would have been much easier. Now it's getting more and more complicated."

Lin Feng was grim. This man was referring to the first time when they had surrounded the Fortune Shrine. The Fire Shrine's leader could have easily killed him back then, but he hadn't because the leader of the Fortune Shrine had said that he would kill their geniuses, too. So, at that moment, the Shrines had decided to establish a strategy first.

Of course, if the leader of the Fire Shrine had known that Lin Feng would become so strong so quickly, he would have done much more to deal with Lin Feng earlier. He would have put the lives of the Fire Shrine's geniuses at stake without hesitation to get rid of Lin Feng.

Now, Lin Feng was a genius difficult to get rid of. He was a Saint, and he was started to make connections at that level. The geniuses the Fire Shrine could have been sacrificed to get rid of Lin Feng were much weaker than him, so they would have been worth sacrificing.

"Wu Ming, you better not act blindly without thinking!" said Gu Zhu. His figure flickered, and he was in front of Lin Feng. Lin Feng was startled. Gu Zhu was cautious, he had anticipated something could happen. If Wu Ming was as strong as Gu Zhu, he could indeed kill Lin Feng easily.

"Gu Zhu, you know I want to kill him, and nobody can prevent me from doing so," said Wu Ming in a cold and detached way. He took another step forward, but at that moment, sword strength suddenly surrounded him.

Wu Ming looked over at Tian Ruo Jian, who was still seated there. Ruo Jian said icily, "We're near Weapon Master Bing's cultivation territory. Weapon Master Bing doesn't want to be disturbed. He was disturbed a moment ago, it's not going to happen a second time!"

Tian Ruo Jian's teacher was the old Kasyapa. Kasyapa and Weapon Master Bing used to have excellent relations, as he had

made Kasyapa's weapons. Many years had passed and Kasyapa had become a peerless Saint. Weapon Master Bing was a high-level Saint and focused on weapon fabrication, but even if it was that way, Tian Ruo Jian was a high-level Saint and had an immense respect for him, he even called him Master!

When Weapon Master Bing became famous, many of the people who were present here weren't even born, including him. Weapon Master Bing had been stuck at that cultivation level for a very long time already.

Wu Ming looked at Tian Ruo Jian and released energy that filled the air. But at the same time, his energies were being oppressed by Tian Ruo Jian's sword energies. The atmosphere became oppressive.

Suddenly, the ground shook and a terrifying Fire intent filled the air as a figure descended from the sky.

"Qiong Lin!" Everybody looked at Qiong Lin, he was from the Fire Shrine. Initially, those people had come to watch Weapon Master Bing make a sword, they hadn't thought the situation would change because of Lin Feng's presence.

"Even if you're Kasyapa's disciple, you can't act arrogantly in front of Shrines' members," stated Qiong Lin indifferently. Even though he was releasing fire strength, his voice sounded ice cold.

Tian Ruo Jian didn't say anything, he put his hand on the handle of his sword. Actions were more important than words.

"The Fire Shrine continues acting that arrogantly?" someone laughed. That person appeared halfway up in the air. Qiong Lin and the others didn't seem surprised.

"The Diviner!" Lin Feng had met the Diviner in the small world long ago. The Diviner had given Lin Feng the impression he was enigmatic and unfathomable. He had never shown how strong he was. But if he was as strong as Gu Zhu and the others, back then,



he would have probably arrived much faster when the Fire Shrine was chasing him.

However, when Qiong Lin and the others saw him, Lin Feng noticed, from their facial expressions, that they were very cautious in his presence.

“Mara-Deva, your real body is done practicing cultivation? You’re not qualified to stand before me, am I wrong?” said Qiong Lin indifferently. Lin Feng was astonished. Real body?

Had the Diviner practiced a cloning technique as well? Had Lin Feng always met the Diviner’s clones?

“What do you think?” asked the Diviner calmly. Qiong Lin frowned and stared at him as if he were trying to see through him.

“Interesting. Wait until Weapon Master Bing is done making the weapon. We’ll check that out,” said Wu Ming indifferently. He looked at Lin Feng again, who had the impression he was going to be absorbed into an empty space. Indeed, the atmosphere was dividing. His body was being ripped apart as well!

Sword strength suddenly filled the air.

“Come on, I was just joking!” said Wu Ming, bursting into laughter. Then, he turned around and glanced at the members of the Empty Space Shrine. He walked towards them and sat down as if nothing had happened. Lin Feng felt normal again, except he was now actually covered with cold sweat. High-level Saints were terrifyingly strong. Like Gu Zhu, Wu Ming had become famous a long time before.

Wu Ming’s power is disintegration, he can create another space using empty space strength and make half of someone’s body appear in that space while leaving the other part in the current world. That way, he rips people apart and kills them. What a terrifying power, thought Lin Feng. Wu Ming could kill low-level Saints in a millisecond with the power of his mind!

Saints were already powerful cultivators, but still, there were huge differences between them, too.

“How noisy. After my fellow disciple is done making the sword, it seems like there will be battles,” said Weapon Master Kong with a smile. Two high-level Saints from two Shrines wanted to kill Lin Feng, and some people who were on Lin Feng’s side, such as Mara-Deva from the Fortune Shrine, were there. More people from Shrines were going to arrive. It was definitely an incredible meeting!

“Many friends are here already,” said Tian Ruo Jian indifferently. He smiled and said, “Weapon Master Bing is going to make a sword, even the Supreme Animal World wanted to see it. Great!”

Everybody gazed into the distance when he said that. They saw two people. They were wearing dragon robes with dragon patterns on them. The dragons on the patterns were actually spitting out smoke. Their Qi was extraordinary and aggressive.

“People from the Dragon Clan?” whispered Weapon Master Kong.

Tian Ruo Jian smiled, “Dragon Clan and if I’m not mistaken, Roc Clan.”

The crowd looked higher up in the sky; there was someone wearing a golden robe, his expression sharp. Everything about that roc was sharp.

“A king amongst rocs, a Great Oriental Greenfinch roc. They want my fellow disciple to make a sword for them, but he never agreed!” said Weapon Master Bing indifferently. Lin Feng was amazed. The Great Oriental Greenfinch roc wanted a sword? Interesting...

“Weapon Master Bing is here,” said Tian Ruo Jian at that moment, looking off into the distance. There was an white-haired

old man there, his hair was messy. He looked like an ordinary old man who didn't take care of himself. It was difficult to imagine that he was Weapon Master Bing, the one who had made Kasyapa's sword, a terrifying Saint's Weapon!

# Chapter 2366: Making a Sword

---

Tian Ruo Jian always called Weapon Master Bing “Master”. He respected him a lot. Lin Feng knew that that old man had lived for a very long time, since he had made Kasyapa’s sword. Most people who were here were juniors for Weapon Master Bing.

Weapon Master Bing looked ordinary, but it was the kind of ordinary which left people speechless and captivated. He looked like nature itself.

Nobody had any doubts about his strength. He was an expert at making weapons, but he was also an incredible fighter, even though he rarely spent time with cultivators. And even if he wasn’t a strong fighter, he could crush almost any high-level Saint with his weapons.

Weapon Master Bing walked over and stopped in front of the crowd, He looked at them and in particular at Weapon Master Kong.

“Fellow disciple!” said Weapon Master Kong nodding at Weapon Master Bing.

“Master!” said Tian Ruo Jian respectfully.

“How’s your teacher?” Weapon Master Bing asked Tian Ruo Jian.

“He’s fine. He couldn’t come, so he told me to say hello!” replied Tian Ruo Jian.

Weapon Master Bing nodded, “At a certain cultivation level, when you thought you’d reach the end, you have the impression you’re starting all over again.”

Tian Ruo Jian was surprised and smiled, “My teacher says cultivation never ends, and each day is a fresh new start.”

“Right, he’s a cultivation maniac,” agreed Weapon Master Bing.

He looked around at the crowd and said, “In the last few years, a friend brought me some materials, I’ve been gathering other materials too. Now, I finally have everything I need to make a sword. I’m happy that you all came to watch me make it.”

“We are the ones who are happy, it is an incredible honor to be able to watch you make weapons!” said someone. Everybody nodded agreed. They all felt incredibly honored. It was a rare opportunity!

“If anything happens during the process, if I make any mistake or if I don’t do well enough, I hope that everybody will help me,” said Weapon Master Bing. The crowd frowned. If he made a mistake or didn’t do well enough?

His teacher was the best weapon maker in the world, and he was incredibly good at it too, how could he say such a thing?

Maybe Weapon Master Bing wants to try and make a weapon he’s never made before. He’s worried and feels pressured, thought the crowd.

“Weapon Master Bing is worried, what kind of material could his friend have brought to him? And what kind of sword does he want to make?”

“Maybe he wants to break his record.”

The crowd was impatient to see what kind of weapon Weapon Master Bing would make!

“Everybody, please move back, I want to start,” said Weapon Master Bing. Everybody stood up and withdrew to a safe distance. Weapon Master Bing was alone in the middle very quickly.

Weapon Master Kong said, “His Qi has become even more incredible, it’s the first time I have seen him like that. He has probably been getting prepared for a very long time.”

“Master, does he want to break his record?” asked Tian Ruo Jian.

Weapon Master Kong nodded, “Yes, and it’s probably related to the materials he has.”

Weapon Master Bing took a step forwards and a terrifying fire appeared, an incredible Celestial Dao filling the air. It was very oppressive.

A terrifying fireball appeared in the sky and descended rapidly. A crater which was several hundreds of meters wide appeared, celestial fires burning inside.

The deep pit became dark, the fire became black, black smoke appeared.

“Incredible, he makes weapons alone. He’s also a Great Deployment Master, without a doubt.” whispered Lin Feng. Weapon Master Bing had also cast a mighty deployment spell, he was getting ready.

“How strong. Father, that guy is terrifying,” said Zhe Tian. An incredible oppressive energy kept appearing in the sky. It was breathtaking.

“Of course, he’s famous everywhere in the world,” Lin Feng replied. Weapon Master Bing was standing before the fire Celestial Dao, composing himself.

He had to do everything perfectly to make a perfect weapon. His fire, the materials, and his deployment spell had to be perfect.

----

Nobody was flighty and impetuous in the crowd, they all watched calmly. He prepared the fire for three days straight. After that, the atmosphere went completely dark. The crowd looked at the sky, and were astonished to see it was on fire.

Weapon Master Bing finally started moving. He took a step forwards and stretched out his hands. In the blink of an eye, terrifying corpses appeared above the deep pit of flames.

“Those are... Saint’s bodies!” The crowd was astonished, so many Saint’s bodies! The corpses were roaring in a thundering rage, they still contained Will.

“Those corpses are Weapon Master Bing’s materials, who gave them to him?” The crowd was shaking. Weapon Master Bing created many fire chains above the deep pit, catching the corpses. The bodies roared angrily. Some people’s heads started aching. They had the impression they were carrying the whole world on their shoulders, their heads felt heavy.

In order to use those bodies to make a sword, he needs to oppress their Wills. How difficult. No wonder he’s very cautious, thought Weapon Master Kong. He hadn’t thought of this...

Weapon Master Bing took another step forward and an object appeared in his hand. He threw it into the fire, and the fire went into a frenzy.

Weapon Master Bing jumped into the fire, raising a hammer and pounding the object. Clanging sounds echoed in the air.

——

“How resistant!” The crowd was shaking. He kept hammering the object unceasingly and quickly for forty-nine days. The crowd finally started seeing the rudiments of a sword. It looked illusionary.

“A sword embryo!” Lin Feng was calmly watching. Weapon Master Bing’s way of making weapons was different from the Gold Fire Tower’s way. He looked more relaxed, but his movements were all extremely precise. At that moment, he was using his fingers to carve marks on the sword. Notches appeared on the sword.

“Go in!” shouted Weapon Master Bing, raising his hand. Instantly, the shackles brought the corpses above the sword’s embryo, and the corpses fused together with it.

“The Saints’ bodies melted completely! He’s even making their Wills fuse together with the sword!” Drops of Will fell onto the sword’s embryo. The embryo was trembling with every drop.

Weapon Master Bing was standing there, his soul left his body and went into the sword’s embryo, he used his soul to oppress the Wills. His corporeal body was just standing there motionlessly.

“What an incredible guy! If someone attacked his body with surprise, it would be tragic for him!” Weapon Master Bing was in a trance!

After melting the bodies and putting them into the sword’s embryo, the embryo disappeared in the fire. It shook more and more violently. Weapon Master Bing’s soul reappeared. When his soul came out, an endless number of chains surrounded the sword and lifted it up into the air. Did the sword want to leave?

“Where are you going?!” shouted Weapon Master Bing coldly. Everything suddenly stopped, his body shook, and he grabbed the sword with his fingers, blood splashed and penetrated into the sword. This time, he used his own blood to carve marks on the sword. At the same time, the chains were still constricting it.

“Stop!” shouted Weapon Master Bing. He sealed something in the sword with his blood. Stars appeared in the space around, he made some hand seals with his hands, and they penetrated into the sword. The flames continued refining it.

Weapon Master Bing raised his head and took a deep breath, then spat out Celestial Dao strength towards the sword, penetrating into it.

After a long time, the sword, which had calmed down a little, shook again. It was going insane, but at that moment, terrifying Kalpa lights descended from the sky.

The crowd was trembling... how powerful was that Celestial Kalpa strength going to be!?



# Chapter 2367: Tian Ruo Jian

---

An explosive pitch-black strength rolled out, and a dark red color appeared, hurting people's eyes.

What a powerful Kalpa cloud, it contains an overwhelming strength, thought the crowd, watching the violent windstorm in the sky. They were all wary; if that tornado reached them, their souls could explode!

Weapon Master Bing raised his head and looked at the sky, retreating quickly. A dark red Kalpa cloud appeared, seemingly ready to explode. It descended from the sky in a flash and struck the sword violently.

The sword hummed. However, the cloud didn't stop moving, it released more destructive strength and continued attacking the sword.

"Nine times nine, Kalpa which consumes Yang energy!" intoned Weapon Master Kong. The terrifying dark red Kalpa strength turned into eighty-one parts, terrifying deep pits appeared, bright meter-long tips appearing at the top of it. They absorbed and spat out dazzling lights, which contained an intense Will.

"Medium-level weapon, what is he doing?" whispered Weapon Master Kong, looking astonished.

Weapon Master Bing called out to the crowd, "The sword contains all those Saints' Wills, I can't handle it alone, everybody, help me! Put your strength inside. Let's see if we can control the Will!"

Weapon Master Bing immediately started helping. The crowd was startled, but started released a terrifying Qi. Celestial Dao rolled out and roared. Now that they had released energies onto that sword, they could sense its movements even better!

Lin Feng released God strength and forced it into the sword.

However, when his God strength penetrated into the sword, it seemed tiny. The Will wouldn't submit to his God strength. No wonder Weapon Master Bing couldn't control it. That sword was supposed to be terrifyingly strong!

Weapon Master Bing wanted to make the best sword possible. The Supreme Upekṣā was made to attack souls, The Kasyapa was supposed to attack using speed strength, making people lose awareness of space and time. Now, he wanted to make a sword which contained all those Saints' Will, so he tried to make a pure weapon, and not a sword which contained all sorts of strength in a chaotic manner. He wanted to use the Will of all those Saints in the best way.

Lin Feng's God strength was made of millions of sorts of intent. It was good, but the problem was that it was too weak, if Weapon Master Bing used it, he still wouldn't be able to control the sword.

"Eh?" At that moment, Weapon Master Bing sensed something. His strength was also in the sword and he was paying attention to all the strengths penetrating into the sword. He noticed that a few terrifying kinds of intent could suppress the intents of others, or even destroy them... but Weapon Master Bing didn't want to see that. He also found out there was a relatively weak intent inside which had been created using myriad sorts of intent, but it was just too weak.

Weapon Master Bing put his own strength around that power, and looked for the owner.

Lin Feng frowned, someone was chasing him. He recalled his God strength and sensed a strength surround and constrict him.

"Who?!" said Lin Feng coldly. He turned around and noticed that Weapon Master Bing was looking at him. He was surprised; the one who was chasing him was Weapon Master Bing?

Weapon Master Bing nodded at Lin Feng and recalled his strength, putting it back in the sword. He wanted to find someone

strong enough. After a short time, he looked disappointed, as nobody was left. Those people could only oppress the strength, but that's not what he wanted. He didn't want to oppress it, he wanted to modify it. He wanted to use that strength and turn it into a terrifying and explosive strength. Unfortunately, these people didn't understand much about that.

Only Weapon Master Kong could understand Weapon Master Bing. After all, they were both incredible weapon manufacturers.

That's why it's only a medium-level item. He hasn't made the sword take shape, thought Weapon Master Kong.

Weapon Master Bing said, "Alright, everybody, recall your strength."

The people recalled their power. The sword started trembling again, he couldn't control it anymore.

The crowd looked at Weapon Master Bing, not knowing what he was thinking. Weapon Master Bing released a terrifying strength which surrounded the sword and constricted it before dragging it towards himself.

"Little boy, come here!" Weapon Master Bing said to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was stunned.

Weapon Master Kong looked at Lin Feng and smiled, "Lin Feng, he thinks highly of you, it's a very good sign. It's fate!"

"Lin Feng, not bad, Master Bing chose you!" said Tian Ruo Jian, smiling and slapping Lin Feng's shoulder. Indeed, everyone here was much older than Lin Feng. When they became famous, Lin Feng wasn't even born yet.

Gu Zhu smiled, his eyes twinkling: it was a sign of destiny. Weapon Master Bing had chosen Lin Feng!

"Hurry up and go!" said Gu Zhu, smiling at Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded and flashed forwards.

At that moment, Wu Ming's figure flickered and he moved towards Lin Feng, shouting, "Weapon Master Bing, Lin Feng is someone my Shrine wants to kill, leave him!"

"Eh?" Weapon Master Bing glanced at Wu Ming. He didn't look angry, but said in a cold way, "So what? It has nothing to do with me. Little boy, come here!"

"Alright," said Lin Feng, and he continued moving forwards.

Wu Ming said, "Since you insist, don't blame me for attacking!" He continued moving towards Lin Feng, who sensed a terrifying Celestial Dao surround him.

Weapon Master Bing frowned. A deadly sword strength suddenly filled the air. Tian Ruo Jian was holding a thrumming sword.

"Insolent!" Tian Ruo Jian's figure flickered and he appeared directly in front of Lin Feng. An invisible and intangible sword moved forwards, space started breaking apart, including the empty space strength moving towards Lin Feng.

"Lin Feng must die!" shouted Wu Ming, charging forwards. Empty space strength surrounded Lin Feng.

"Destroy!" said Wu Ming. Lin Feng had the impression his body was going to be ripped apart.

Swords glittered and penetrated into his body. However, they didn't injure him, they just broke the empty space strength around him. At the same time, Tian Ruo Jian threw himself at Wu Ming, he hadn't even unsheathed a real sword yet!

"You want to die!"

Sword intent filled the air, and sword lights appeared. Tian Ruo Jian finally unsheathed his sword. At that moment, it was like space and time had stopped. Only a dazzling sword cut towards Wu Ming

Wu Ming released empty space strength, but he was much, much

slower than before. He was moving in slow motion suddenly, he had the impression time had stopped, seconds lasted forever.

“Time strength?” Lin Feng frowned, he had seen such a sword on the battlefield of Qi Tian Holy Town during the war of the ancient days.

“Piss off!” shouted Wu Ming furiously. He released even more empty space strength, clear and musical breaking and snapping notes went off, but Tian Ruo Jian’s sword continued slicing towards his third eye.

Wu Ming bit his lips and blood dripped down. A terrifying empty space cage surrounded him, but the sword appeared in front of him, piercing through the empty space strength, like it had been about to teleport, but the teleportation was slowed down, too. The sword finally moved forwards and drove into his chest.

At that moment, Wu Ming also moved and disappeared into another empty space. However, he looked down and saw wounds on his body, and blood dripping down.

“Tian Ruo Jian is so strong!” The crowd was astonished. That sword was incredible. He had nearly killed Wu Ming!

“You dare act disrespectfully in front of our Master!” Tian Ruo Jian said to Wu Ming coldly.

Wu Ming pulled a long face. Tian Ruo Jian was so strong, but he continued calling Weapon Master Bing Master!

# Chapter 2368: Joining Hands to Finish the Sword

---

Wu Ming pulled a long face; he had never fought against Tian Ruo Jian before. Tian Ruo Jian was like the legendary Kasyapa, his Kasyapa sword could mess with time and space. One sword sufficed to kill all enemies!

Fighting against such people was too terrifying. It wasn't about winning or losing, it was about remaining alive! One small mistake and one could die against Kasyapa sword attacks, and everything happened too fast. A moment before, if the sword hadn't reached his chest but his third eye, Wu Ming would be dead already!

"Tian Ruo Jian, are you sure you want to protect Lin Feng?" Wu Ming asked coldly. He was a high-level Saint from the Empty Space Shrine, he wanted to kill Lin Feng, and he wasn't the only one; many of the Shrines definitely wanted to kill Lin Feng. They couldn't let him escape, he had to die!

"As long as the Master is here, nobody can attack him, or they'll have to fight against me first!" replied Tian Ruo Jian sharply, firmly holding his sword. Nobody could compete with his sword attacks there, so killing Lin Feng would be extremely difficult!

"Little boy, come here, ignore them!" said Weapon Master Bing to Lin Feng.

Tian Ruo Jian looked at Lin Feng and smiled, "It's an opportunity for you, go and focus. Leave the rest to me!"

"Alright!" Lin Feng nodded. "Master, please help me with my son, too."

"Don't worry, if they dare touch your family members, I'll slaughter them!" replied Tian Ruo Jian. Lin Feng walked over to Weapon Master Bing.

Weapon Master Bing looked at Lin Feng and turned around. After

a breath or two, an illusion appeared around them, the air became very calm, and only the two of them were there.

Weapon Master Bing was firmly holding the sword with chains of fire. He said, “A moment ago, everybody put strength in the sword, but your strength is different from other people. You don’t just oppress it, you also try to keep it under control and to fuse together with it. Your strength is very special; if I give you an opportunity, can you control fully control the Will and strength in the sword?”

“Master, my strength is God strength. I can control things better than other people. However, I’m not strong enough. The Will and strength in that sword is terrifyingly powerful. I’m too weak. I can’t control it with my own power,” said Lin Feng.

Weapon Master Bing nodded and said, “I know. This strength is much more powerful than most people’s strength here. Nobody can control it entirely. After all, the strength of those Saints’ bodies surprised me, too.

“I have an idea. There are many kinds of strength and Will in that sword. If you could slowly take control, you might be able to divide into several sorts of strength and sort them. We could proceed systematically; make all the sorts of speed-related strengths fuse together to create extremely quick attacks, then make all the soul-related strengths fuse together to create terrifying soul attacks, and so on and so on.”

“Incredible idea!” Lin Feng was amazed. This guy was really an expert. He understood all the mechanisms of the process. He wanted to create a sword with multiple types of attacks!

Of course, Weapon Master Bing had that idea because the Saints’ bodies contained different sorts of strengths. He was an extraordinary weapon maker; the sword would be extremely resistant to crafting because the materials were perfect. He had decided to make the sword publicly to see if anyone could help him make his idea come true, and in the end, he had chosen Lin Feng.

Unfortunately, Lin Feng was a bit too weak.

Weapon Master Bing wanted to break his record, too!

“I would like to try,” said Lin Feng.

Weapon Master Bing just nodded. “Alright, come and try.”

Lin Feng slowly rose up into the air in front of the sword. A powerful strength filled the air. He released his God strength and his own world strength, wanting to have it his own way. To control that sword, he needed to make the empty space in that sword become his own world, and then he needed to create his own Celestial Dao inside.

His strength infiltrated the sword. Weapon Master Bing’s eyes twinkled. Suddenly, his strength was expelled from the sword; he wanted to help Lin Feng oppress the strength, but Lin Feng pushed him out. He was satisfied; if Lin Feng did that, it meant he had an idea, and as long as it worked, everything was fine. Weapon Master Bing was more than experienced enough to keep things under control, just in case.

Lin Feng created his own world in the sword.

“Wind intent.”

“That’s Speed intent there, and there, there’s Light intent.” Lin Feng sensed the different sorts of intent in the sword. When Saints died, their Will remained, and Will made things seem alive.

When I find different threads of intent which belong to the same category or which are similar, I can make them fuse together with God strength. That’s exactly what Weapon Master Bing wants me to do, thought Lin Feng. His God strength surrounded all the sorts of intent which were related to Speed, then he modified them and made them fuse together with God intent.

However, Lin Feng sensed something was resisting. The independent sorts of intent didn’t just let him proceed. They didn’t want to submit!



Since you're in my world, you should submit, thought Lin Feng, his intent becoming even more powerful. A massive Celestial Dao strength surrounded the independent sorts of intent. He fused them together with God intent!

I can do it!, he thought. Even though some sorts of intent were resisting, his God Celestial Dao helped him force the different sorts of intent to submit. However, a few ones which were too powerful didn't submit. Those different sorts of intent could be compared with cultivators; if he brought cultivators who were much stronger than him into his own world, they could also break free easily.

Lin Feng made a few sorts of intent fuse together and then he took his strength out of the sword. He only left intent related to speed with his God strength inside.

"Master, look!" he said to Weapon Master Bing.

Weapon Master Bing nodded and put his strength inside the sword. He looked pleasantly surprised and said, "As expected, they fused together. They also contain some of your own intent. Other people can't control it, but that way, when we finish making the sword, it'll have to be yours. It will be perfect for you, but not for other people."

Lin Feng smiled. "That's all I could do. But even if you didn't want to give me that sword, that's still all I could have done."

"Don't worry. All I'm concerned about is how powerful the sword is. I don't care about who the owner is. Otherwise, I wouldn't have given the Kasyapa's sword and the Supreme Upekṣā away," said Weapon Master Bing indifferently. "If you want it, you can have it."

"Thank you very much, Master," said Lin Feng. He hadn't expected that, but he knew Weapon Master Bing did it wholeheartedly. He made weapons out of passion, not greed.

"But there's a problem because your intent is limited, therefore, I

can't make a sword which is too powerful. I'll make it so that it adapts to your strength as you become stronger. We can join hands to make it adapt," said Weapon Master Bing to Lin Feng. He looked sharp. After having seen how strong Lin Feng was, he had an idea.

"As you wish, Master." Lin Feng was touched. With Weapon Master Bing's help, they could make a sword which would adapt to his strength, Lin Feng was excited now and couldn't wait to use it someday!

"Stay here for a time, we'll work on the sword," Weapon Master Bing said to Lin Feng. Lin Feng nodded.

——

In the outside world, days passed. The people outside didn't leave, though. A few days wasn't much for them. Their lives could last thousands, tens of thousands and even more years; a few days were like an eyeblink. Also, they really wanted to know why Weapon Master Bing had chosen Lin Feng. Did he want to make a sword for Lin Feng?

Of course, for the members of the Shrines, the most important thing remained to kill Lin Feng. Therefore, the number of people outside didn't decrease. On the contrary, it gradually increased because more and more people from Shrines arrived!

# Chapter 2369: Weapon Master Bing's Strength

---

Time passed. Lin Feng and Weapon Master Bing had already been working on the sword for three months.

Lin Feng was seated cross-legged. There was a humming sword in suspension in the air above him. Lin Feng kept releasing God strength into it. He was keeping it under control.

“Pfew...” Lin Feng took deep breaths, opened his eyes and smiled.

“How do you feel?” asked Weapon Master Bing, also opening his eyes.

Lin Feng nodded and said to Weapon Master Bing, “I feel like I can control some of its strength, but I can only use my own strength to control one sort of fused intent.”

“Not bad already. When you become stronger, you’ll manage to control more and more sorts of intent. The sword will become more and more powerful. Besides, you’re the person that sword listens to now,” Weapon Master Bing said.

Lin Feng smiled. This sword was a bit like the Tian Ji Sword...

Back then, he had modified the Tian Ji Sword, fusing together with it. Now, he had fused together with this sword and actually, it was similar to the Tian Ji Sword because it contained different sorts of strength... five types! Back then, the Tian Ji Sword contained different sorts of abstruse energies.

But Lin Feng’s God strength wasn’t powerful enough yet, he could only control one sort of intent at a time. Of course, there were still many sorts of intent Lin Feng couldn’t control inside that sword. He had to become stronger!

There were five sorts of strength in that sword, and Lin Feng had made them fuse together with his own God strength. Weapon

Master Bing had also included some of his power to enhance Lin Feng's understanding: speed strength, heavy strength which made that each attack felt like billions of tons, soul strength to attack people's souls, illusion strength, and absorbing strength.

The sword was like five swords, like five different Saint's Weapons! It was the result of Lin Feng and Weapon Master Bing's fruitful cooperation.

Speed, power, soul, illusion, absorbing!

"Master, what should we call this sword?" he asked Weapon Master Bing. He had just helped, and by a stroke of luck, he had become its master. But the one who had done most of the work was Weapon Master Bing!

"Supreme Upekṣā and Kasyapa have already been taken. Even though this sword is not as powerful as Supreme Upekṣā and Kasyapa yet, I hope it'll surpass them. You control God strength, let's call this sword God's Sword," said Weapon Master Bing calmly.

Lin Feng nodded and grabbed the sword.

"God's Sword, I hope you'll meet Master Bing's expectations!" whispered Lin Feng. The sword contained five sorts of strength, and even though it was not as powerful as the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation or other Saint's weapons yet, it was much more suitable for Lin Feng than the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation because it contained his own God strength. He was the only one who could control it perfectly.

"With your talent and that sword, you'll be fine," said Weapon Master Bing to Lin Feng, "Alright, we're done. You can leave."

"Thank you very much, Master. That Sword is fit for a God, I won't tarnish your reputation," said Lin Feng, bowing before Weapon Master Bing. His figure flickered as he left that place.

The crowd outside hadn't left though. When they saw Lin Feng come out, they stared at him. Besides, Weapon Master Bing had given Lin Feng a sword!

When Lin Feng had gone in, he didn't have a sword; now, he had come out, and he had a sword. The sword Weapon Master Bing had made was now his!

That little boy is lucky. Weapon Master Bing gave him a sword!, thought some people. The members of the Shrines looked at him coldly, especially Wu Ming. That one's eyes were filled with murder, and his energies surged towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was alert, and looked at them coldly. The Shrines didn't intend to let him off. They wanted to kill him as soon as possible!

Weapon Master Kong, Gu Zhu and Tian Ruo Jian hadn't left, either. At that moment, they sensed all those deadly energies move towards Lin Feng. Tian Ruo Jian groaned coldly and said, "Shrines, you're really reckless!"

"Today, Lin Feng will definitely die!" said someone calmly. It was the high-level Saint of the Fire Shrine. He flashed forwards, Lin Feng had the impression he was going to burn alive.

"Nobody can touch him here!" said Tian Ruo Jian. His figure flickered, but all around him, everybody moved, encircling Lin Feng and releasing Qi. They were all terrifying cultivators. This time, they wanted to kill Lin Feng, no matter what!

"Insolent!" said Weapon Master Kong, coldly glancing at the crowd.

The Shrines had a very high social position, they considered everybody and everything beneath their notice. They were like gods in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Weapon Master Kong also had a very high position in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Usually, they never attacked one another. They wanted to kill Lin Feng because

he was a Forbidden Person.

But could they kill him here? Especially since he had received a sword from Weapon Master Bing?

“The Shrines are too arrogant!” said someone at that moment. He was wearing a dragon robe, and sounded furious. The Saints were all astonished. What was going on? Why did the Dragon Clan get involved?

“If anyone tries to prevent us from doing what we have to do, we’ll consider them enemies,” returned Wu Ming coldly. Qi drove towards Lin Feng. He really had the impression he was going to die!

At that moment, energies appeared in the vault of Heaven and came crashing down. A terrifying oppressive strength descended from the sky. It was Celestial Dao power, and it was awesome!

“Who?!” snarled Wu Ming, suddenly raising his head. A terrifying empty space strength rose up in the air, golden lights blotted out the sky.

“You’re really disrespectful,” said a voice. A gigantic figure appeared in the sky.

“Weapon Master Bing?” Wu Ming frowned in astonishment. What an ominous strength! Weapon Master Bing had turned into Celestial Dao? He was Celestial Dao itself? How incredible!

“Last time, Tian Ruo didn’t kill you, but since you want to die, you will now,” said Weapon Master Bing coldly. He crashed down from the sky. Wu Ming released as much empty space strength as he could, but the Celestial Dao surrounded him. He felt petrified, and his body stiffened. He couldn’t move anymore!

“That’s empty space strength Celestial Dao!” Weapon Master Bing was extremely strong. He was using empty space strength against Wu Ming!

Wu Ming struggled, but he felt paralyzed. A Celestial Dao hand

descended from the sky, and there was an explosion of energies meeting. The crowd saw Wu Ming's face disappear, turning into empty space lights.

“Wu Ming!” The crowd was astonished and petrified. Was Wu Ming dead?

He hadn't withstood a single attack from Weapon Master Bing?

“Who else wants to act arrogantly here? I'll kill them now!” said Weapon Master Bing coldly. Everybody was frozen. Weapon Master Bing had remained silent the whole time before, nobody knew how powerful he really was. At that moment, the atmosphere was completely silent!

# Chapter 2370: Stealing the Sword

---

Lin Feng raised his head. He looked at that figure, and shivered. How strong, how incredible! Wu Ming was as strong as Gu Zhu, who was also extraordinarily strong, but Weapon Master Bing had defeated him in one strike. What a difference! Those two people belonged to two different worlds!

Gu Zhu can easily scare the lower-level Saints of the Fire Shrine, but Weapon Master Bing can easily kill people who are as strong as Wu Ming and Gu Zhu. He's also a high-level Saint, and there's a huge difference between them, thought Lin Feng. He realized that the more he progressed on the path of cultivation, the bigger the difference was between people of the same level. It all depended on people's talent, and their understanding of time and Celestial Dao.

Saints had returned to the source, they had transcended worldliness. Many people thought that he was just a weapon maker, they hadn't thought that he had such an extraordinary strength too.

The air was eerily quiet, their hearts were pounding. They were furious at Weapon Master Bing, but what could they say? He was the Godly Weapon Master's disciple, they couldn't offend him. In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Godly Weapon Master was too powerful and influential.

"Why did you get involved? It has nothing to do with you," said someone indifferently. People turned to look; it was a Saint of the Fire Shrine.

"You are not allowed to act recklessly here, it's not your territory!" snarled Weapon Master Bing angrily.

"Since it's that way, we're off," said that person, but at that moment, there was a howl of flames.

"Zhe Tian!" Lin Feng suddenly turned around and saw a gigantic



fire hand shooting towards Zhe Tian. He couldn't protect himself, and was caught instantly!

“Qiong Lin!” said Lin Feng coldly. It was Qiong Lin, a high-level Saint from the Fire Shrine. Since nobody was paying attention to him, he had decided to attack Zhe Tian. But Zhe Tian was just a Celestial Emperor, there was a huge level difference between them! If Qiong Lin wanted, he could kill Zhe Tian very, very easily!

“How shameless!” shouted Weapon Master Kong, his expression changing drastically.

“The Fire Shrine has gone too far!” shouted Gu Zhu.

“Don't worry, I won't kill him,” said Qiong Lin indifferently. “I'm a member of the Fire Shrine, I won't harm a little boy. The problem is Weapon Master Bing is getting involved in our things, and we don't want to be enemies with him. We're taking the little boy to Tian Yan City. Lin Feng, if you want to see him, you can come to Tian Yan City.”

“Everybody, we're off,” said Qiong Lin. The gigantic fire hand grabbed Zhe Tian, and they left as quickly as possible.

“Where are you doing?!” shouted Weapon Master Bing furiously. Qi rolled in waves. Fireballs exploded and Qiong Lin disappeared from their field of vision. Weapon Master Bing was startled and spat, “Deployment talisman!”

Lin Feng watched Zhe Tian's figure disappear with a long face. The Fire Shrine was truly shameless.

Tian Yan City was the capital city of the Fire Shrine. They had their headquarters there. If he went there, he'd definitely never leave. But if he didn't go, they'd keep Zhe Tian there forever!

“Goodbye!” All the members of the Shrines left. In the blink of an eye, everybody was gone. The Shrines had already achieved part of their goal.

Lin Feng clenched his fists hard enough to make his bones pop.

The Shrines wanted to kill him, and now they were even lashing out at his family members!

“The Shrines are really great!” Lin Feng was furious, his eyes were filled with murder. The Shrines were at the top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and they dared do such things?

“Lin Feng!” Gu Zhu said to Lin Feng, “Don’t worry. The Fire Shrine wants you. They won’t kill Zhe Tian. They just want to use him to threaten you.”

“I know,” replied Lin Feng coldly. The Fire Shrine had gone too far, though!

“They’ve gone too far. From now on, if I meet people from those Shrines, I’ll kill them instantly,” said Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with murder. Gu Zhu was surprised, convinced Lin Feng would do just that. He was furious.

“The Fire Shrine has gone too far, indeed. We can’t leave the matter at that,” said Tian Ruo Jian coldly. His eyes looked as sharp as swords. He was a sword cultivator, he had learned from the old Kasyapa. He was fearless, and had been merciless against Wu Ming, nearly killing him. He didn’t care. At such a cultivation level, he didn’t care about much anymore.

But now, the Shrines had gone too far.

“Tian Yan City is the capital city of the Fire Shrine, if I go there, they’ll kill us.” Even though Lin Feng was furious, he tried to keep calm. Tian Yan City was the Fire Shrine’s capital city, it was like Fortune City for the Fortune Shrine. The only solution there to save Zhe Tian would be to sacrifice himself.

“They won’t release him unless I die,” muttered Lin Feng to himself.

“Indeed, the situation is very annoying. They have the advantage now,” said Tian Ruo Jian, frowning.

“The Fortune Shrine won’t just stand there and watch,” said the

Diviner at that moment. He gazed into the distance. He looked calm and composed, but on the inside, he was furious. The Fire Shrine had gone too far!

“The Fire Shrine has been chasing our disciple for a long time, that’s already way beyond what one can conceive. Lin Feng, I’ll go to the Fortune Shrine, wait for my message,” said the Diviner to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded, “Thank you for your help.”

“We’re off,” said the Diviner. It wasn’t about Lin Feng anymore, it was between the Shrines now.

“So many years have passed and the situation was peaceful. The outside world was tranquil and calm. There was a balance of power. The Shrines forgot about the past. It’s time for a good war. The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds is going to be shaken again,” said Weapon Master Bing, sighing.

The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds had been too peaceful for too long.

“Let’s go back to the World Clan,” said Gu Zhu to Lin Feng.

“I’ll come with you,” said Tian Ruo Jian.

Gu Zhu nodded happily. “Great, perfect!”

“Tell me if you have news,” said Weapon Master Kong. Lin Feng looked at those people and felt moved.

“Go.” Suddenly, Lin Feng and the others rose up into the air. They had to go back to the World Clan to discuss things. The situation was critical, their enemies were Shrines!

They started flying away, but Gu Zhu and Tian Ruo Jian glanced at one another and stopped. “Someone is hiding. Come out!”

A strong wind started blowing. Dazzling golden lights flashed. A figure in golden clothes appeared, staring at Lin Feng coldly.

“Supreme Animal World, Roc Clan, Zong Gan,” said Tian Ruo

Jian, looking at that person coldly. He looked as sharp as a sword, like he was trying to lacerate that person with his eyes.

“I want that sword!” said Zong Gan. He was staring at Lin Feng’s sword!

Lin Feng was stunned. The members of the Roc Clan from the Supreme Animal World had always hoped Weapon Master Bing would make a sword for them, but he had never accepted. They hadn’t forgotten about it, and now they wanted to steal Lin Feng’s sword.

“It’s not suitable for you,” said Lin Feng.

“You don’t know that. Give me the sword,” said Zong Gan firmly. He was determined to steal the sword!

“Zong Gan, don’t be too reckless. Weapon Master Bing made that sword for Lin Feng. Why would he give it to you?” said Tian Ruo Jian coldly.

“So what? Weapon Master Bing doesn’t know how to recognize friends. He didn’t want to cooperate with us. All I can do is steal that sword,” said Zong Gan coldly. He was a beast, and beasts were aggressive and straightforward, especially Zong Gan. He was a Great Oriental Greenfinch roc, a king among rocs!

“Shut up!” said Tian Ruo Jian coldly. Sword intent filled the air. At the same time, there was a shrill cry and golden lights flashed as Zong Gan turned into a Great Oriental Greenfinch roc, and then into three!

“Roc Clan’s Cloning technique!” Tian Ruo Jian was grim. Zong Gan would be a terrifying opponent!

# Chapter 2371: Blood Great Imperial City

---

The Roc Clan were speed experts, especially Great Oriental Greenfinch rocs, who were the kings of the species. They had no competitor in terms of speed.

Zong Gan had imperial roc blood and he was a Great Oriental Greenfinch roc, so he was incredible in terms of speed. On top of that, he had a special technique which only the Roc Clan had: a roc cloning technique. When using it, his Qi didn't change at all, so it was impossible to recognize which one was his real body. Of course, the clones' attacks weren't as powerful as his real ones, or it would have been even more terrifying.

Now there were three rocs, which one was the real one? It was difficult to come up with a plan knowing how fast they were.

Tian Ruo Jian and Gu Zhu remained vigilant. Tian Ruo Jian, who was already holding his sword, said, "Lin Feng, you stay behind. You have to be very careful. Zong Gan is extremely fast. When he reaches a certain speed, he can break free from the laws of space and time using the Celestial Space and Time Breaking Roc Technique."

Gu Zhu also took out his world scroll. Saints' energies emerged from their Saint's Weapons. Gu Zhu and Tian Ruo Jian were extremely strong, but there were three Zong Gan's facing them, they had to be extremely careful.

"Give me the sword!" said Zong Gan's three bodies at the same time. All his eyes looked extremely sharp.

"Haha, you little filthy bird, you shamelessly try to steal other people's weapons?" said a voice in the distance.

Zong Gan was stupefied. Little filthy bird? He was a Great Oriental Greenfinch roc, who dared talk to him that way?

He gazed into the distance and saw someone wearing a dragon

robe arrive. He wore an incredible helmet, he looked dignified and majestic, imposing and awe-inspiring.

“Ao Cang Hai!” shrilled Zong Gan’s three bodies at the same time. “Long-horned snake, mind your own business, will you?”

“What if I don’t, little filthy bird?” said Ao Cang Hai. He was from the Dragon Clan in the Supreme Animal World.

Ao Cang Hai took a step forwards and looked at Lin Feng. “So you’re Daimon, and initially you were Lin Feng. No wonder that Aomo follows you everywhere. Initially, people said Aomo was your slave! I wanted to teach you a good lesson, I didn’t know it was you.”

Lin Feng was surprised. Ao Cang Hai had initially come to teach Lin Feng a good lesson and take Aomo back. But now he knew Daimon was Lin Feng, and Lin Feng, back in the days, had asked Aoxu to bring Aomo to the Dragon Clan.

“This little filthy bird is not strong enough, but he’s really quick. If he does anything fishy, we’re three, so we can destroy his three bodies,” Ao Cang Hai said to Tian Ruo Jian and Gu Zhu. Even though he was talking about the Great Oriental Greenfinch roc in a denigrating way, he knew perfectly well that Zong Gan was extremely fast and strong. If Zong Gan managed to find a way to reach Lin Feng, he’d be able to crush him.

“Ao Cang Hai!” swore Zong Gan coldly. Now that Ao Cang Hai was there, he had no chance anymore, even with his clones!

“Be careful, last descendent of the dragon king...” cawed Zong Gan. Then, his three bodies collapsed into two, and then into one, before he shot up into the sky and disappeared.

“How fast.” Lin Feng was amazed. That was pure speed! With such a speed, he could attack enemies really quickly. It wasn’t easy to fight against people like that...

“Last descendant of the dragon king?” Lin Feng was surprised.

Was Ao Cang Hai the last descendant of a dragon king? He did have an imperial helmet...

“I wouldn’t have thought the Dragon Prince would help,” Gu Zhu said to Ao Cang Hai. As Lin Feng had guessed, Ao Cang Hai was a Dragon Prince!

“It’s a slight effort. Dragons of darkness are rare, and Lin Feng brought one back to the Dragon Clan. We are very grateful,” said Ao Cang Hai. He looked at Lin Feng, “You helped me once, I’ll help you now. Is the young man the Fire Shrine kidnapped your son?”

“Indeed, he is my son!” Lin Feng confirmed.

“It’ll be difficult to get him back from Tian Yan City, even for the Fortune Shrine, unless they start a real war. You need another plan,” said Ao Cang Hai.

“What plan?” asked Lin Feng.

“A tooth for a tooth. He captured your kid, you must do the same to one of his family members, someone the Fire Shrine cares about a lot.”

“Any idea who?” asked Lin Feng to Ao Cang Hai.

“I know that he attaches great importance to someone called Qiong Yu, who has a very special position in the Fire Shrine. If you capture him, he won’t kill your son.”

“Qiong Yu, I’ve never heard of him...” whispered Tian Ruo Jian.

“It’s because you don’t know much about Shrines. I’m from the Dragon Clan, we know a lot about the Shrines of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” Ao Cang Hai smiled.

“What is his cultivation level, and where is he?” asked Gu Zhu to Ao Cang Hai.

“Dozens of years ago, he became a Saint. He’s much stronger now. Considering his talent, I’d say he must be a low-level Saint now. His fighting abilities must be terrifying. I’ve heard that he

was about to go to one of the seven forbidden territories: the Godly Grave. If you hurry, you can still catch up with him!” replied Ao Cang Hai. Gu Zhu and Tian Ruo Jian were startled. Qiong Yu wanted to go a forbidden territory, they had to act fast!

“Qiong Yu wants to go to the Godly Grave!” Lin Feng’s eyes gleamed.

Ao Cang Hai continued, “We could do it like this; I take Lin Feng with me, we look for Qiong Yu, but I can’t help, because the relationship between the Shrines and the Dragon Clan would deteriorate, and that would make things worse. You can send someone else with us. Of course, you can also go to Tian Yan City. We can act on all sides.”

Lin Feng understood him. The relations between some Clans of the Supreme Animal World and the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were complex. Qiong Yu was a very important member of the Fire Shrine and Ao Cang Hai was a prince. If he did anything to Qiong Yu, then a war would start between the Fire Shrine and the Dragon Clan.

“Also, Lin Feng, you must think carefully, if you do anything to Qiong Yu, it will be a point of no return.” warned Ao Cang Hai.

“Point of no return?” Lin Feng’s eyes shone. The Fire Shrine had been trying to kill him for a while because he had a Forbidden Body. They had tried all they could to kill him, as if he didn’t matter, but now they had kidnapped Zhe Tian! He just wanted to slaughter them all.

The Shrines wanted to kill him, so he wouldn’t hesitate and kill all the members of those Shrines who wanted to kill him. He wanted to do that until he died, or until he stood upon their ruins.

“Since Qiong Yu is so important to the Shrines, there might some extremely strong cultivators on his side, so I’ll stay with you and Lin Feng. Gu Zhu, go back to the World Clan, and talk to the Fortune Shrine. See what you can do together,” said Tian Ruo



Jian. They had to do things carefully, failure was no option this time.

“Alright,” Gu Zhu agreed. He looked grave and solemn now. This time, their opponent was a Shrine!

“Since it’s that way, let’s separate now. Tian Ruo Jian, Lin Feng and I, we’re going to the Godly Grave,” said Ao Cang Hai. They all departed hastily.

---

The Godly Grave was one of the seven famous forbidden territories. However, the Godly Grave was the most visited forbidden territory. It was said that that place was truly the grave of a god. It was in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and apparently similar to the Pit of Hell.

The entrance to the Godly Grave was in Blood Great Imperial City, situated in a blood-red demon ocean. The city was chaotic, but it was the only entrance.

Lin Feng and the others arrived in the sky above the blood-red demon ocean. The water surged and seemed to roar with anger as they struck the shore. Lin Feng and the others shivered. There were all sorts of places in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Where did this blood ocean come from? According to legends, it was made of the blood of billions of powerful cultivators, but most people didn’t believe in that story. Most people believed in another story: that it was the condensed blood of some spiritual beings.

“Why is there lightning?” asked Lin Feng. There was blood-red lightning flashing in the vault of Heaven. It made the blood roar even more fiercely. It was a terrifying place.

“I don’t know. It’s a strange world. There are many mysteries,” murmured Tian Ruo Jian. No matter how strong people were, there were always things they didn’t know... or maybe the

strongest cultivators in the world were omniscient?

“We’re here!” said Ao Cang Hai. He gazed into the distance. Above the blood ocean was a vast and boundless city. It looked spectacular.

Blood Great Imperial City. I hope we’ll find Qiong Yu, and the Fire Shrine will release my son..., thought Lin Feng. His eyes glittered as the three of them moved forwards.

## Chapter 2372: Dragon Clan's King Clan

---

Lin Feng and the others swiftly drew closer to Blood Great Imperial City. From time to time, the three of them saw some strong cultivators come out of that blood-red city. Their Qi was terrifying, but Saints were discreet.

“Blood Great Imperial City is a chaotic city. People who come here usually want to go to the Godly Grave, which means they are extremely strong. There are traces of ancient Saints everywhere in this city. There are Saints’ traces almost everywhere in the world, but especially in places like this, because people who go to forbidden territories are mostly Saints,” said Ao Cang Hai. “Extremely strong cultivators of the Supreme Animal World regularly come here to go to the Godly Grave.”

“Are there spiritual beings in the Godly Grave?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious. Ao Cang Hai was a prince of the Dragon Clan, he knew many things most people didn’t.

“I went inside the Godly Grave a few thousand years ago. You will see some godly figures. However, I’m not sure about real spiritual beings,” Ao Cang Hai smiled.

Lin Feng’s eyes lit up. Godly figures? He would see some godly figures?

“The forbidden territories are extremely dangerous. That’s why they’re called forbidden territories. The death rates inside are extremely high. You’ve already been inside, how dangerous was it?”

“The Godly Grave is different from other forbidden territories. It is the most visited forbidden territory. It is similar to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. Most people who go to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell don’t come out alive, they either die or turn into demon kings’ puppets. Ganges Time is very mysterious. It’s misty, strange, and spiritual. The biggest danger in there comes from the

other cultivators who go inside, they are terrifyingly strong. In the Godly Grave, there are gods' traces, and many battlefields, they try to pull you in. But there are also opportunities in there. Last time I went there, I wasn't lucky, and I nearly died," Ao Cang Hai related calmly.

Lin Feng could imagine. Ao Cang Hai was extremely strong, and yet had nearly died in there...

"So great emperors can't go in, right?" asked Lin Feng.

Ao Cang Hai smiled, "Not necessarily. I've heard about a weak fellow who found some god's historical remains. A hundred years later, he came out and had become terrifyingly strong."

"Such things happen?!" Lin Feng was startled, but he laughed and shook his head. Nothing was impossible in the world. If there were really spiritual beings' historical remains, it could change some people's destinies.

"Alright, let's go in. I hope we'll find Qiong Yu in time," said Ao Cang Hai neutrally. He continued moving. They entered Blood Great Imperial City, and made their way through the city. The blood Qi there was extremely thick and rich. From time to time, some people looked at them, but they could see that it was better not to offend such people, so nobody dared.

As expected, it's a chaotic city, thought Lin Feng, glancing around. People were fighting everywhere. He was speechless. Many people were there just to steal from other people.

"Of course. Only strength matters in Blood Great Imperial City!" replied someone. Then, some people appeared in front of Lin Feng. The leader of the group was extremely strong. Surprisingly, he was a Saint! His eyes were filled with blood lights. He stared at Lin Feng and his allies. "Not bad. You've returned to your true selves. You have already transcended worldliness and attained holiness. Good, we actually needed some people to go to the Godly Grave. Come with us."

“Kidnappers?” Lin Feng was astonished. Those people weren’t stealing treasures, they kidnapped people?

“Which group are you from? Are you even qualified to talk to us that way?” asked Ao Cang Hai.

“Ou Yue’s people, trust me, the Blood Base Alliance is really strong,” replied that person.

Ao Cang Hai’s eyes glittered. “Ou Yue? Eh, I see... He surprisingly came here to become a king and built the Blood Base Alliance. Alright, we’ll come with you.”

“Ou Yue is an extraordinarily famous high-level Saint. He disappeared a thousand years ago, people in the outside world don’t know much about him. I never thought he’d form a group in Blood Great Imperial City. It’s probably because he wants to solve the mysteries of the Godly Grave, he wants to become stronger and eventually break through,” Tian Ruo Jian told Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was surprised again. Ou Yue was another monstrously strong cultivator!

“Eh?” The leader of the group was startled that Lin Feng and the others talked about Ou Yue in such a flattering way. He smiled and said, “Don’t worry, we won’t disappoint you.”

——

They moved off. Lin Feng and the others followed. After a short time, they arrived in front of a blood-red palace. It was gigantic, with a flight of stairs with nine-nine steps in front of them. There were two lofty blood dragons there, looking powerful and mighty.

“We’re here. Come.” The group of people landed on the ground. They turned around and said to Lin Feng and the others, “Let’s go. Come on.”

However, they found out that Lin Feng and the two others didn’t move. They just stood there calmly.

“Have Ou Yue come out,” said Ao Cang Hai indifferently.

The leader frowned and said, “Your Excellency, it’s the Blood Base Alliance here. You didn’t come because you wanted to, right? You came for another reason?”

“You’re right,” said Tian Ruo Jian indifferently. He was completely composed.

The Saint suddenly released his Qi. “Who are you?” asked the Saint. He realized that these people were different...

“Have him come out and you’ll know!” Ao Cang Hai laughed.

The Saint frowned and said coldly, “We’ll first see how strong you are, then!”

He rose up into the air, blood-red clouds appeared in the sky and thundered loudly. They turned into a blood-red spear.

“I’ll give it a try!” said Lin Feng indifferently. Then, he jumped forwards and disappeared. Then, he reappeared in front of his enemy. He was extremely fast.

“Die!” shouted that guy explosively. The blood-red spear streaked across the sky towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng stretched out his hands and terrifying hand imprints grabbed the spear. The Saint’s face paled. Lin Feng was the youngest of these three people, looked totally unflustered, but he was already dangerous. So, the two others were probably even more terrifying...

“You can’t compete with us. Have Ou Yue come out,” said Lin Feng dismissively. The other’s face stiffened. He looked at Lin Feng’s hands imprints holding the blood spear speechlessly. He released more Qi, which filled the air.

A few Saints appeared. Lin Feng was surprised, the Blood Base Alliance wasn’t a clan, it was an alliance, and impressively they could compete with a clan!

“Who wants to see me?” demanded someone at that moment. The voice came from the vault of Heaven. Lin Feng and the others raised their heads and saw a figure appear above them.

“You’re Ou Yue?” asked Ao Cang Hai, standing there with his hands clasped behind his back.

“Who are you?” asked Ou Yue. When he saw Ao Cang Hai’s clothes and helmet, he frowned. He had never seen those clothes, but they looked like the clothes the members of the Dragon Clan wore.

“It doesn’t matter. I need you to do something,” said Ao Cang Hai calmly. The reason why he had decided to come was to ask the Blood Base Alliance for help finding Qiong Yu. It would be much easier that way.

“How audacious!” said Ou Yue coldly. He released a terrifying king Qi. Moons appeared in the sky and shone down on Ao Cang Hai.

“Insolent!” said Ao Cang Hai, looking at the moons. He flew up and roared out, striking a moon with his hands, his dragon chants spreading out. There was a thunderous boom as the moon exploded.

“Dragon Clan?” Ou Yue frowned and said coldly, “You’re from the King Clan of the Dragon Clan?”

“Hmph!” Ao Cang Hai grunted coldly in response. Golden dragons appeared, all with five claws. They started ripping apart all the moons, which exploded one after another.

Ou Yue pulled a long face. As expected, King Clan from the Dragon Clan, golden dragons with five claws. His attacks were extremely powerful!

# Chapter 2373: Celestial Assassins Alliance

---

“Which prince are you?” asked Ou Yue after he saw his moons get destroyed, staring at Ao Cang Hai.

“Let’s finish the battle and we’ll talk,” said Ao Cang Hai coldly. He continued rising up in the air. Even though he wasn’t as fast as a Great Oriental Greenfinch roc, the five-clawed golden dragon were also extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, his hand appeared in front of Ou Yue. Dragons were experts in terms of strength, especially five-clawed golden dragons from the King Clan of the Dragon Clan!

That attack seemed like it could destroy the earth and sky. The atmosphere distorted around it.

Ou Yue’s figure exploded. However, Ao Cang Hai’s expression didn’t change. He saw a moon appear and then Ou Yue appeared inside. A moment before, it was only a shadow.

“Moon shadow!” Ao Cang Hai was impressed. Moons reappeared, shining brightly.

Ao Cang Hai smiled coldly. He opened his mouth and roared, his dragons roared furiously and made the earth and sky tremble.

“Go,” said Tian Ruo Jian, taking Lin Feng backwards. A five-clawed golden dragon appeared behind Ao Cang Hai. At the same time, in the sky, more five-clawed golden dragons appeared and roared out. They tore apart all the moons on their path. He was forcing Ou Yue to show himself! “Die!”

Ou Yue borrowed the strength of the sky to release more moons. The sky cracked. Lin Feng was amazed as he watched the fight. It felt like the sky was about to collapse.

Ao Cang Hai shouted furiously. He rose up and raised his fist. Time seemed to stop. The moon lights and the fist collided. The lights were scattered explosively. However, blood appeared on Ao



Cang Hai's fist. The moon attacks were powerful.

"Where are you going?" said Ao Cang Hai, rising higher up in the air. He raised his fist again. The space was trembling. Lin Feng was shaking, too. This fight was just astonishing.

Ou Yue's figure appeared. He coughed up blood, his face pale. However, he still looked at Ao Cang Hai coldly.

"I'm the fourth prince of the Dragon Clan, Ao Cang Hai. No need to fight against me. I can easily destroy the Blood Base Alliance. Also, Tian Ruo Jian is behind me, you've probably heard of him," said Ao Cang Hai.

Ou Yue was astonished. The fourth prince of the Dragon Clan and Kasyapa's disciple, Tian Ruo Jian!

"What do you want?" Ou Yue asked Ao Cang Hai.

"Let's go in to talk," said Ao Cang Hai. He walked forwards. Tian Ruo Jian and Lin Feng followed him, and entered the Blood Base Alliance as if they owned it.

—

In the main hall, Ao Cang Hai sat down on the leader's throne and said to Ou Yue, "Have you heard of Qiong Yu?"

"No," said Ou Yue, shaking his head.

Ao Cang Hai was not surprised. "He's a very core disciple of the Fire Shrine. He's discreet. If you don't know about him, you can use your network to learn about him. He's here with some other strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine, so it shouldn't be difficult to learn about him. Just try and find members of the Fire Shrine. It should be easy."

Even though the members of the Fire Shrine were discreet, they didn't hide either, as it wasn't necessary. If someone wanted to find them, it would not be difficult.

"Alright, and then you'll leave?" Ou Yue asked Ao Cang Hai. He

looked angry. Even though he wasn't as strong as Ao Cang Hai, he was a Saint too, and he didn't want to be submissive in front of other people.

“Just do what I told you. Don't worry. We're not interested in the Blood Base Alliance.”

“Alright, wait for my message,” said Ou Yue. He turned around and left Ao Cang Hai, Tian Ruo Jian, and Lin Feng alone in the main hall.

“If Qiong Yu is in the city, Ou Yue will definitely find him. If there are extremely strong cultivators with Qiong Yu, then things will be troublesome,” said Ao Cang Hai. After all, he couldn't get involved. He was a member of the Dragon Clan.

The cultivators with Qiong Yu were probably extremely strong. It would definitely be very difficult for Lin Feng and Tian Ruo Jian to capture Qiong Yu.

“All we can do is wait,” murmured Lin Feng.

—————

The Blood Base Alliance didn't disappoint them. Two days later, Ou Yue found them.

“So, any news?” asked Ao Cang Hai to Ou Yue.

“Yes, you're looking for Qiong Yu, a low-level Saint, right?”

“Indeed, where is he?” smiled Ao Cang Hai. Qiong Yu was probably still in Blood Great Imperial City.

“Why are you looking for him?” asked Ou Yue.

“It's none of your business.” replied Ao Cang Hai.

“I just want to warn you, if you want to cause trouble or even kill him, you have to know that Qiong Yu and a group of people from the Fire Shrine are in the Celestial Assassins Alliance right now. You must have heard of the Celestial Assassins Alliance. Even if the members of the Fire Shrine and Qiong Yu were alone, you

wouldn't be able to harm them.”

“Celestial Assassins Alliance.” Ao Cang Hai was displeased. Then, he looked at Lin Feng and said, “The Celestial Assassins Alliance is an influential group which has existed for a very long time in Blood Great Imperial City. They're quite strong, in the top three groups of the city. The group was formed after people from many places who wanted to go to the Godly Grave gathered.”

When Lin Feng heard that, he frowned. Celestial Assassins Alliance? Qiong Yu was in the Celestial Assassins Alliance? And he was with terrifying cultivators?

So, I have to go to the Celestial Assassins Alliance, thought Lin Feng. Zhe Tian was in the Fire Shrine, even though some people were trying to solve the situation there, getting Zhe Tian back from Tian Yan City was impossible. Lin Feng had only two solutions: capturing Qiong Yu, or handing himself over!

He couldn't go to the Celestial Assassins Alliance as Lin Feng, but he could use another identity.

I have my own world, I can easily imprison Qiong Yu. The difficult part is to kidnap him and then escape safely, thought Lin Feng. Then, he looked at Ao Cang Hai and Tian Ruo Jian, “Masters, I intend to change my identity and go to the Celestial Assassins Alliance to see whether I can kidnap Qiong Yu or not.”

“It's too dangerous, and difficult. And Qiong Yu's fighting abilities are terrifying. You can't do it alone.” replied Ao Cang Hai telepathically. Lin Feng was brave, but it was a big risk.

“Indeed. You can't take that risk,” said Tian Ruo Jian.

Ou Yue guessed that these three people were talking telepathically, so he just stood there calmly.

Lin Feng looked at Ao Cang Hai and Tian Ruo Jian, he said telepathically, “I have to try. There is no other option.”

Ao Cang Hai and Tian Ruo Jian glanced at one another.

“Since you want to do that, we won’t stop you. I’ll stay in the Blood Base Alliance. If you need anything or if they kidnap you, get in touch with me and I will do my best to save you,” said Ao Cang Hai, “But you must be extremely careful, no matter what, they must not learn who you are.”

“I’ll be outside of the Celestial Assassins Alliance waiting for you,” said Tian Ruo Jian. They both accepted Lin Feng’s decision. Even though it was very dangerous, they also thought that it was what any strong cultivator would have done.

“Alright, good,” said Lin Feng. He looked at Ou Yue and said, “Please give me a map of the Blood Great Imperial City and the Celestial Assassins Alliance.”

“Alright,” Ou Yue nodded. He transmitted maps to Lin Feng using his godly awareness.

“Thank you,” said Lin Feng, standing up. Tian Ruo Jian followed him and they left the main hall. Ao Cang Hai stayed there and said to Ou Yue, “I want to stay here for a few days, I hope you don’t mind.”

——

Lin Feng and Tian Ruo Jian separated on the way. Lin Feng changed his face. He still looked young but sick, his face was very pale. His hair was hanging to one side like horsehair.

He arrived outside of the Celestial Assassins Alliance quickly. The Celestial Assassins Alliance was one of the most powerful groups of the city. Their buildings were much more spectacular than the Blood Base Alliance’s buildings. A gigantic horizontal structure appeared in Lin Feng’s field of vision. Behind Lin Feng was a gate on which was written Celestial Assassins Alliance. Lin Feng had already crossed the main gate of the Celestial Assassins Alliance.

“What do you want here?” asked one of the guards coldly. They were all cultivators of the Di Qi layer. Lin Feng released absolutely

no Qi, and it was impossible to know what his cultivation level was.

“I want to join the Celestial Assassins Alliance,” said Lin Feng.

“If you can cross the nine Celestial Assassins Gates, you’ll be able to join the Celestial Assassins Alliance,” said his questioner. Lin Feng glanced at him and walked forwards. A powerful Qi surrounded him. However, Lin Feng waved his hands and those people ended up in an illusion. They were all astonished to suddenly find there was nothing around them.

“What a powerful illusion. He just waved his hands to create such a terrifying illusion,” said one of them, pulling a long face. By the time the illusion disappeared, they turned around and Lin Feng had already crossed five Celestial Assassins gates!

## Chapter 2374: Closely Following

---

The guards of the different gates grew more powerful. However, Lin Feng easily crossed six gates. When he arrived at the seventh one, the guards were already Half-Saints. The guards were two old men, their eyes bloodshot. They glanced at Lin Feng coldly. They flew up and waved their hands. Instantly, terrifying blood-red hands shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's eyes became two black holes. He looked terrifying.

"Come in," said Lin Feng. Suddenly, the two guards couldn't see anything anymore, but darkness filled with death strength surrounded them.

"What a powerful attack!" The two old men pulled long faces. This challenger's illusions were extremely powerful.

They attacked the illusion together, and it exploded. But when they came back to their senses, they realized that Lin Feng had already crossed the eighth gate!

"How strong!" The two old men looked at Lin Feng and took a deep breath.

"Another strong cultivator is going to join the alliance. I hope they'll be lucky in the Godly Grave this time, I hope they'll find some historical remains," said the other one.

Lin Feng was already fighting against the guard of the ninth gate. There was only one, but he was extremely strong. He was also a Half-Saint, but his fighting abilities were impressive. His attacks were incredible. However, it wasn't enough to deal with Lin Feng, and he quickly lost. Lin Feng could easily pass that challenge as well.

"Not bad. Another Saint is joining our organization. What's your name?" asked the guard, smiling at Lin Feng.

"Mu Feng," said Lin Feng.

“Brother Mu Feng! You’re very strong. You probably want to go to the Godly Grave as well, that’s why you came to the Celestial Assassins Alliance, right?” asked the guard with a smile. The Celestial Assassins Alliance existed because of the Godly Grave.

“Indeed. How many strong cultivators are there this time?” asked Lin Feng.

“The Godly Grave is like the other forbidden territories. It’s easy to go in, but it’s difficult to come back out alive. Therefore, it’s better to be prepared. This time, the Celestial Assassins Alliance has started preparing an impressive army. You won’t be disappointed; the Celestial Assassins Alliance prepared great materials and has gathered some great cultivators!”

“Can you recommend me?” asked Lin Feng.

“No rush. We’ll get you a place to rest first. Then, I’ll recommend you and you’ll get to know them,” said the man. His figure flickered and Lin Feng followed him. He showed Lin Feng to a place where he could rest and told Lin Feng some more details, then left.

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged in a courtyard. He released threads of godly awareness, which flew up and turned into a vast network, and Lin Feng could see almost everything in the Celestial Assassins Alliance.

Many people raised their heads and smiled coldly. Observing a whole town with one’s godly awareness wasn’t polite. In the Celestial Assassins Alliance, many threads of godly awareness also flew up and looked back at Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng didn’t mind. Very quickly, he noticed a courtyard. There was a group of people there seated cross-legged calmly. Their Qi was terrifying. They were wearing fire robes. They were probably members of the Fire Shrine.

“Who dares act so audaciously?” whispered someone raising

their head.

“Piss off!” said someone coldly. That terrifying voice shook everybody in the city.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and recalled his godly awareness. His eyes were sharp. Those people were definitely members of the Fire Shrine, so Qiong Yu had to be in the group. Lin Feng had noticed a young man in the group, looking quite composed. He might be Qiong Yu.

-----

Where the members of the Fire Shrine were staying, someone asked, “Who was that?”

“I don’t know. A sick-looking young man. His cultivation is mysterious. I’ve never seen him. He must have just joined the Celestial Assassins Alliance,” replied someone.

“That guy is audacious, daring to look at people with his godly awareness.” Some people also laughed, they didn’t mind.

Lin Feng didn’t move. Even if Qiong Yu was there, he was surrounded by terrifyingly strong cultivators, it was impossible to capture him here. He had to wait for an opportunity.

-----

During the following days, Lin Feng inspected the city with his godly awareness every day as if he were sunbathing. Some people were annoyed, but didn’t say anything because he didn’t go and inspect secret areas, and he didn’t disturb people who were meditating, either.

Some people were annoyed, however. Why did he do that? Was he practicing cultivation?

-----

Time passed slowly.

In Tian Yan City, the atmosphere was lively too. Many strong



cultivators were there, including strong cultivators from the Fortune Shrine and the World Clan. Of course, Lin Feng's clone was there too. Two of Lin Feng's clones were constantly in the Fortune Shrine.

One of them stayed in the Fortune Shrine and did the things he did all the time: read books, spend time with Meng Qing, practice cultivation. But now that Zhe Tian had been captured by the Fire Shrine, how could Meng Qing be happy? She was extremely worried every day. Lin Feng's clone had gone to Tian Yan City. As long as he didn't use his full strength, nobody would notice it was just a clone.

There was action on all sides.

---

In a palace of Tian Yan City, the Diviner and Lin Feng were together. The Diviner asked, "How are things there?"

"I'm still in the Celestial Assassins Alliance. The date of the journey to the Godly Grave hasn't been planned yet."

"Alright. Wait for me, I'll be there soon. If they want to go to the Godly Grave, find a way to prevent them from going," said the Diviner. Lin Feng nodded. Lin Feng knew that the Diviner who was with him was actually a clone too. Lin Feng's real body was in the Celestial Assassins Alliance, and his clone was in Tian Yan City. The Diviner's clone was in Tian Yan City too, and he was going to the Celestial Assassins Alliance with his real body.

Lin Feng didn't know what the Diviner was doing the whole time with his real body, but now he was going to see Mara-Deva's real body!

"What do we do here?" asked Lin Feng. He had inspected the Celestial Assassins Alliance with his godly awareness, he was worried that Qiong Yu would go to the Godly Grave and he would have no opportunity to catch him. Now that the Diviner was going

to help him there, it was much better that way.

“I informed the Fire Shrine. They agreed to meet tomorrow. At that moment, I’ll be in Blood Great Imperial City already,” said the Diviner indifferently.

Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. One more day!

---

The very next day, early in the morning, Lin Feng was awake as someone called him, “Brother Mu Feng, come out.”

When Lin Feng heard that, he went out. It was the guard of the ninth gate. He smiled, “Brother Mu Feng, let’s go. We have a meeting. We’ll get to know each other, and then we’ll go to the Godly Grave.”

“Today?” Lin Feng was stupefied. How tense! The Diviner needed half a day more to arrive. He was rushing over to Blood Great Imperial City.

“Indeed. Let’s go,” that person smiled. He led the way as Lin Feng followed him. Even if he didn’t want to go to the Godly Grave, he needed to prevent the others from going.

---

After a short time, they arrived on a public field. There were dozens of people present. They were all extremely strong. When they saw Lin Feng, people were surprised. Someone laughed and said, “That’s the guy who kept inspecting the city using his godly awareness. I wonder why he did that?”

“Sorry, I just joined the Celestial Assassins Alliance, I’m not familiar with the rules,” said Lin Feng smiling mirthlessly. He glanced at the crowd and saw the members of the Fire Shrine. In the middle of their group was a young man, probably Qiong Yu. Lin Feng was now sure that it was him.

Lin Feng didn’t say anything, he just clenched his fists.

Everybody was there, so he couldn't kidnap Qiong Yu. He hoped the Diviner would arrive quickly, then Tian Ruo Jian would be able to help them, too!

# Chapter 2375: Arriving on Time

---

The morning sun shone upon Tian Yan City. It was very hot there. There was a gigantic palace, and in the sunlight, it looked like it was on fire. It was the Fire Shrine's palace.

Many people gathered on a public field. On one side, everybody was wearing a fire robe. They all had an extraordinary Qi and were extremely strong. In the middle of them, there was one cultivator much, much weaker than everybody else. It was Zhe Tian.

"Father!" shouted Zhe Tian when he saw Lin Feng. He didn't look good. He said to Lin Feng, telepathically, "Father, I'm alright, don't worry about me. They're well prepared, you can't do anything."

Lin Feng said nothing. He glanced at the members of the Fire Shrine and finally looked at Qiong Lin, "You're a Shrine and you stand at the very top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. You dare take a young man as a hostage. How shameless."

"No need to tell me that. I told you, we're not going to harm him. Come here and we'll release him," said Qiong Lin indifferently. He looked quite composed.

"It's not the first time the Fire Shrine has done something like this. If you don't release him, the Fortune Shrine will lose patience," said the Diviner plainly.

"Lose patience? So, what will you do then?" said Qiong Lin, smiling coldly. The Diviner closed his eyes and didn't say anything. The atmosphere became eerily silent. Nobody said anything, both sides waited.

---

In the Celestial Assassins Alliance, everybody was getting familiar with each other. When the Fire Shrine's members introduced themselves, the crowd paid more attention.

“This time, some members of the Fire Shrine are with us. Therefore, we’ll choose the fire entry. We’ll see if we’re lucky and bump into some spiritual beings,” said someone at that moment sternly. “The nine spiritual beings’ graves are real battlefields. We have to help each other inside, and we should separate.”

“Alright!” the crowd nodded.

“Everybody understands, good, let’s go,” said the cultivator of the Celestial Assassins Alliance. They were ready to go to the Godly Grave!

“Wait,” said Lin Feng suddenly. Everybody looked at him.

“Yes, what?” asked the cultivator.

“I have a friend who wants to come. He’s extremely strong. We should wait,” said Lin Feng.

The strong cultivator’s eyes twinkled, “How strong?”

“A high-level Saint, he’s at the very top of that level. His fighting abilities are incredible. He’s not really a friend, he’s more like an elder I have affection for, a mentor. He had to do something on his way, so he’s a bit late,” said Lin Feng. The leader was astonished, a high-level Saint who had terrifying fighting abilities? That person was definitely worth waiting for!

“Since it’s that way, let’s wait for him,” said the cultivator. Everybody agreed readily. Lin Feng was a bit relieved.

However, one hour later, many people frowned, “He’s not here yet?”

“Just wait, he’ll be here soon,” replied Lin Feng.

“You have no notion of time. Let’s forget it, let’s go,” said that person.

“Right, one more isn’t necessary. We don’t even know if he told the truth. Let’s go to the Godly Grave, if he can catch up, then we’ll see,” said someone.

“Let’s go,” said the members of the Fire Shrine. They didn’t feel like waiting around either.

Lin Feng watched the crowd leave, unable to keep them waiting longer. He followed the crowd and at the same time, his clone told the Diviner the way and hoped he’d manage to catch up.

---

There were nine entrances to the Godly Grave in the city. Back in the ancient times, there were only nine Shrines, and nine spiritual beings controlled the continent. Time had passed, some Shrines had disappeared, some had risen, but there were still only nine entrances. Each entrance led to a spiritual being.

The crowd was at the fire entrance. In front of them was an ocean of blood, and above that ocean, there was a gigantic fire. That was the fire grave, and according to legends, there were the historical remains of a fire spiritual being there.

Lin Feng had read as many books as possible in the Fortune Shrine, and he had read a lot about the forbidden territories. He knew the basics about them, but at that moment, he didn’t really care about the forbidden territories. The Diviner was almost there, but one more step and they’d be in the Godly Grave, though.

These days, Qiong Yu had spent all his time with the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine. Lin Feng hadn’t had any opportunity to catch him. In the Godly Grave, it’d be even more dangerous.

“Let’s go!” said someone.

“Wait!” said Lin Feng suddenly. His figure flickered and he landed in front the entrance, he had his back turned to the entrance. He said to the crowd, “Everybody, please wait. He’ll be here soon.”

Many people frowned and lost patience.

“We’ve already waited for a long time, but he has not come. We can’t waste time because of one person. Move,” said someone

indifferently.

“Mu Feng, don’t be annoying,” said the cultivator of the Celestial Assassins Alliance.

“The time needed to burn a joss stick will be enough,” said Lin Feng to the crowd.

“Move!” shouted someone explosively, “If he comes and we’re inside, you can tell him where we are!”

“Insolent!” said someone releasing energy which oppressed Lin Feng.

Lin Feng said, “Everybody, this is serious. I must prevent you from going in, otherwise, the consequences will be dramatic.”

“Eh?” The crowd looked furious, some people made steps forwards and someone said coldly, “You’re trying to scare us?”

“What is serious? What consequences?”

“Please stop, everybody,” said someone at that moment. A figure appeared in the sky, his voice reverberating. The crowd frowned as the man’s voice resonated in their souls.

“Who are you, Your Excellency?” asked someone.

“It’s about the Shrines. Everybody, stop moving,” said the voice. The crowd was startled. The Shrines?

“About the Shrines?” The members of the Fire Shrine looked angry, they stepped forwards and said, “Ignore him, everybody. I’d be curious to see which Shrine he’s from, anyway.”

“Insolent! Are all the members of the Fire Shrine that arrogant?” asked the voice aggressively.

The members of the Fire Shrine gazed into the distance and said coldly, “You’re insolent!”

“If you dare stay, you’ll see who’s insolent,” said the voice. The members of the Fire Shrine pulled a long face. That person dared

threaten them?

“I’d like to see who dares act that insolently as well,” said some people. They had decided to wait. At that moment, someone appeared in the distance. He looked at the crowd and said, “It’s not me. I’m just someone who wants to go to the Godly Grave.”

It was Tian Ruo Jian. Many people knew his name, but not what he looked like. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was too big.

The crowd didn’t enter the Godly Grave. They wanted to see the person who dared threaten the Fire Shrine.

—

In the distance, clouds appeared and a strong wind started blowing. A terrifying aura filled the air. Very quickly, the crowd saw a figure, their robe fluttering in the wind. He looked furious.

“He’s here!” Lin Feng frowned. That was Mara-Deva!

The crowd frowned. That person looked familiar, but they didn’t know where they had seen him.

“It’s Mara-Deva!” said someone suddenly. The members of the Fire Shrine frowned when they saw it was Mara-Deva. He hadn’t appeared for a very long time. He always appeared as the Diviner. Most people had forgotten about Mara-Deva.

“Qiong Yu, go to the Godly Grave first!” said the members of the Fire Shrine to Qiong Yu and the others. They understood something unusual was going on. What did Mara-Deva want to do?

At that moment, a terrifying sword strength arose with a hum. The crowd shook and looked at Tian Ruo Jian. They hadn’t thought this guy was so strong, and they were together!

“Bastard!” shouted Mara-Deva explosively. The atmosphere became illusionary.

“Mara-Deva, what is this supposed to mean?!” swore a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine.



“I’ve told you, the Fortune Shrine has lost patience!” said Mara-Deva coldly. A gigantic hand descended from the sky, at the same time, Tian Ruo Jian released terrifying sword energies. Lin Feng took out a dazzling sword, it was time to capture Qiong Yu, finally!

## Chapter 2376: Chasing

---

“Mara-Deva, formerly the Fiend, now Fortune Shrine’s Diviner, is here!” blurted out the crowd when they saw this. The Fortune Shrine and the Fire Shrine were directly confronting one another. Mu Feng had been wasting time for Mara-Deva to arrive!

“You dare act that arrogantly here!” shouted someone loudly. Mara-Deva and the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine collided, explosions rent in the air. A strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine groaned and released even more energies, his eyes filled with killer intent. No wonder Mara-Deva wasn’t worried about infuriating the Fire Shrine, the Fortune and the Fire Shrines were not friendly at all!

“I’ve told you, the Fortune Shrine has lost patience!” said Mara-Deva coldly. He was staring at Qiong Yu. Qiong Yu’s face stiffened.

“Qiong Yu, go into the Godly Grave. You’re their target!” said a strong cultivator. Qiong Yu and two others nodded and flew towards the fire entrance.

A peerless sword energy surrounded Qiong Yu and constricted him. It felt like that sword was coming from heaven, Qiong Yu had the impression he was hallucinating. No matter what, he couldn’t escape its killing power. He wanted to move away, but he realized he was extremely slow.

“Kasyapa Sword Technique. He’s Tian Ruo Jian!” Qiong Yu and the two other people’s faces changed drastically; they had never seen Tian Ruo Jian, but they could guess who he was considering his attack. Many people from the Shrines had had the opportunity to sense Kasyapa’s Sword intent. It was impossible to forget.

“Explode!” shouted one of them loudly. The atmosphere turned into a fireball. The deceleration energy broke apart, another man flashed forwards, lights emerging from his fingers and moving towards Tian Ruo Jian.

“Go!” shouted the two cultivators in front of Qiong Yu. The others strong cultivators confronted Mara-Deva. Since Mara-Deva’s target was Qiong Yu, they had to go into the Godly Grave. Inside were other strong cultivators from the Fire Shrine.

Qiong Yu felt relaxed with the help of those two. He flashed towards the fire entrance, but found Lin Feng standing there, his sword emitted whistling sounds. A terrifying energy filled the air. He didn’t move but the atmosphere around him stiffened. That sword attack was dangerous.

Qiong Yu stopped and released an explosive fire. He shouted furiously, “Die!”

A fire spear appeared in Qiong Yu’s hand. It rotated rapidly, releasing a black fire which formed a vortex.

Lin Feng was still standing there as if the outside world had nothing to do with him. He released God strength and condensed it into his sword.

A wave of heat rolled towards Lin Feng. His skin suddenly felt extremely sore, as if he were being roasted.

He waved his hands and finally moved invisibly fast. However, he still didn’t move his sword. He flew towards the spear.

Finally, Lin Feng’s sword moved. It was extremely fast, as fast as light. Qiong Yu couldn’t even see it clearly.

“How fast!” He couldn’t believe it. “Piss off!” he shouted. His spear continued moving forwards, a fire trail appearing behind it, and flames howled around it.

But the sword was already in front of him! He moved back quickly and terrifying lights emerged from his third eye.

Lin Feng’s sword cut through the lights, and the Sword intent disappeared. He was surprised, Qiong Yu was already far away.

Qiong Yu released more light beams, but then he realized they

were shattering. “They’re broken. What a terrifying attack!” Qiong Yu’s face stiffened. He noticed that Lin Feng was also surprised. He had been too careless a moment before, deciding to throw himself at Lin Feng just now. He hadn’t thought Lin Feng’s speed was so terrifying.

“Qiong Yu, go into the Godly Grave!” shouted someone, landing in front of Qiong Yu. They had to get Qiong Yu into the Godly Grave to protect him.

“Alright, get ready to disperse,” said Qiong Yu. However, Lin Feng looked at him coldly, lights twinkled under his feet, as he cast a deployment spell.

“Go.” shouted the Fire Saint. He struck the ground with his fingers, and it shook violently. A terrifying fire struck the deployment marks, the ground shattered. Qiong Yu moved towards the fire entrance as fast as possible. Mara-Deva and Tian Ruo Jian were terrifyingly strong, very dangerous, and if they had the opportunity, they’d be able to capture Qiong Yu easily. Even if Qiong Yu was strong, he couldn’t compete with them!

Lin Feng was grim. The enemy had managed to stop his deployment spell. He turned around and looked after Qiong Yu. However, a Fire Saint threw himself at him, a scorching hot energy penetrating into his body. As he ran towards Lin Feng, his fire was becoming more and more powerful.

Lin Feng’s body stiffened. An oppressive black fire surrounded him. The attack was really strong.

“No...” Lin Feng looked at Qiong Yu, who was getting closer and closer to the entrance. He was about to succeed!

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. A death cage appeared and his sword moved towards the man quickly. This time, he didn’t use the fast strength, he used the heavy strength!

Even though the opponent was in his illusion, his attacks were

terrifying and made Lin Feng tremble.

“What a powerful attack.” Lin Feng grit his teeth. His God strength surged out, and his sword penetrated into the cage of darkness. it was a terrifying and aggressive attack, a heavy blow.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng. That attack destroyed his opponent’s Saint’s Weapon and crashed onto his body and blew him apart. However, Lin Feng didn’t look happy. He turned around again and saw that Qiong Yu was already in the Godly Grave.

Lin Feng pulled a long face. He glanced at Mara-Deva and Tian Ruo Jian and said, “I’m going in!”

“It’s too dangerous inside!” shouted Mara-Deva, as Lin Feng chased after Qiong Yu. It was extremely dangerous, but Lin Feng didn’t care. Mara-Deva and Tian Ruo Jian could deal with the members of the Fire Shrine who were still outside. That way, Lin Feng would be able to deal with Qiong Yu without them, it was good enough!

Lin Feng jumped into the entrance to the Godly Grave. He still had some flames on his body, there were some blisters which burst and bled. His previous opponent had been extremely strong...

I’ll definitely catch Qiong Yu!, thought Lin Feng. His eyes gleamed. He had to capture Qiong Yu to get Zhe Tian back. This was an opportunity, and there weren’t other people from Shrines present, for once!

Lin Feng jumped into the Godly Grave. The crowd around was astonished. How insane! He was chasing Qiong Yu into the Godly Grave!

# Chapter 2377: Tear Into Each Other

---

When the crowd saw Lin Feng jump into the Godly Grave, they also got ready to go enter, but someone shouted coldly, “Stop!”

Mara-Deva jumped and landed in front of the Godly Grave. He glanced at the crowd and said, “Everybody, before the issue is solved, stay here. If you disobey and try to enter the Godly Grave, don’t blame me.”

When the crowd heard him, they frowned. How arrogant. However, what could they do? He was famous and extremely strong, all they could do was shut up. Going to the Godly Grave wasn’t exactly urgent.

The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine looked at Mara-Deva and said coldly, “You can’t stop us with just your arrogance, Mara-Deva.”

“Never mind. At the very least, none of you will enter the Godly Grave,” said Mara-Deva mercilessly. Tian Ruo Jian landed next to him, and they blocked the entrance.

“You think too highly of yourself,” said a low-level Saint to Mara-Deva coldly.

Mara-Deva glanced at him coldly. He stretched out his hand, a light beam emerged and surrounded that man. The lights constricted his soul. He could die anytime!

“He’s aiming at you! Escape!” shouted someone furiously next to him. That person’s face stiffened and he retreated.

“It’s too late for him to escape,” said Mara-Deva coldly. He closed his eyes, looking solemn and aloof, he said coldly, “Great Destiny Technique, Heavenly Laceration, die!”

Celestial Dao condensed into the light beam, that cultivator’s face paled. His soul started shaking violently as a light beam descended from the sky. The low-level Saint from the Fire Shrine trembled,

and then he closed his eyes and collapsed softly. He was dead.

“You’re lucky I want Qiong Yu alive, otherwise, you wouldn’t have been able to do anything,” said Mara-Deva, reopening his eyes. He glanced at the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine. They remained silent and could only grimace. The Fortune Shrine had some terrifying destiny Celestial Dao techniques. The Heavenly Laceration of the Great Destiny Technique was nigh-unstoppable. It was difficult to escape from the Diviner!

“You dare kill people from the Fire Shrine, Mara-Deva, you want to start a war between the Shrines?” the high-level Fire Saint demanded of Mara-Deva.

“We’ve been enduring your provocations for such a long time, since you don’t fear a war, why would the Fortune Shrine?” said Mara-Deva. A terrifying Celestial Dao condensed in the sky and attacked another low-level Saint. That person’s face turned deathly pale.

The Great Destiny Technique’s Heavenly Laceration was terrifying. The opponent had to have a powerful Celestial Dao technique to resist it!

“Mara-Deva, you bastard!” shouted a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine. He then threw himself at Mara-Deva. Tian Ruo Jian jumped forwards and a terrifying sword light beam appeared, like time had stopped. The strong cultivator withdrew and condensed a black fire in his hand, throwing it at the sword.

“Die!” Mara-Deva’s eyes were filled with murder. He used his Heavenly Laceration again.

The crowd was shaking. Another low-level Saint died! Everybody remained quiet. Mara-Deva’s strength was terrifying!

Saints were dying. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were furious. Mara-Deva was killing low-level Saints like insects. What would happen if he used it against high-level Saints, though?

Nobody knew because they hadn't sensed the real power of his Heavenly Laceration.

Mara-Deva wanted to slaughter them all. It meant that the Fortune Shrine couldn't stand them anymore. The Fire Shrine had been chasing their disciple for such a long time, the Fortune Shrine was furious.

"The Fire Shrine will not let the matter drop!" said the high-level Saint coldly.

"I don't intend to leave the matter at this, either! Today, if we don't solve the issue in Tian Yan City, the Fortune Shrine will start a war against the Fire Shrine. Are you ready for that?" said Mara-Deva indifferently. The strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine was astonished. The issue in Tian Yan City?

They didn't know what was going on in Tian Yan City because they had left for the Godly Grave a while before. But apparently, the Fire Shrine had really offended the Fortune Shrine this time. Surprisingly, they were ready to start a war! When people heard about a war between the two Shrines, they were stunned, and their hearts started pounding. If the Fire Shrine started a war against the Fortune Shrine, would they win? For both Shrines, it would be a tragedy.

"Tian Ruo Jian, how did we offend you? And who was that young man a moment ago?" asked the strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine looking at Tian Ruo Jian.

"We can't stand you!" said Tian Ruo Jian indifferently. He didn't say anything else. The strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine pulled a long face.

——

On the other side, Lin Feng had entered the Godly Grave, a terrifying fire Qi surrounded him. The fire grave was scorching hot there.



However, Lin Feng wasn't interested in the place, he had just followed Qiong Yu. He released his godly awareness and inspected the area. Very quickly, he sensed a powerful Qi in the distance and flew in that direction. He was surrounded by empty space and wind strength to move faster. It was almost like he was teleporting himself.

“Qiong Yu, fight!” he shouted out. Qiong Yu sensed that Lin Feng was chasing him and that he was alone. Lin Feng's Qi wasn't very powerful, he seemed weak. However, his Saint's Weapon was ancient and strange, terrifyingly powerful, and his strength was also strange.

Qiong Yu didn't stop, continuing to fly forwards. Even if he was going to fight against Lin Feng, he didn't want to fight next to the entrance. He wanted to get further in; otherwise, if Mara-Deva and Tian Ruo Jian entered, he'd be in danger, he couldn't compete with them. Besides, he didn't understand why Mara-Deva and Tian Ruo Jian wanted to capture him.

“Fortune Shrine!” Qiong Yu's eyes twinkled. The Qi in this place was terrifying and desolate. They both continued moving, Lin Feng slowly catching up.

---

At that moment, in Tian Yan City, the members of the Fire Shrine and the Fortune Shrine were still silent. However, at that moment, on the Fire Shrine's side, someone suddenly released an ice-cold Qi. Suddenly, he looked at the Diviner coldly.

“Mara-Deva, you killed people from our Shrine with your real body?!” shouted that strong cultivator, breaking the silence. The crowd was stupefied, especially the members of the Fire Shrine. Mara-Deva's real body? Some old people knew that Mara-Deva had been practicing in seclusion with his real body. Was he out again?

The Diviner looked back at him calmly.

“You’re chasing Qiong Yu to kill him?!” that person’s Qi was becoming colder and colder.

“Back in the days, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, you attacked my disciple. After that, you continued chasing him. Do you think the Fortune Shrine would let you do that forever patiently? You’re ridiculous!” said the Diviner indifferently, “Release him now and we’ll leave, and of course, we’ll stop chasing Qiong Yu.”

“Release him? Make him come here!” said that cultivator coldly.

“It seems that there’s no space for negotiation,” said the Diviner indifferently. Everybody remained silent again. However, the members of the Fire Shrine felt pressured now. The Fortune Shrine was starting to kill their people! They were chasing Qiong Yu, trying to threaten them by using Qiong Yu as a hostage.

The only thing they could do was wait and see if Qiong Yu could escape.

“Mara-Deva, if anything happens to Qiong Yu, you’ll pay the price for it!” said the strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine coldly.

The Diviner looked back at him coldly and said, “You think we’re desperate and taking huge risks? We’ve already started killing your people. If anything happens to Zhe Tian, the Fortune Shrine will start a real war against the Fire Shrine.”

When Mara-Deva said that, everybody remained silent. There were people from other Shrines there, smiling coldly on the inside. If the Fire Shrine and the Fortune Shrine started a war, nobody would help them, the other Shrines would be happy. The best thing would be if Lin Feng died, too!

# Chapter 2378: Great Battle Against Qiong Yu!

---

In the desolate, gloomy, and scorching hot cave, the two figures kept flickering. After a very long time, Qiong Yu decided that they were far enough from the entrance and stopped. He turned around and looked at Lin Feng coldly as his fire spear appeared in his hand.

Very quickly, Lin Feng landed in front of him, holding his God's sword.

"Before fighting, could you please tell me who you are?" Qiong Yu asked. He didn't underestimate or despise Lin Feng. He had seen how terrifying his sword attacks were!

"Lin Feng!" Lin Feng didn't hide his real identity. It wasn't necessary anymore. The Diviner had even started killing people from the Fire Shrine, and threatened to start a war. Either the Fortune Shrine or the Fire Shrine would collapse!

"Lin Feng who ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds." Qiong Yu was surprised. He wasn't surprised to learn that the person in front of him was Lin Feng, he was surprised to see how strong he had become. Qiong Yu didn't know much about Lin Feng. Not all the members of the Shrines knew everything about Lin Feng, Qiong Yu had only heard that amongst the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, one of them might have a Forbidden Body and therefore the Shrines wanted to kill him. However, Qiong Yu didn't really believe in the legends related to the Forbidden people. Could a Forbidden person really trigger a Shrines' Dusk War?

The Shrines had already reached a certain level of strength, how come they hadn't managed to destroy someone who had a Forbidden Body? But now Qiong Yu was facing Lin Feng, and felt some admiration for him. Not such a long time had passed since

the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Back then Lin Feng was only a cultivator of the top of the Huang Qi layer, and now he had become a Saint, how impressive!

Qiong Yu's Qi was becoming more and more intense. He said coldly, "The Godly Grave will become your grave. You should feel honored!"

A light beam emerged from Qiong Yu's hand, a drop of blood appeared and turned into a dazzling fire armor, fusing with Qiong Yu's skin. Lin Feng was extremely strong, and Qiong Yu preferred being cautious, Lin Feng had a terrifying Saint's Weapon, so with this armor, Qiong Yu felt completely safe.

"I see. You're really important in the Fire Shrine," said Lin Feng to Qiong Yu. He wasn't surprised that Qiong Yu had several Saint's Weapons. The fire spear was for attacks and the armor was for defense, a complete set.

Qiong Yu moved towards Lin Feng. This time, he looked much more solemn and serious. Each time he took a step, Celestial Dao flew up and he condensed it. He was going to use a Saint's technique!

Lin Feng looked unruffled. His robe was fluttering in the fiery wind. He didn't take Qiong Yu into his own world immediately, Qiong Yu couldn't escape anymore anyway, so why not have a real fight against him? Lin Feng wanted to try using his God's sword.

Qiong Yu lifted his spear and condensed even more Celestial Dao. Around him, several vortexes appeared and turned into spears.

"Die!" shouted Qiong Yu explosively. An endless number of black spears moved towards Lin Feng instantly, turning into fire tornados.

Lin Feng took a step forwards and released God strength.

Lin Feng's sword thrust forwards and released absorbing strength which turned into a vortex. It absorbed the spears one

after another. Lin Feng's sword was like a black hole absorbing everything in its way.

The sword had turned into a black hole which sucked in the spears. Lin Feng was trying out the absorbing strength of his sword!

The spear Qiong Yu was holding shook with his fury, and he shouted out. Three thousand spears appeared and condensed into a single gigantic spear. It shot straight towards the black hole. Small fire dragons appeared and danced around the spear as they roared out.

The black hole started trembling, Lin Feng took a few steps backwards as he cast a deployment spell. The atmosphere became golden. Empty space strength started intertwining. Lin Feng could cast deployment spells instantly with the power of his mind. He also condensed God strength into his deployment spells.

"Hmph!" Qiong Yu grunted coldly. He stabbed his spear into the ground, and the deployment spell on the ground started cracking. He didn't want to give Lin Feng time to cast a deployment spell. However, the deployment spell reappeared instantly. He wasn't as fast as Lin Feng!

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards, an illusion appeared, and everything became dark around his opponent. However, in the darkness, there was a deadly sword shooting towards him. He started to get a bit worried.

"Burn!" shouted Qiong Yu. Flames of fury appeared in his eyes.

Lin Feng's sword penetrated into the ocean of flames, piercing through and reappearing on the other side. Lin Feng frowned; it was as if his sword had pierced through nothing, through emptiness.

"It can't be!" Suddenly, he felt danger. He saw a pair of eyes filled with flames and closed his eyes. His eyes had just started burning

painfully.

Qiong Yu also reappeared, lights dispersing around him. He was having a hard time too. His armor had shattered, forcing him to use an illusion to become immaterial and his eyes to release fire to protect himself.

“Destroy!” said Qiong Yu, pointing at Lin Feng. A terrifying Saint’s strength condensed and shot towards Lin Feng’s third eye. Lin Feng countered with a terrifying death strength. They weren’t that close to one another, but Lin Feng could sense how scary those energies were.

At that moment, Lin Feng had the impression he could die instantly!

However, he closed his eyes and remained completely calm. His sword was shooting forwards and he could not recall it, and he couldn’t dodge, either. He could only use one kind of strength to dodge.

“Great Empty Space Technique!” Lin Feng started entering an empty space, at the same time, he released Qi towards Qiong Yu’s head, the invisible and intangible Qi penetrated into Qiong Yu’s skull.

At that moment, the only thing Qiong Yu wanted to do was kill Lin Feng. “It’s over,” he said, pointing at Lin Feng. He charged forwards and smiled coldly, as if he had found something. He had to kill this guy!

“Eh?” Qiong Yu frowned. He realized there was something wrong!

“Sword intent? How is that possible?” Qiong Yu was astonished. “Impossible!”

However, Qiong Yu retreated as quickly as he could, but it was too late. Lin Feng’s hand suddenly moved towards his head, and he had no time to stop him.

“No!...” The destructive hand was becoming bigger and bigger in his field of vision. It was impossible, but the hand still reached him. His soul shook violently, and his body went numb.

A terrifying strength hit him with the force of a landslide and the power of a tidal wave. Happily, Lin Feng didn't want to kill him, he wanted to make him unable to fight. Qiong Yu sensed his internal organs explode, and coughed blood. Finally, he couldn't hold on anymore, and collapsed.

“Was it an illusion?” whispered Qiong Yu, as if he had realized something.

Lin Feng looked at Qiong Yu. How dangerous. A moment before, he had created a dream using illusion strength which corresponded to what Qiong Yu wanted to see. However, Qiong Yu wanted to kill him so badly, so it was difficult to resist!

Lin Feng looked at his chest. There was blood, but it was worth it. Capturing Qiong Yu was the most important thing in the world, for his son, Zhe Tian!

“But now...” Lin Feng looked around and remembered that he was in the Godly Grave, one of the seven forbidden territories!

# Chapter 2379: Forbidden territory – Godly Grave

---

In Tian Yan City, when Lin Feng captured Qiong Yu, his clone whispered to the Diviner, “I have captured Qiong Yu.”

“Good!” said the Diviner. He was happy. His real body was in Blood Great Imperial City slaughtering people. It was all worth it. He had helped Lin Feng seize an opportunity to capture Qiong Yu. That way, the Fire Shrine wouldn’t act so recklessly, and Zhe Tian would be safe.

“I captured Qiong Yu, will you release him now?” asked the Diviner to the members of the Fire Shrine. The members of the Fire Shrine were stunned. They took out jade talismans and called Qiong Yu quickly. As expected, he wasn’t reachable. Their expressions changed drastically.

“Fortune Shrine, how sly!”

“We’re not as shameless as you, at least,” the Diviner replied pitilessly.

“Well, you captured Qiong Yu in the grave, how do we exchange people now?”

“Release him for me for now,” said Lin Feng indifferently. He walked forwards and said to the members of the Fire Shrine, “I captured Qiong Yu. He’s with my real body. You release Zhe Tian, I stay here. That way, you can keep things under control.”

“You? What if you give up your real body?” asked a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine coldly, sounding skeptical.

Lin Feng released Qi into the air and then raised his fist, punching out. He said, “My clones are extremely powerful too, you think I’d give up one of my powerful clones just to kill Qiong Yu? I don’t care about him at all.”



The members of the Fire Shrine frowned, trying to see if Lin Feng was telling the truth or not. Lin Feng said, “No need to think of a solution. If you act recklessly again, I won’t trust you anymore. I’ll give up my son and I’ll kill Qiong Yu.”

The members of the Fire Shrine looked pensive. Was giving up a clone worth saving Zhe Tian?

“Alright, let’s do the exchange,” said a Saint of the Fire Shrine at that moment.

Lin Feng looked at him and said, “Alright, I’m coming, release Zhe Tian.”

Lin Feng’s clone walked towards the Saint of the Fire Shrine. As long as his clone was there, the Fire Shrine would wait because his real body had Qiong Yu.

The Fire Shrine released Zhe Tian. Zhe Tian slowly walked forwards, when they passed next to each other, Zhe Tian said to Lin Feng telepathically, “Father, let’s escape together.”

“We’re in Tian Yan City!” replied Lin Feng, “Don’t worry. It’s only a clone. They won’t do anything to me. You go back, go and see your mother.”

Zhe Tian’s eyes were red, but he nodded and said, “Father, I will definitely become extremely strong!”

“Go!” said Lin Feng calmly. He slapped Zhe Tian’s shoulder. The Fire Shrine didn’t do anything dodgy.

When Zhe Tian went back. The Diviner said, “We’re off.”

Their figures flickered. The Saints of the Fire Shrine glanced after them coldly. The Diviner sensed a terrifying Qi surrounding him. A few people appeared in front of him in the sky, staring at him coldly.

Something appeared in the Diviner’s hand; dazzling lights surrounded them and the vault of heaven absorbed them. They

turned into illusions and disappeared, leaving Tian Yan City. They had gotten prepared.

After the Diviner and the others left, the cultivator of the Fire Shrine said, “As expected, he prepared a teleportation scepter.”

“Get ready to fight. The Fortune Shrine doesn’t fear a war, the Fire Shrine doesn’t either,” said an old man indifferently. Then they disappeared. That simple sentence could determine the fate of an entire generation.

---

Lin Feng didn’t control the situation. His strength was limited. There were many things he couldn’t control. He knew that when he had entered the Godly Grave already. He didn’t even know how to get out of the Godly Grave.

Lin Feng’s figure flickered. The landscapes were desolate because everything was burning there. Anything that could survive in there was a precious treasure.

“There’s someone!” At that moment, Lin Feng saw a figure. The man was lying on the ground, injured.

Lin Feng flashed forwards and landed next to the man. He was a Saint Emperor at the top of the Sheng Di Layer. In the outside world, apart from Saints, such cultivators were already strong. Most of the time, only Saints had the opportunity to meet other Saints. Saints were too mysterious.

A powerful life strength penetrated into the man’s body as Lin Feng helped him recover. The person said, “Thank you very much, Master.”

“How long have you been in the Godly Grave?” asked Lin Feng.

“How long?” That person looked confused. He was struggling to remember.

“I forgot, hundreds of years, I guess,” the man said sorrowfully.

Back then, he was powerful and influential in the outside world, and now he had been stuck in there for hundreds of years. What had he gone through in there?

“What is there in the Godly Grave?” asked Lin Feng.

That person looked pensive. In the past, he used to think there were opportunities, he had thought he’d find historical remains. Then he had realized people were fighting everywhere inside. In the past he thought there weren’t many Saints, and only then he had realized he didn’t know much about the world.

He was at the top of the Sheng Di Layer and kept being humiliated in there, he could do nothing but drift and live without purpose. Nobody respected him.

He looked at Lin Feng, he looked desperate and replied, “Battles!”

“Battles?” asked Lin Feng surprised, “What do you mean?”

“I don’t know either, people just wander around and fight. There are nine exits, all of them correspond to nine ancient spiritual beings. There are battlefields and historical remains. The Godly Grave is a place to fight. And regarding the historical remains, I’ve never found any, and I’ve never heard of any.”

He lowered his head and finished hoarsely, “I want to leave this evil place.”

“Why haven’t I seen anyone?” asked Lin Feng, “And what is this, the word ‘FIRE’ is written on your third eye?”

The word was written on the man’s forehead, dimly discernible and containing a particular Qi.

“Continue straight ahead, there’s a battlefield. You’ll understand. The word FIRE is the spiritual being’s signature, anyone who goes there get his third eye signed. It proves you are one of the Fire God’s people,” explained the man.

Lin Feng frowned. Signature? And what did he mean with

battlefields? What kind of place was the Godly Grave?

Lin Feng had been to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell. It was an elaborate place with palaces, demon kings, demons, etc. Was the Godly Grave really only a grave for spiritual beings, or gods?

Lin Feng guessed that the forbidden territories all had mysteries. To the people who controlled those places, they probably weren't mysterious, however.

Lin Feng understood that in this world, when reaching a certain level, there were no problems anymore, the forbidden territories weren't mysteries in the eyes of such people.

"Bring me there," said Lin Feng. The man shook his head quickly. "Master, I don't want to go back there."

"I'll protect you," said Lin Feng.

That cultivator forced himself to nod with a sigh, "Alright. Straight away the whole time."

Lin Feng took the man and flew in that direction!

# Chapter 2380: Have the Gods Really Vanished?

---

Lin Feng took the Saint Emperor forwards. They quickly arrived at the top of a mountain and stopped. Lin Feng gazed into the distance.

There was a gigantic valley below, in which there was indeed a battlefield. Smoke kept rising up in the air, and there were caves and fortresses everywhere, with tents scattered between. Many people were sitting around, looking confused. There was an invisible and intangible Qi around them which indicated they had been fighting for a very long time.

In the sky was a gigantic curtain of fire. Lin Feng was still far from all this, but he could sense an enormous amount of strength. That strength wanted to pierce through his third eye, leaving him no choice.

“How come there are so many Saint Emperors?” asked Lin Feng. Those people all seemed to be Saint Emperors.

“They’re like me. After they came in, they weren’t able to leave. Even though I’ve been here for a long time, many people have been here for much, much longer than me. Some of them have been here for ten thousand or even a hundred thousand years. The most incredible thing I’ve seen here was seven generations of people who met in here, they were from the same clan and surprisingly they all met in here. You know, at our level, if we don’t get killed, we almost never die,” the man replied. It reminded him of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, generations of people entering the forbidden territories and getting stuck inside.

“Since it’s a battlefield, it must be to death, right? Why are there so many people?” asked Lin Feng.

“The FIRE word in people’s third eyes is a gift offered by the

spiritual being to protect people before dying. Even if their body is destroyed, they can use body capture to come back to life. Saints have incredible healing abilities. I have personally died twice; once I was saved and brought back to life, and once I stole a body using body capture.”

That person looked sad and devastated, he had no way to live. He had become a puppet, only death could save him.

“According to legends, there are spiritual beings’ historical remains in the Godly Grave, but there’s only a battlefield here? How come? What is the purpose?” Lin Feng didn’t understand.

“Lies. Everything is a lie in the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said the man firmly. “I’ve heard many things I would have never dared believe in the past. For example, people who manage to leave usually find historical remains, and the spiritual beings allow them to leave. Many people who come here are strong fighters, and they can make the spiritual beings disappear, but do spiritual beings really disappear? The spiritual beings who made the Shrines, are they alive or not? Are there only peerless Saints who controlled Shrines?”

“You think that the spiritual beings still exist?” asked Lin Feng.

“I also used to think that the spiritual beings, or gods if you wish, had disappeared. But since I’ve been here, I’m sure that the nine gods still exist. Otherwise the existence of the Godly Grave wouldn’t be justified. Those people, or deities, despise us. They use us like chess pieces. They look down at us from the sky. The Godly Grave is a forbidden territory for us; for them, it’s a game!”

He looked terrified, desperate, panic-stricken, and terrifyingly sad. He put his hands on his head and shouted furiously, “No, no...”

“What’s going on?” asked Lin Feng frowning. His informer went into a frenzy, writhing in pain.

“The word in his third eye!” Lin Feng was astonished. The word in his third eye started burning, then it grew large enough to surround his body.

“No!...” the cultivator screamed, and began to burn.

Lin Feng pulled a long face, and moved forwards. Ice surrounded the man, but it was useless. He burned down to ash and finally, only the gigantic word ‘FIRE’ was left behind.

“He’s dead.” Lin Feng was grim. They were chatting about the gods, and suddenly that person had begun to burn. How mysterious. Lin Feng raised his head and looked up at the sky. Did gods really exist?

According to legends, there had been a great war in the ancient times, and the gods had vanished. Was it all a lie?

Was everything about the Godly Grave a lie, too?

Lin Feng looked at the ashes and bowed. “If I hadn’t taken you back, you wouldn’t have died. I just didn’t know.”

Lin Feng turned around and gazed into the distance. Someone came out of a fortress. He had big eyes, but looked remarkably dignified. He sensed something and looked back at Lin Feng. However, he didn’t look surprised; it was just another person who had come to the Godly Grave.

It was normal. Many people came here.

“Since you’re here, come down. There is no exit,” said that person. Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. He had no option, he jumped forwards.

Lin Feng walked slowly through the valley. However, when he landed on the ground, an invisible and intangible strength crashed onto his third eye. The word “FIRE” appeared there, just like the one on the man who had just died.

“Is it really a god’s signature?” murmured Lin Feng. If there was

no god, what was the explanation? No wonder the man had suspected they were still gods after having spent such a long time here.

Lin Feng walked past a middle-aged man. The man looked at Lin Feng and said, "From now on, obey me. If you disobey, you'll die."

That middle-aged man was a low-level Saint. Lin Feng's cultivation level was always blurry in other people's eyes. He looked ordinary.

"What do I need to do?" asked Lin Feng. He didn't show how strong he was. He needed to understand what kind of place the Godly Grave was, and he needed to get pieces of information from other people.

"Nothing. Just stay with them. If there's anything to do, I'll tell you," said the middle-aged man indifferently. In the distance was an army of cultivators.

Lin Feng nodded and walked over to them. Those people looked at Lin Feng apathetically, totally expressionless.

"Another unlucky person," a woman sighed. Lin Feng turned around and looked at her. She was wearing black clothes. She didn't look beautiful, she looked just normal, clean, and simple.

Lin Feng smiled and sat down next to her. She was a bit surprised, but she smiled and said, "Where are you from?"

"Northwest Area," said Lin Feng smiling.

"Northwest Area? You're from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds then. It's not far from the Fire Shrine. No wonder you came through the fire door," said the woman smiling. She stretched her hand and said, "Lin Yi."

"Lin!" Lin Feng's heart twitched, but he shook her hand and smiled, "Mu Feng."

"By the way, Lin Yi, you said I'm from the Imperial Court of the



Continent of the Nine Clouds, but are there people here from other places, then?” asked Lin Feng. He was curious.

“I don’t know. I’ve only been here for a dozen years. I’ve talked to some people, but some of them are from places I’ve never heard of, and I don’t know whether they were from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds or not.”

“You’ve been here for a short time too, then. What’s going on with the battles? Who are we fighting? And why?” asked Lin Feng. There had to be a reason to fight. The one who had died had told Lin Feng the gods were just playing a game...

“For merit and to open the gods’ historical remains, but we are just cannon fodder,” said Lin Yi smiled sadly. People around looked at her, all looking devastated. What a tragedy to be there!

# Chapter 2381: Invasion

---

“Merit? Open the historical remains?” Lin Feng didn’t understand what Lin Yi meant. Were there really historical remains there? Did they even need to open them?

“What merit? And has anyone ever seen the historical remains?” asked Lin Feng to Lin Yi.

“When we enter the Godly Grave, depending on the entrance you use to enter, a different word is put into your third eye. When you enter through the fire entrance, the word FIRE appears in your third eye which means we represent the fire spiritual being, or fire god. When people enter through the other entrances, the same happens to them; a word appears in their third eye and indicates which spiritual being they represent. When we kill people from other armies, we steal other spiritual beings’ achievements, like points!

“Regarding the historical remains, I’ve heard some old people say that we’ll never see them personally,” Lin Yi smiled sadly. She had already resigned herself. There was nothing else to do, anyway.

“Cultivators of the Di Qi layer are under the orders of the Saints. Since we are not as strong as Saints, we are just cannon fodder on the battlefield. When Saints are killed, the killers they get more points, it seems. Of course, only Saints who have been in here for a long time know what things are actually like.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng nodded. They needed military merits, or points, to open the historical remains, it seemed. Lin Feng now wondered... who benefited from the victories? Only the one in charge of the specific grave? Or the whole army, too?

“Killing other people is getting more and more difficult, because everybody knows how to protect their points. They don’t let their people die. Each time armies start fighting, some people are in charge of the corpses, and don’t let you steal points,” continued

Lin Yi.

They heard some steps behind them. Lin Feng and Lin Yi turned around. A woman had arrived. She looked heroic and valiant, graceful, elegant, and charming, truly noble. She glanced over the crowd and especially at Lin Feng and Lin Yi.

“What’s your name?” the woman asked Lin Feng.

“She’s the Blood Saint’s daughter, she’s in charge of us most of the time. She has an explosive temper. Don’t infuriate her,” Lin Yi warned Lin Feng.

“Mu Feng!” replied Lin Feng.

“You, stand up.” said the woman aggressively, pointing at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was surprised. He wasn’t used to people talking to him that way, but he wasn’t like in the past. He didn’t have such a bad temper anymore, he was like pale clouds and a gentle breeze. He didn’t want to confront her directly right now. At least, he first wanted to understand what was going on in the Godly Grave and how to leave. He also wanted to understand what the point of the battles between the nine spiritual beings was. Were the gods really playing a game?

“Take out your jade talisman,” said the woman said to Lin Feng. He took it out and they exchanged their contact details.

“Lin Yi, go and show him around so that he gets familiar with the area,” said the woman, before turning around and leaving.

Lin Yi and some other people stood up and said to Lin Feng, “Let’s go then. We’ll go and scout.”

“Scout for what?” asked Lin Feng.

“It’s a war. We need to scout and gather intelligence. Otherwise, the enemies will kill us easily without us even knowing how. It’s very dangerous here!” said Lin Yi. The group of people headed out.

“Mu Feng, let me give you a map of the area. We’re on the edge of

the Fire Grave here,” said Lin Yi, transmitting a map to Lin Feng using her godly awareness.

“How desolate. Are there really historical remains here?” said Lin Feng. He had the feeling there was nothing here.

“If there are no historical remains, why would there be so many people, including Saints?” interjected someone. They were four people, two men in addition to Lin Feng and Lin Yi. They looked cold, their eyes empty and hopeless.

“In front of us is an area where people often hide, but our enemies usually don’t hide that far,” said Lin Yi. They all released their godly awareness and inspected the mountain range.

“There’s nobody,” whispered Lin Yi, “But even if we can’t see anyone with our godly awareness, we have to be careful. Many people have incredible hiding abilities. However, the probability of seeing an enemy here is not high.”

Lin Feng frowned because he could sense life with his godly awareness.

As expected, Lin Yi was right, some people are hiding here. I can only sense some dimly discernible life energy. Lin Yi can’t sense anything, it’s not unusual, thought Lin Feng. Lin Yi was a bit careless because she was too close to their base, convinced there was no enemy this far out.

Very quickly, they crossed the area, but Lin Feng didn’t say anything about what he had sensed. He wanted to cross the area and see if those people who were hiding would come out at some point.

“How fast.” At that moment, Lin Feng was startled, as the thread of life energy he had sensed moved extremely fast, and nobody had noticed it. If he hadn’t been staring at it the whole time, he wouldn’t have noticed it, either!

Lin Feng ignored the enemy and continued moving forwards.

After a short time, they arrived in a vast area, and Lin Feng sensed some people's Qi.

I think something is going to happen, thought Lin Feng. As expected, when Lin Feng arrived at the beginning of a valley, he said to Lin Yi, "That's enough for today, isn't it? Let's go back."

Lin Yi was surprised, go back? How could things be so easy?

"We're scouting. There are enemies on our territory, how could we go back?" said Lin Yi.

If we don't go back, we might never go back..., thought Lin Feng. He whispered, "There is a great danger awaiting us here, let's go back."

Lin Feng turned around and started retreating. The two men frowned; Lin Yi was surprised, but she decided to trust Lin Feng and followed him. At the same time, she said telepathically, "Did anything happen?"

"I sensed lots of life Qi," said Lin Feng.

"Impossible," Lin Yi's face stiffened, "We're good at scouting, especially when it comes to sensing strength, and we sensed nothing at all."

"They use Saint's Weapons to hide their Qi," replied Lin Feng.

Lin Yi's face stiffened, "If that's the case, we need to go back and report it to the superiors. We need to leave if the situation is dangerous.

"Invaders?" asked Lin Feng.

"Enemies don't come here to scout. If they're really here, it's to invade us. We need to hurry up and head back." Lin Yi accelerated. The enemies remained discreet, but Lin Feng noticed that they had changed their positions. They had gotten closer to the palace.

"How many people do we have? How many Saints?" asked Lin Feng.

“There are three Saints, the strongest one is the Blood Saint,” replied Lin Yi.

“Since we have Saints, why don’t the Saints of the other side attack directly? Why do they need to use armies? It seems troublesome,” said Lin Feng. He didn’t understand. The Saints could destroy all the Saint Emperors as they wished.

“Saints don’t care about Saint Emperors, especially since there are so many of them. Killing Saints to get points is too difficult,” replied Lin Yi.

“If it were me, I wouldn’t kill them,” said Lin Feng, smiling indifferently.

When they arrived back to the palace, the Blood Saint’s daughter was surprised. She asked, “How come you’re back already?”

“Mu Feng said he sensed lots of life Qi which was getting closer and closer to our palace,” said one of the two men. Lin Feng frowned. They had made him bear the responsibility, no matter what happened, nobody would blame them.

“And you didn’t sense anything?” asked the woman.

“No.” said the two, shaking their heads.

“What about you, Lin Yi?” asked the woman.

“I...” Lin Yi’s face stiffened. “I didn’t either, but I believe Mu Feng.”

“You have acute perceptions and you haven’t sensed anything, he has just arrived and you believe him?” said the woman coldly. She looked at Lin Feng, a fire whip appeared and lashed towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng released Qi, but Lin Yi said to him telepathically, “Don’t try to resist.”

Lin Feng stopped, and the whip crashed onto his body. His clothes were torn apart instantly, but he didn’t move at all, he just

glanced at her coldly. If Lin Yi hadn't told him anything, he would have killed her.

"I'll forgive you this time. If you do something like that again, I'll kill you." said the woman coldly, staring at Lin Feng.

You're right, I'll forgive you this time too, thought Lin Feng. She would see after the enemy arrived, and understand. Then, Lin Feng would settle accounts with her regarding those whiplashes.

Of course, those whiplashes didn't injure Lin Feng at all. Otherwise, he would have already done something!

"What do the battles look like here?" Lin Feng gazing into the distance. They were soon going to fight!

# Chapter 2382: You Want To Die!

---

The Blood Saint's daughter left, looking angry. After she left, Lin Feng said to Lin Yi, "Leave with me."

Lin Yi was startled. Leave? In the Godly Grave, Saint Emperors who didn't stay with a Saint usually died in tragic conditions. Only some terrifyingly Saints dared travel alone in here. They killed as many people as they could and got points alone. According to legends, those who managed to do that had opportunities to leave.

According to legends, the spiritual beings were the gods of this world. They remained at the top of the world forever. They were the ones who had created the world, the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Shrines, everything. There were many legends about gods. Everybody wanted to see the gods and their historical remains.

"Mu Feng, you're new here, you don't know much, but traveling alone in the Godly Grave is too dangerous," replied Lin Yi.

"Trust me!" said Lin Feng smiling at Lin Yi. When she saw his smile, she was astonished. This guy was so mysterious. She suddenly remembered that Lin Feng had sensed the presence of enemies, but how?

"You really want to leave?" asked Lin Yi.

"We'll leave when we're done here. I need to do some things here. But first, let's get away from the crowd," said Lin Feng.

She looked at him and nodded, "Alright. So many years have passed and I couldn't break through in here. Maybe I have a problem, maybe my life is just useless here. I can gamble this time. Mu Feng, I'll stay with you."

"Let's go!" said Lin Feng. Their figures flickered. Even though they were under the Blood Saint's orders, nobody prevented them from moving around.



Very quickly, they arrived at the top of a mountain and gazed into the distance. They didn't hurry to leave. Lin Feng said, "Those people will arrive soon."

Lin Yi looked at Lin Feng. He looked completely composed, and even when the Blood Saint's daughter flogged him, he looked unruffled, as if he didn't care. He didn't take her seriously.

Maybe I was wrong?, thought Lin Yi suddenly. She couldn't see Lin Feng's cultivation level. It seemed like he was at the same cultivation level as her, but at the same time, she couldn't be sure.

"Could it be..." Lin Yi's mouth twitched. Could it be that Mu Feng was a Saint?

---

Time passed, the air was calm. However, Lin Feng sensed that something strange was happening. His eyes glittered. He said, "They're here."

"Eh?" Lin Yi gazed into the distance. Were they there?

Far away, a few people flew up. The Blood Saint's eyes shone. Two other Saints appeared next to him.

"Who are you?" shouted the Blood Saint coldly. His voice spread far away, and was as explosive as thunder. However, a million li away, a curtain of light appeared. The atmosphere was sealed!

"Some people are invading us?" At that moment, everybody understood. When people invaded someone else's area, they sealed it first. Otherwise, other forces would come and try to steal their points while they were busy fighting!

Suddenly, a terrifying Qi filled the air. People flew up. It was a terrifying army. The members of the Fire Grave realized that only when they got closer.

"They're using Saint's Weapons to hide their Qi!" swore the Blood Saint. He shouted coldly, "You didn't go and scout?!"

shouted the Blood Saint furiously.

His daughter pulled a long face. She looked at her army, looking for Lin Feng. He had been right!

“How is that possible?” She couldn’t find him, and she couldn’t see Lin Yi either.

She didn’t have time to think though. A terrifying strength suddenly covered the whole area.

“Everybody protect your own self. We’re encircled!” said the Blood Saint when he sensed the immense Qi. They had no choice but protect themselves this time. The enemies had a good strategy, and wanted to kill them!

People were panic-stricken. The Blood Saint had told the crowd to protect themselves, which meant they weren’t strong enough.

“Father!” said the Blood Saint’s daughter, she pulled a long face. If they were encircled, it meant they were doomed!

“The only way to escape is to break the seal!” said the Blood Saint to his daughter, as a terrifying strength surrounded her.

“Father.” The Blood Saint’s daughter was shocked. She saw a terrifying oppressive strength surround the Blood Saint. A Saint slowly arrived. She knew that the Blood Saint was protecting her, but she couldn’t stay next to him.

“Mu Feng.” said Lin Yi. She was astonished. Their enemies had really come, like Lin Feng had said.

Lin Feng looked at Lin Yi inquiringly. She said, “The area is sealed. We’re stuck here. The sealed area is gigantic.”

“Let’s go and see.” She looked at him, turned around, and saw the battle had already started. Very quickly, the members of the Fire Grave started getting slaughtered. They couldn’t win, and didn’t stand a chance, since the Blood Saint had given up directly.

“Without planning and without a strategy, the battle could only

end up tragically,” said Lin Yi when she saw the Saints of the Fire Grave getting slaughtered. It was the first time she had seen such a terrifying massacre. She had seen many battles, she had seen many people die, and many enemies steal points, but today, the Fire Grave’s members were just getting slaughtered.

When cultivators died, the enemies took the fire signatures the members of the Fire Grave had in their third eyes, those were the points.

How macabre. They look like bloodthirsty demons, thought Lin Feng, glancing at the action. The members of the Fire Grave were running in all directions. Some people ran towards Lin Feng and Lin Yi.

Those people just glanced at them but didn’t stop, they continued running away. They had to protect themselves first. However, when they arrived at the edge of the territory, they couldn’t break the seal.

The Blood Saint’s daughter also escaped. When she saw Lin Feng and Lin Yi, she said coldly, “Bastard, you knew that the enemies were invading our territory, why didn’t you insist!”

Lin Yi was amused. The woman had refused to believe him, and now she was releasing her anger on him.

The Blood Saint’s daughter released a terrifying Qi and took out her whip again. It turned into a fire snake and lashed out at a terrifying speed.

“Be careful!” said Lin Yi. However, at that moment, the Blood Saint’s daughter was astonished; Lin Feng had grabbed the whip, and it instantly stopped moving.

“You...” the Blood Saint’s daughter pulled a long face.

Lin Feng used a little bit of strength to pull it out of her hand. Then, he flogged her violently. Her clothes were instantly torn apart.

Lin Feng was expressionless. He flogged her again. The lash of the whip surrounded her neck and he dragged her towards him, looking at her in an icily disdainful way without saying anything.

She felt so humiliated her face had turned deathly pale.

How come he's so strong?, thought the Blood Saint's daughter. Even though she felt humiliated, she could sense he was terrifyingly strong. Lin Feng didn't need to make the slightest exertion against her, a mere Saint Emperor. She couldn't do anything against him.

"Insolent!" shouted someone furiously at that moment. When the Blood Saint saw that Lin Feng had captured his daughter, he released a powerful Qi towards him. But his opponent also attacked him at that moment, so he didn't have time to react.

"Go and kill him." shouted the Blood Saint to his two partners. One of them left the battle, flying towards Lin Feng. He was a Half-Saint. He looked angry and released a formidable energy.

"You really want to die!" shouted that person furiously. He released Celestial Dao; Lin Feng sensed an explosive fire Celestial Dao surround him. It wasn't pleasant.

The man punched out in Lin Feng's direction.

"No!" Lin Yi pulled a long face. Saints were too terrifying. She looked at Lin Feng; he was still standing there, and when the Saint's fist bombarded his body, he didn't move, as if he had been waiting to die.

The powerful fist smashed into Lin Feng. The Blood Saint's daughter smiled coldly. "How reckless! Lin Yi, you also want to die!"

However, at that moment, the Saint's expression changed. The atmosphere around him distorted, and he couldn't control the strength around his fist.

Lin Feng pointed at him, and a sharp sword emerged from his

finger. With his God strength, he was an expert in close combat. Blood appeared on that cultivator's head. His eyes were wide open, he couldn't believe his eyes.

The Blood Saint's daughter was astonished too. Finally, she looked truly frightened.

# Chapter 2383: War's Prologue

---

Lin Feng looked at him, as a mysterious strength emerged from his opponent's third eye. It was like that strength was trying to protect his soul.

“That kind of strength!” Lin Feng sensed its power.

“Lin Yi, can you steal points from people of the same Grave as you?” asked Lin Feng.

“You can't!” replied Lin Yi. She was trembling. She hadn't thought Lin Feng would be so strong to the extent that he could easily kill a Saint.

“Alright,” Lin Feng nodded. His God strength replaced Celestial Dao, he released swords which pierced through his opponent's third eye, destroying his last defense, and he died.

The Blood Saint's daughter's face was ghastly. She had the impression Lin Feng was a demon. He could easily kill Saints, and she had flogged him before!?

Lin Feng studied the battle, and said to the Blood Saint's daughter, “You father is not strong enough, the enemies are much stronger. But if he's lucky, he can escape alone.”

The Blood Saint's daughter whispered, “You're so strong, can you save those people? They were your comrades, and the intruders will kill everyone, they will not spare your life.”

Lin Feng looked at her and smiled evilly, “You think a lot.”

At that moment, the two men who had gone scouting with Lin Yi and Lin Feng ran towards Lin Feng. When they realized that Lin Feng was extremely strong, they hoped Lin Feng would protect them.

“Save us!” said the two, looking at Lin Feng. They both looked desperate. But Lin Feng looked at them apathetically, as if he

didn't care about them.

"That's your problem. Piss off!" said Lin Feng coldly. The two stopped, they looking desperate and devastated.

"If you don't save us, you're going to die, too. After they kill us, it'll be your turn," said one of them, staring at Lin Feng coldly.

"Die!" said Lin Feng. His voice carried death strength, the man's face turned grey, and an enemy behind killed him and stole his Word.

Very quickly, a few people were standing before Lin Feng and looking at him. They didn't dare get close, and eventually withdrew. That guy could kill Saints, he was dangerous, they would wait until the Saints battled to deal with him.

The Blood Saint was fighting fiercely. The area around him was empty, and people didn't dare get too close. The other Saint of the Fire Grave was surrounded by two Saints. The Fire Grave was going to suffer a crushing defeat.

How tragic, thought Lin Feng when he saw all those corpses. People were getting crushed, one after another.

A strong Qi surrounded Lin Feng. It was the man who had been fighting against the Saint Lin Feng had killed a moment before. Lin Feng had kind of helped him get rid of an enemy. He was inspecting Lin Feng, but he didn't seem like he wanted to attack. He had seen how scary Lin Feng was a moment before.

"Your father is going to die soon," said Lin Feng. The Blood Saint was looking weaker and weaker.

"Lin Yi, in those people's third eyes, there's the word GOLD, are they from the Dazzling Gold Shrine?" inquired Lin Feng.

"I don't know. The nine groups of the Godly Grave are named after the nine Shrines of the ancient world. According to legends, nine gods created them. This place seems to be a kind of game for them, like a chess game. I don't know whether the current Shrines

have joined hands with them or not, now. Nobody knows, I think. I don't believe the current Shrines cooperate with them, though. Many people who come to the forbidden territories are Shrines' members, and what's certain is that the Fire Shrine's members usually come through the fire entrance."

"I understand," said Lin Feng nodded. The other battles were already over. The Saints looked at Lin Feng and the others and drew closer, especially the three Saint invaders. On the Fire Grave's side, only the Blood Saint and Lin Feng were left. Lin Yi and the Blood Saint's daughter were useless now.

"You don't intend to let me off?" Lin Feng said to the Saints.

The three Saints remained silent.

"Alright!" said Lin Feng. A sword appeared in his hand, brilliant and ready. An ice-cold Qi filled the air.

"Be careful!" said the Saint who had been watching Lin Feng just now.

A dazzling empty space strength surged over them.

"Deployment spell!" A Saint flashed and destroyed the deployment spell. The air hummed, and the sword moved towards him. It contained pure speed strength.

"How fast!" The man looked glum. An ancient golden shield appeared in front of him and he retreated, the sword suddenly turned around and shot towards the two other Saints in an eyeblink.

"Piss off!" shouted one of the Saints. A five-colored golden vortex appeared and surrounded the sword, but empty space lights illuminated everyone and turned into a great empty space cage.

Lin Feng slowly walked towards them as if he were taking a stroll. The golden cage in front of him disappeared, and a figure appeared. Lin Feng put his finger on the man's third eye, at the same time releasing penetrating strength. The golden signature



felt strange under his finger. Anyway, Lin Feng wanted to kill the enemy and steal his Word.

“Destroy!” said Lin Feng. His opponent collapsed and died. The strength of the Word washed into Lin Feng’s third eye, and he suddenly felt stronger.

“How strange!” Lin Feng sighed. Was that thing really a god’s signature? If not, what was it?

Lin Feng continued walking forwards and stealing Words. The Blood Saint’s daughter saw people die one after another in astonishment. She even felt ridiculous. She had told Lin Feng “You want to die!”, as if she could have killed him easy. Lin Feng could kill her in one glance, he was a real demon king! He was destroying the complete army of the intruders alone!

Lin Yi’s heart was also pounding. Lin Feng was too strong! At his level, against those people who were much weaker than him, he didn’t even need to battle anymore, it wasn’t a battle. He was just slaughtering people in his way.

The golden curtain opened, and figure appeared in front of Lin Feng. It was a Saint. Lin Feng asked, “Why do we need to steal people’s points?”

He sounded indifferent, natural and at ease. However, that made him look all the more terrifying. The Saint’s mouth twitched. He didn’t want to fight against Lin Feng. They had tried to invade this place, and because of one person the result was tragic.

“I don’t know!” said the Saint, grimacing. Lin Feng stretched out his hand and pointed at him with one finger. A God’s sword emerged from his finger; it was astonishingly fast, having reached the peak of perfection. His whole hand was a sword.

That Saint had no time to react. His third eye broke apart and Lin Feng stole his Word. Another Saint was dead.

The Blood Saint’s daughter felt completely numb. She had

provoked him a few times, and now she saw all these Saints die in front of her, it made her tremble.

For Lin Feng, all this looked normal. He looked totally calm and indifferent.

Lin Feng walked past the corpse, then killed the two other Saints because all they could tell him when he asked for more details was, “I don’t know.”

When the deployment spells disappeared, the Blood Saint’s daughter and Lin Yi couldn’t see anyone anymore. They only saw the Blood Saint still fighting, and he looked exhausted. Lin Feng had destroyed all the others!

Lin Feng looked at that fight and walked in their direction. He needed to know the secret of the Grave to leave. In the outside world, a bloody battle had started between the Fortune Shrine and the Fire Shrine. A group of people from the Fortune Shrine had been slaughtered by the Fire Shrine.

It didn’t look very dramatic, but the consequences would be real. It would push the conflict to another level!

# Chapter 2384: Traveling Alone

---

Lin Feng interrupted the Blood Saint's battle. The two of them looked at Lin Feng coldly.

"You killed my people!" shouted the old man who was fighting against the Blood Saint. He had a long beard, thick eyebrows, and looked dignified and majestic. He controlled gold strength and his gold strength had reached the peak of perfection. His attacks were powerful and his defense was incredible, he was only a bit slow. If Lin Feng hadn't distracted him a moment before by killing his comrades, he would have already killed the Blood Saint.

Lin Feng stood in the air and asked them both, "Why do we need to steal people's points?"

"I will tell you. When you have enough points, they turn into historical remains. If a person wins enough point on an individual basis, then they can personally receive the gods' teachings," said the old man with the thick eyebrows.

"Everybody believes in the gods here." Lin Feng was stunned.

The old man continued, "The gods decide the rules. If you kill people of the same level, you get more points, that's why Saints don't kill Saint Emperors. We don't get enough points that way. It's why we make our Saint Emperors fight against Saint Emperors. You just killed many people, but you probably didn't get many points for the Fire Grave. You just slaughtered Saint Emperors, and that was actually against the rules."

"So the gods told you the rules personally? Nobody told me anything about rules," said Lin Feng, smiling coldly.

"Hmph! I've been here for a very long time, I know better than you! It's for the balance, to avoid that extremely strong people slaughtering everyone else. Saints don't go to enemies' territories to slaughter weaker cultivators, otherwise the Saints of the other

side could also go and slaughter the Saint Emperors on the other side. That would be useless and the historical remains would never appear,” said the old man coldly, “There are nine supreme cultivators at the head of the graves. Even if they control everything, they don’t fight, they just let everything happen according to the rules.”

“Lin Feng, that’s true, Saints never attack Saint Emperors, or really rarely. That’s why Saint Emperors are just cannon fodder, because there are too many of them. According to the rules, we do have to kill a sufficient number of Saint Emperors to open the historical remains. There aren’t many Saints, but they can only fight against other Saints, and killing Saints isn’t as easy. As you become stronger, it gets more complicated to kill them” Lin Yi told Lin Feng telepathically.

Lin Feng believed in the gods more and more. Those rules created a real balance; Saint Emperors were cannon fodder, the nine supreme entities controlled everything, but never fought because there weren’t many people who had the same cultivation level as them. One person killing billions easily was useless. Only killing a sufficient number of people of the same level was rewarding.

“If your cultivation level is the same as mine, a low-level Saint, and you kill everyone, you will get very few points: first because it’s against the rules, and second, you will probably die.” The old man and the Blood Saint released their Qi to surround Lin Feng.

“Very few?” Lin Feng was surprised. When he had killed the Saints, he had sensed an incredible strength, was that ‘a few’? Were there really rules here? But then, since he was at the God level, what was his cultivation level?

If he had to compare himself with normal cultivators, he could be compared to a low-level Saint, but his cultivation and his techniques were completely different from other people’s. He could easily destroy Half-Saints, his fighting abilities were at least a rank higher. Relying on various methods, he could compete with

low-level Saints. With terrifying Saint's Weapons, his fighting abilities were even scarier.

So, he was probably considered a Half-Saint, and in terms of fighting abilities, a low-level Saint. That was the particularity of his cultivation, his own God level.

To Lin Feng, it was probably the last cultivation level he would have. It also meant one thing: nothing was impossible for him anymore. He had to study, and he would gradually become stronger and stronger. His strength had no limit.

"Pathetic," said Lin Feng. The old man and the Blood Saint were startled, watching Lin Feng coldly. They were pathetic?

"I've been here for a short time and you tell me there are rules, and since there are rules, why don't you let Saint Emperors travel alone? You are Saints and you abuse your power to control them. You don't go and fight against enemies alone because you are incompetent. You know you can't kill people of the same cultivation level. But that way, even if someday you had enough points and the historical remains appeared, there would be many Saints there, what would you do then?" said Lin Feng calmly. "You know what would happen, but because you are incompetent, you try to protect your lives by using other people. You are just afraid and weak."

The old man's face stiffened. Lin Feng's words were like a knife stabbing his heart.

"So what? When you come into the Godly Grave, you can never go out. Even if you don't die here, even if people in the outside world see that your jade talisman isn't broken, they don't know this place is just like a prison. If you're not strong enough, how can you travel alone? How can you kill so many strong opponents? Do you know how dangerous this place is?" challenged the old man coldly.

"So, you admit there are stronger cultivators?" said Lin Feng.

The old man was surprised and said, “Of course, but it doesn’t mean you are one of them!”

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and a god sword appeared. He flew up and an extremely heavy energy descended from the sky.

His sword was as heavy as a gigantic axe, containing overwhelming energy. He struck the seal, and cracks appeared, breaking sounds spread out. The sword streaked across the sky again, and shattered the seal!

“When you face people who terrifyingly strong and whose cultivation level is much higher than yours, you feel weak. You have the impression you will never be as strong as them, you find them mysterious. But those people used to be weak, too. Everyone goes through the same things, independent of your cultivation level, it’s a universal rule. All in all, we are all ordinary people who have different levels and different lives.”

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the Blood Saint and the old man. When he wasn’t a Saint, he used to think Saints were incredible, he used to think of them as gods. Now, he realized that being a Saint wasn’t such a big deal after all.

“When you’re weak, you cower. When you have strong beliefs, you persevere, and then someday you become strong enough, and when you reach a certain level, if you stop believing, you stop breaking through. You are Saints, it proves that you used to be extremely determined in the past. But now...”

Lin Feng stopped talking. He was muttering to himself. Even if there were gods in this world, Lin Feng could definitely become as strong as them, he could become a real God. He was still extremely determined.

“Lin Yi, let’s go,” Lin Feng said to her. Lin Yi had heard everything. She was astonished, she had the impression Lin Feng and her belonged to two different worlds, that she would never be able to catch up with him.

Lin Yi nodded, and Lin Feng took her away. The Blood Saint and the old man didn't prevent them from leaving. Lin Feng's voice was still resonating in their heads.

After a very long time, the old man sighed and looked at them in the horizon, saying "I've been in the Godly Grave for seventy thousand years. Back in the days, I used to be extremely determined, I was young. I used to hope it would never change."

At that moment, the old man's heart was filled with admiration. He hoped Lin Feng would continue being determined.

---

"There's a building here. I'll put you there, they will take care of you, alright?" said Lin Feng to Lin Yi. Lin Yi suddenly looked low-spirited, sad, and disappointed.

"Alright," Lin Yi agreed. She was extremely weak compared to Lin Feng.

They both flew in the sky. Someone flew up to meet them, he sensed a terrifying Qi and said to Lin Feng, "What do you want here?"

"Her home was destroyed. I have to go. Can your people take care of her?" asked Lin Feng. His Qi was overwhelming and filled the air.

The man nodded, "Alright, I'll find a place for her!"

"I'm off!" said Lin Feng leaving. Lin Yi gazed into the distance, she didn't want to be away from Lin Feng. She admired him so much.

"Where is he going?" asked that Saint to Lin Yi.

"He's going to other places to get points, alone!" whispered Lin Yi. The Saint was astonished and started trembling. Lin Yi continued walking away; she didn't need to ask Lin Feng, she knew what he wanted to do!

# Chapter 2385: Traveling and Killing!

---

According to legends, the nine Graves of the Godly Grave were created by nine gods. According to other legends, the Godly Grave was a place where they rested in peace. But no matter what the truth was, what was sure was that the nine Graves were ancient places and were named after the nine Shrines of the ancient times: The Fire Grave, Dazzling Gold Grave, Earth Grave, Ice and Snow Grave, Life Grave, Empty Space Grave, Starlit Grave, Countless Grave, and Time Grave.

The members of the Shrines which still existed went to the areas which corresponded to their own Shrine. The Fire Shrine's members went to the Fire Grave, the members of the Empty Space Shrine went to the Empty Space area.

People who weren't members of Shrines chose Graves which corresponded to what they were looking for.

The nine Graves were particular and contained all sorts of Qi. Their borders were in constant flux.

The nine Graves were circular and all had a common border. From that common border, they could access all other Graves, but that place was also very dangerous. Nobody dared stay there for too long, except for a few extremely Saints. The reason was that that area was the best place to win points, and it was also the best place to go to the other Graves.

——

At night in the Godly Grave, there was a moon, too. The Graves and the common border were peaceful.

Someone gazed into the distance.

According to the map, after that forest will be the border area. I've heard it is a chaotic area where there are many extremely strong Saints. They all like to go there to get points, thought Lin



Feng. The Fire Grave was gigantic. It took Lin Feng seven days to arrive at his present location. He had also learned a lot about the Godly Grave on his way, which is why he had decided to go to the chaotic border area.

At that moment, Lin Feng's cultivation level was clearly visible: he was a Half-Saint. That way, extremely strong Saints wouldn't try to kill him because it would be pointless, they wouldn't get any points by killing him.

Lin Feng moved further along. It was almost impossible to hear his steps. His perceptions were acute, he could easily sense the movements of the grass and the trees. Nothing could escape his perceptions.

Even if no Saint attacks me, I have to be very careful, thought Lin Feng. Therefore, he walked slowly and silently.

"There's someone!" Lin Feng sensed that someone had appeared behind him. The word FIRE was written on that person's third eye. He was from this Grave. The man didn't pose a threat to Lin Feng, so he continued walking.

"What a strange tree!" Lin Feng noticed a gigantic tree with many branches and leaves. It was extremely thick. In that unpopulated area, the tree had grown without being disturbed. Its Qi was extremely heavy. It was such a thick tree that a drop of water couldn't have passed through its branches.

Lin Feng walked up to the foot of the tree and stopped, he remained motionless, he could sense something.

Suddenly, the temperature dropped drastically, as if the earth and sky had been about to freeze. Lin Feng had the impression his blood and soul were going to freeze, that chill came from someone's soul, it seemed.

"There's someone." Lin Feng's eyes suddenly flared with light, he condensed God strength in his eyes and glanced around. An

illusion was moving towards Lin Feng extremely quickly. That person suddenly stopped and their expression suddenly changed for some reason.

Lin Feng couldn't miss that opportunity. He suddenly flew up, raised his hands, and millions of death stamps emerged from his fingers. They slammed into his attacker, whose face turned grey as he died.

Drops of liquid fell onto Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn't notice in particular, but he had a bad premonition.

More drops fell from the tree. Lin Feng suddenly attacked it.

The gigantic tree exploded, however, at the same time, millions of drops fell onto Lin Feng. The leaves of the tree released a dangerously sharp sword energy, blotting out the sky and covering the earth as well. It turned into millions of swords as a figure emerged from the tree and released vines towards Lin Feng. They were very close, Lin Feng couldn't dodge, and the vines constricted him.

“The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind.”

(TL Note: idiom from Daoist classic Zhuangzi, it means that a short-sighted person is completely ignorant to imminent danger in his pursuit of quick gains, for more info: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zhuangzi\\_\(book\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zhuangzi_(book)) )

Lin Feng was astonished. The Saint he had killed had ended up in a tragic way, but he hadn't sensed that there was a powerful cultivator in the tree. Lin Feng sensed that the drops of liquid were powerful, their purpose was to crush his internal organs. Luckily, he had only absorbed a few drops. The one hiding in the tree had hidden his Qi a moment before. And the drops of liquid were deadly like time bombs.

The tree man wanted to kill them both at the same time to get more points. He could have attacked one of them individually, but

he was patient.

A sharp sword made of tree parts shot towards Lin Feng's third eye.

"Illusion!" shouted Lin Feng coldly. The atmosphere around them changed. Lin Feng was still constricted in vines, but he was in a different world now.

Lin Feng spat out a sharp sword and tore apart the tree. The enemy flashed towards him and raised his fist. The vines turned into sharp wires which tried to pierce through Lin Feng's skin. Millions of water drops fell towards Lin Feng.

"Illusion!" Lin Feng shouted angrily again. An illusion appeared inside his illusion, then he fused dream and illusion strength together with a deployment spell. His opponent now had the impression he was fighting against two Lin Fengs, one who was still wrapped up in vines, and the other one was flying towards him. He didn't understand what was happening.

"Celestial Constriction!" shouted the Saint coldly. Celestial Dao appeared above the tree, and millions of vines appeared and descended from the sky, they surrounding the two Lin Fengs.

This guy is a wood cultivator, and his cultivation is similar to a Life Shrine cultivator. But the members of the Life Shrine try to save people, whereas this one is an assassin; he tries to kill people without being noticed. He's very dangerous!

"What an incredible strength!" said Lin Feng. If this Saint dared hide here, it meant he was incredible strong. The one Lin Feng had killed was strong, too, but, he had died.

"I'll kill you even in illusions!" stated the cultivator coldly. Two extremely sharp empty space wooden spears descended from the sky and lunged towards the two Lin Fengs. Instantly, the illusions broke apart and the real world reappeared.

"His illusion is broken, is he dead?" The man glanced around, but

couldn't see Lin Feng's corpse.

"Oh no!" His expression changed drastically. He sensed danger coming from behind, a sword moved towards him silently without him noticing, even as it penetrated into his head and third eye.

"Sorry, we're still in an illusion," said Lin Feng indifferently. The real world reappeared for real; it was nighttime, and that person's third eye was bleeding. He looked stunned, he didn't even know how he had died. He had spent eight thousand years in here, hiding and hunting, he had won so many points, and now he was dead. His points went to his killer!

His Word moved to Lin Feng's third eye. Lin Feng sensed an incredible strength flowing through him.

"You don't just win a fixed amount of points, you also get your enemies' points!" he mused. Of course, when people died, the points they had accumulated had to go somewhere, so when they were killed, their killers actually got them. Most people couldn't kill cultivators like the tree guy, only people extraordinarily strong like Lin Feng could.

After collecting the tree guy's Word, Lin Feng stole the Word of the other cultivator he had just killed. That man also had many points, but he had died even more tragically. Lin Feng could hear some sounds around, and he knew that many people were hiding in the darkness. After having seen his fight, many of them walked away.

If I kill low-level Saints, how many points will I get?, he wondered

Initially, Lin Feng didn't intend to kill Saints in the Godly Grave. He wanted to seal them in his small world and use them. But after he had heard about the rules, he had changed his strategy, mostly because he wanted to get points. He wanted to see if he'd be able to make historical remains appear. He was convinced he'd succeed!

Lin Feng continued hearing sounds around him, and he felt even more enthusiastic. He continued walking towards the edge of the central area, the most chaotic place, where there were many Saints!

# Chapter 2386: Pāramitā

---

The night was gloomy. One step and one could die anytime.

Lin Feng was walking slowly. He gradually drew closer to the border area and finally arrived. The night was eerily silent and scary. The area was gigantic, though, and people could have been fighting in the distance, but he couldn't sense their presence.

“Surprisingly, some people set up camps here. I wonder if there are traps, too,” he observed, glancing around. There were many tents. He continued walking and saw a mountain range. It was a hilly area, there were many places were to hide. Even though Lin Feng had good hiding abilities, he didn't hide, because he wanted people to see him, he wanted to fight. He wanted people to believe he was prey, and that way, he'd find his own prey. Even though hiding and killing people without getting noticed was safer, it also took too much time. Lin Feng didn't want to stay in this place for hundreds of years or more like the people he had met. He didn't even dare think about such an eventuality.

Lin Feng wanted to get points as quickly as possible and find the historical remains!

But even though Lin Feng didn't hide, nobody attacked him. The first reason was that the area was extremely vast, so people were hiding everywhere. The second reason was that when there was a fight, many Saints came out. So, before an actual battle burst out, nobody was willing to show themselves, unless they were sure they could kill their opponent in one strike, just like the tree guy who had thought he could kill two people at once.

——

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the moon, seeing a black shadow there. A cultivator was running, he was being chased by something.

After that, Lin Feng saw a few cultivators behind him, streaking across the sky.

Lin Feng suddenly turned into a beam of light and disappeared from there.

—

After Lin Feng left, something moved on the ground where he was standing a few seconds before. An earth illusion appeared; a man was lying on the ground there now. He looked after Lin Feng angrily; he had just gotten ready to attack, and now his plan had failed!

“You’re lucky,” hissed the Saint coldly, and he fused together with the ground again.

—

“How fast.” Lin Feng continued flying quickly. He realized that these enemies were extremely fast. He managed to catch up and noticed that the one in the front was wearing black clothes, so it was difficult to see him at night. If the moon hadn’t silhouetted him, Lin Feng wouldn’t have noticed him.

Those who were chasing him had black wings, and were as fast as lightning. They kept getting closer and closer to the one in the front.

Finally, the escapee stopped at the top of a mountain. There was nowhere to hide there, so nobody could attack by surprise. He turned around and looked at those who were chasing him coldly.

“It’s him.” Lin Feng was astonished. It was him again!!!

The escapee was Chu Chun Qiu! Back then, he had been to the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell and he had come out alive somehow. Then Lin Feng had seen him in the Canonization Area. There, Chu Chun Qiu, Saint Emperor Freeze, and Lin Feng had managed to reach the Canonization Mountain.

After that, they had chosen different paths. Saint Emperor Freeze had decided to apply the rules of nature to his own body to return to the source, and then had become a Saint. Chu Chun Qiu had decided to go against the Celestial Dao. He didn't believe in the powers of the skies, yet he had become a Saint, too.

Lin Feng had continued on his God path. He had put distance between the Celestial Dao of the outside world and his own life.

A long time had passed, and Lin Feng had ended up in the Godly Grave by following Qiong Yu. Now Chu Chun Qiu was here, too. Did Chu Chun Qiu intend to go to all the forbidden territories? He had been to Ganges Time forbidden territory, then to Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, and now he was in the Godly Grave.

Chu Chun Qiu suddenly turned around and looked at Lin Feng. He looked evil and terrifying, like a demonic warlord. He had decided to go against the will of Heaven to become a Saint, so he was definitely terrifying strong.

Lin Feng guessed that Chu Chun Qiu recognized him from the look in his eyes.

What is he hiding? He's so mysterious, thought Lin Feng. He had turned into Mu Feng, but Chu Chun Qiu could still recognize him. However, Chu Chun Qiu then looked at his pursuers again and said, "Celestial Roc Clan, I want your Wills!"

A strong wind started blowing as the Saints in front of him opened their wings. Their wings were as sharp as swords and contained Celestial Dao.

Suddenly, lights flashed and fused together with Celestial Dao; the Saints understood speed Dao. Their speed was incredible, their attacks ruthless. After breaking through to the Sheng Layer, they had understood Celestial Dao and their speed Dao had become Speed Celestial Dao, it had reached the peak of perfection. They moved invisibly fast.



A terrifying sound spread in the air, as if extremely sharp energies were lacerating Chu Chun Qiu. However, only his clothes turned to pieces. They raised their heads and saw Chu Chun Qiu standing in the air, like a warlord who despised the whole world.

“A Celestial Roc can lacerate the atmosphere,” said Chu Chun Qiu coldly. He raised his hand and released a terrifyingly explosive intent. His Celestial Dao swept out and carried everything away, before turning into a vortex.

More lights flashed, the Celestial Rocs could cut the air, but that wasn't enough against Chu Chun Qiu. He shouted furiously, “Come out!”

His energies could destroy Celestial Dao. A Celestial Roc appeared, screaming angrily.

Chu Chun Qiu's Will penetrated into his third eye. A vortex appeared around his hand, and he absorbed his enemy.

“Chaotic Celestial Dao!” Lin Feng frowned. The Saint had turned into a celestial roc and had used a teleportation technique, hiding in the Celestial Dao. However, Chu Chun Qiu could make Celestial Dao go chaotic and had absorbed him after he lost control.

Going against the will of Heaven to become a Saint was extremely complicated, but Chu Chun Qiu had done it. His fighting abilities were impressive, even greater than cultivators who had returned to the source by submitting to the Celestial Dao. At the same cultivation level, he was stronger!

“Die!” The others joined hands. However, Chu Chun Qiu's intent was too powerful and could sweep everything away. His vitality and willpower were explosive. Finally, he absorbed all of them at once!

After that, Chu Chun Qiu looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng looked back at him, too.

Lin Feng flashed towards Chu Chun Qiu, but Chu Chun Qiu

flashed backwards and just looked at him.

“Chu Chun Qiu, we’ve been trying to have a proper battle for a long time, why avoid it?” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly.

“It’s not the right time. We’re not supposed to fight now,” replied Chu Chun Qiu, continuing to withdraw. He maintained a certain distance between them.

“When is the right time, then?” Lin Feng asked suspiciously.

“You will know at the right time,” said Chu Chun Qiu coolly. “Heaven and Earth shall have the absolute power. All the Devas will be stepped upon. The world of mortals shall be rejected. The ultimate one and the ten thousand transformations of the world can change within a moment of thought.”

Chu Chun Qiu disappeared in the darkness. A black hole appeared, he absorbed his own self and vanished. Only a thread of dangerous Qi remained behind.

Since Chu Chun Qiu had started rising during the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List, he had started changing, Lin Feng had the impression Chu Chun Qiu was very mysterious, as if he had learned some incredible secrets.

---

The sky gradually became brighter, nobody attacked Lin Feng by surprise. Many people had seen how strong Chu Chun Qiu was, and they had also seen that he had refused to fight Lin Feng, which meant Lin Feng was also very dangerous.

Apart from Chu Chun Qiu, there was somebody else Lin Feng knew. That one had participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and had ranked better than Chu Chun Qiu, coming in second: Kong Ming!

Kong Ming was in that chaotic area, with eighteen Sakyamunis behind him. They were all incredibly strong, they had all come from the Buddha Shrine.

Kong Ming was fighting against some people. He was surrounded by Buddha images. He looked like a death god, his attacks containing a terrifying life Buddha strength. The eighteen Sakyamunis behind him were standing there and protecting him, they didn't get involved in the battle. They were there to assist him. They were much stronger than Kong Ming, at least low-level Saints. Among them were three high-level Saints. That kind of army was terrifying, and nobody was willing to offend them. They had just come to protect Kong Ming, though.

The battle ended very quickly, Kong Ming obtained more points. He looked expressionless and continued walking ahead slowly. He had come to the Godly Grave for one reason only: a spiritual being in the Countless area had talked to him and activated godly historical remains, apparently, they were in the Pāramitā area!

(Translator's Note: Paramita is the realm above life and death)

# Chapter 2387: Understanding Slowness

---

Chu Chun Qiu departed, and Lin Feng continued looking for people to fight. He bumped into a Saint who understood ice and snow strength. Lin Feng killed him in one sword strike. Half-Saints were too weak for him. He accumulated more and more points.

——

The autumn wind blew, dead leaves floated around.

There were seasons in the Godly Grave too. Lin Feng had already been in the Godly Grave for six months. He had been hunting points, and accumulated a lot. The energy in his third eye was becoming more and more stable. However, he still hadn't seen a spiritual being.

Lin Feng was fighting against a Saint in the Empty Space Grave. Lin Feng raised his hand and released millions of death stamps which turned into death spears. The air became dark and dull, filled with Death intent.

The Saint against whom he was fighting wanted to use empty space strength to dodge, but the death stamps turned into Celestial Dao and destroyed everything in their path. The death stamps in their spear forms pierced through his body, it felt like billions of needles were stabbing him. He died and his points were drawn into Lin Feng's third eye.

After that, Lin Feng continued moving around quickly. It was the Empty Space Grave; he was on hostile territory, an invader. If the Saints of the Empty Space area saw him, they'd do their best to kill him. They would try and prevent him from obtaining more points.

Empty space strength flared up, Lin Feng sensed that the atmosphere around him was trembling.

Someone is watching me, thought Lin Feng. He was very careful in there. He wanted to steal some points and then leave to avoid

being surrounded, but at that moment, some Saint was watching him. He didn't hurry to attack though. He wanted other cultivators to come and surround Lin Feng.

"You're from the Fire Grave, I've been watching you for three months. You have killed a Saint at least every day, and you kill them cruelly. This time, I will show you," proclaimed a voice, telling everybody that Lin Feng was there.

Lin Feng cloned himself and moved in all directions.

"Destroy!" Celestial Dao descended. An explosive empty space strength bombarded the area and destroyed clones one after another. Only Lin Feng's real body remained and he continued fleeing. But he couldn't hide from those who had gathered.

"There's a cultivator in the darkness." Lin Feng frowned.

"This time, because of you, I am going to join hands with a few extremely powerful Saints. You won't be able to escape even through the air," said the voice again. He had already assessed Lin Feng's ability to escape.

"Wind!" Lin Feng moved like a tornado. He swept across the ground like a leaf in a hurricane. He moved towards the border area, not towards the depths of the Empty Space area. The border area was very dangerous, he could get encircled there, but in the depths of the Empty Space area, it was even worse. The Saints of the Empty Space area were joining hands!

A gigantic tree was destroyed, a terrifying empty space strength chased after him. Lin Feng's heart twitched. There were at least three low-level Saints chasing him.

"You can't escape!" the voice declared. Celestial Dao descended from the sky. Suddenly, marks appeared and started intertwining. A terrifying empty space cage appeared on the ground. Lin Feng suddenly stopped. He was in the gigantic cage. In front of him, someone was slowly walking towards him, and entered the cage.

On his left and above him, two other cultivators arrived as well. There were three cultivators around him!

“Are you a low-level Saint or a Half-Saint? If you’re a low-level Saint, you’re a low-level Saint who pretends to be a Half-Saint to kill Half-Saints, you must not have obtained many points. You slaughtered our Half-Saints, I can’t tolerate that. You’re too insolent!” declared the cultivator above him coldly.

“And I’m a Half-Saint and you’re three low-level Saints, you don’t think that’s insolent?” asked Lin Feng coldly.

“However, we can’t be sure you’re really a Half-Saint. Even if you’re really a Half-Saint, your fighting abilities are incredible, you will just kill off my comrades. Not many Saints come to the Godly Grave, the Empty Space Grave is just a small area. Therefore, we’ll kill you anyway. We can’t let you act like that here.”

“Since you say so, why do you waste time talking? Just act!” said Lin Feng indifferently. Sword lights flashed. God’s Sword appeared in Lin Feng’s hand.

He flashed towards a low-level Saint, surrounded by God strength. A vortex appeared around his sword, dust and sand flying around and disappearing in the vortex.

The hurricane grew larger and larger. Many small vortexes appeared around the sword. It absorbed all the Qi around.

“A Saint’s technique, that sword is connected to his Saint’s technique. It contains a powerful intent!” The three Saints were astonished. That Saint’s technique was absolutely dreadful. It absorbed everything around it!

The three low-level Saints were astonished. The vortexes were growing more and more dangerous. If they condensed together, their absorbing power would become even more unstoppable!

At that moment, Lin Feng was the world around him, he was a

god. His strength was increasing constantly.

The three low-level Saints released golden empty space strength, reality began to bend. A celestial curtain appeared and turned into sharp dazzling swords. If they attacked at the same time, their attack was going to be impressive.

One of them jumped into empty space and disappeared, the other one released empty space cages and fused together with them, turning into a Celestial cage which could oppress everything. The atmosphere was ready to explode.

However, Lin Feng seemed unaffected, continuing to move forwards. He had no choice, he had to kill someone to avoid being the victim of a group attack, he didn't know whether these three people had that power or not.

Finally, Lin Feng flashed forwards and attacked. At the same time, his opponent's empty space swords shot towards him. It was as if that attack could have killed dozens of Saints at once.

"Slash!" Lin Feng was still condensing strength in his sword, but he didn't attack.

The attacks of the other two also arrived. Cages oppressed him as the other one reappeared, holding an empty space hammer which arced towards Lin Feng's head. It looked extremely heavy.

Lin Feng's eyes closed, he was God in his world. He could clearly sense the hammer, the swords, and the cages. Maybe he could destroy those three attacks if he released his own attack at the perfect time, but that way, his sword attack wouldn't be as powerful, and would be destroyed too. At the same time, he would miss the opportunity to attack one of them. He was already surrounded, so the situation was dangerous.

Lin Feng had to act like he was an outsider; he had to observe the battle from every point of view. He had to be omniscient, like a god.

Ruo Xie uses slowness strength in such conditions. At my cultivation level and with my God strength, I'm strong, but speed strength is important too. Since I'm the god of my own body, I should use God speed, and slowness strength, thought Lin Feng. He was focused and could understand cultivation from all sorts of perspectives.

Speed and slowness is a kind of intent, I have an absolute control over my own attacks. I can't really influence my enemies' attacks, but since I can use my God strength in the outside world, there's nothing impossible, thought Lin Feng.

Chu Chun Qiu went against the will of Heaven, against Nature. I don't follow the will of Heaven, but I don't go against it, either! I am just my own God, I control everything!

Lin Feng opened his eyes and said, "Slow!"

A mysterious Celestial Dao intent surrounded the area, and everything slowed down. Of course, Lin Feng had just comprehended that kind of strength, he couldn't make them slow down like some cultivators who were familiar with it. A master of slowing could make everything around them stop.

But it was enough!



# Chapter 2388: Understanding Speed

---

In dangerous circumstances, a small difference could make a huge difference, especially at such cultivation levels.

If Lin Feng understood speed and slow Celestial Dao, it would be great, but that wasn't the case. He was already a Saint and he suddenly understood Slow intent, which he fused together with his own God Celestial Dao. As his enemies drew closer, they also moved slower. However, when a cultivator controlled slow strength to the extreme, it wasn't slow strength anymore, it became time strength!

Lin Feng had just thought of that, and that made the situation dangerous for the enemies.

He glanced at them, suddenly turning around, and his God's sword suddenly cut towards the one who had the hammer.

"You!" That cultivator was astonished. Even though they were slower, they still controlled their attacks. His hammer disappeared and turned into empty space lights around him. He suddenly became indistinct as if he were about to disappear. But Lin Feng's sword was extremely fast and contained absorbing strength, so it started absorbing Celestial Dao.

The Saint's figure began to warp as the sword appeared in front of him, and the absorbing strength sucked him in. Lin Feng didn't try to get his Word, his God's sword absorbed the man entirely. The sword hummed harshly, and Lin Feng continued attacking. His Slow intent disappeared, a terrifying amount of sharp empty space sword moved towards him and the empty space cage continued oppressing him.

"Get back!" warned that cultivator frantically. However, his friend was already too close, and couldn't move back.

He waved his hand, and his empty space cages continued

oppressing Lin Feng. In front of him, the cages sealed the area to prevent Lin Feng's swords from driving forwards. Musical crackling sounds greeted that effort, the cages shattered and he was hurled back.

"Slow!" A terrifying slow strength filled the air, and everything slowed down.

"Die!" said that Saint, annoyed. Lin Feng stayed focused, his sword wasn't affected at all. His God strength surrounded the man.

The man raised his hand, and Celestial Dao deployment marks appeared and started interweaving. They turned into a beautiful pattern. Lin Feng put his fingers on the pattern and his sword smashed into it hard. His opponent felt the danger, but Lin Feng moved fast, even faster than a moment before. His sword even seemed to contain speed strength. They couldn't follow him with their eyes.

The man glared at him, staring, scared he'd miss something.

"Die!" spat the man when Lin Feng appeared in front of him. He spat out a golden strength directly at Lin Feng. Since Lin Feng was moving towards him so fast, he couldn't dodge.

"Slow!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. They were very close to one another, so his enemy's attack instantly slowed down!

"Slow, slow, slow!" said Lin Feng. He released God Celestial Dao, looking like a peerless god in that instant. The enemy's golden energies slowed down, but they were still very fast. Lin Feng released deployment lights, which surrounded the empty space strength.

Lin Feng's third eye crackled, blood dripped down. The golden strength arrived in front of him.

"Die!" Lin Feng's sword swept out as he released slowness energy all around himself. It was like time was about to stop.

Dazzling lights surrounded Lin Feng, and he disappeared. The

golden strength punched through, but Lin Feng wasn't there anymore.

“No!...” Lin Feng's enemy wasn't as lucky. God's Sword pierced through his head and killed him, before returning to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's third eye was bleeding, but he quickly recovered. His life strength was incredible. The golden attack which had injured him had been truly formidable. If he had reacted a little bit slower, he would have died!

As expected, against any low-level Saint, I have to be extremely careful. I have my God's Sword, but other people also have precious items. That golden attack was a powerful golden lightning, an item he could use anytime. If I hadn't reacted fast enough, I would be dead already...

Actually, he had been very lucky. If he hadn't understood slow and speed strength during that battle, he couldn't have won. Even though he could also use the Great Empty Space Technique to disappear, it would not have been enough against the enemy's precious item, the gold lightning.

Lin Feng turned around to fight against the last one, but that man had already started escaping when he saw Lin Feng kill his comrade. He knew that if he didn't escape, Lin Feng would kill him. He also guessed that if Lin Feng had not understood slow and speed strength at the last minute, they would have had a chance, but now it was too late!

Lin Feng heard more whistling sounds, and reacted instantly. His figure flickered, and he left the Empty Space Grave. If too many extremely strong Saints surrounded him, he wouldn't stand a chance!

—

“I'm getting close to the border area.” Lin Feng didn't dare fly, sticking to the ground. He didn't want people to notice him. He

sensed some explosive Qi behind him, and knew that some people were looking for him.

Escape!, he thought, accelerating. He had come to the Empty Space area to steal points, and had drawn people's attention even though he proceeded with the greatest care. He had ended up encircled. Now, he had to flee!

Finally, Lin Feng arrived in the border area, but didn't stop until he found a mountain dwelling to hide in. He cast a great deployment spell outside of the cave to protect himself.

He needed to practice cultivation!

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. Very quickly, he was in his own world.

Lin Feng could control everything in his own world. In his body's world, he was the Celestial Dao, he was God!

Many trees appeared around Lin Feng and emitted rustling sounds. Leaves floated in the wind.

"Slow!" Suddenly, his entire world became slower. The leaves in the wind slowed down, too. With the power of his mind, his world could slow down in the blink of an eye.

As expected, in my world, I can do whatever I want! If I take enemies into my world, I'll have the advantage. No matter where they go, they won't be able to escape from the slow strength. In the outside world, I can control the space around me, so if people get really close, they will slow down a lot, too..."

Of course, Celestial Dao intent also had its limits. If Lin Feng's opponent was too powerful, like a high-level Saint, his slow strength wouldn't be very useful. But then again, such cases were rare. Lin Feng was very good in terms of speed, too.

"Since I understand slow strength, I can also understand speed strength. If I manage to understand both really well, it'll propel my fighting abilities to the next level," he mused to himself. His

eyes were still closed, he was focused.

“A moment ago, I was fighting against three people, and I had the impression it was difficult for me to dodge their attack. Then I understood slow strength, but how to study speed?” whispered Lin Feng. Tree leaves were still floating around him, very slowly. He could make them move very slowly, but what did he have to do to make them move extremely quickly?

Lin Feng was thinking. He normally used wind strength and empty space strength to make his sword attacks faster. Fast meant powerful attacks for him. “When a small stone falls on your head from a short distance you don’t feel anything, but when it falls down from a significant height, then it hurts, it can even pierce through your skin and injure you, to the extent that it can kill some people.” That was fast!

But how to make something fast? Lin Feng was thinking deeply!

# Chapter 2389: Giant Gods Clan

---

Time didn't stop because of one person. Time rolled on, and two months passed. Lin Feng was still studying, still in his own world. He practiced a lot, his speed had increased a lot. His attacks were faster, but it wasn't the kind of speed he was trying to achieve.

He didn't want to make things faster using wind or empty space strength, or agility techniques, or intent. It wasn't Celestial Dao intent, either.

Maybe I'm looking in the wrong direction. When I fought against those three people, they attacked me, I wanted to slow them down. Their attacks were quick, but then everything became clear. Accordingly, I managed to react quickly, but that's a consequence of the slow strength. Speed and slowing constitute a kind of Dao, he thought. He was trying to calm down. He was in his world and gazed off into the distance.

In the sky, clouds appeared and slowly drifted along.

"Slow!" Suddenly, the whole became slower, including the clouds in the sky.

"What if that was the world's real speed?" thought Lin Feng suddenly. He was the God of his world, he could decide everything. He could also set the speed of his world!

The real speed before... was faster than the slowed down one.

Fastness and slowness were not absolute, they were relative. The concept was very simple!

"Fast!" said Lin Feng, smiling excitedly. Suddenly, the clouds drifted faster, moving at their original speed again, and then even faster.

Everything I tried before was useless!, thought Lin Feng, laughing at himself. "Sometimes, when you don't understand something, you look in the wrong direction. It's like when you're

walking; if you choose the wrong direction, you can walk further and further, you'll be exhausted, but you won't find the right way. All you have to do is turn around and find the right way!"

That rule actually applied to everything in the world!

"Now, I have God strength, which allows me to create Saint's attacks. I also understand speed and slowing. Even if I don't use Saint's Weapons, I should be able to kill low-level Saints easily. If I manage to improve my God strength, I'll become even stronger!"

Lin Feng was feeling impatient at that moment. His fighting abilities were already great, if he managed to break through, he'd become even more terrifying. Each level was like another world. If he could make his God strength increase, it would be perfect.

But he couldn't control that. He had to let nature take its course. When conditions were ripe, success was naturally achieved!

Lin Feng left his world and took a deep breath. Speed and slowing were different from all the other kinds of strength he had studied before. It was a complement to his cultivation, and could influence his attacks, and weaken his enemies. Slowing and speeding up could be considered one concept, and by studying that one concept, his strength had increased a lot.

He had brought his fighting abilities to the next level. If he had to fight against the three low-level Saints again, he would crush them in the blink of an eye, they would not pose a threat to him anymore at all.

"I don't know how many points I have, but how many more will I need before receiving a spiritual being's instructions?" he wondered. He removed his deployment spell and left the cave, glancing up at the move.

Lin Feng suddenly felt paralyzed. A powerful empty space strength surrounded him. The atmosphere around him seemed to be frozen, he could barely move.

A person in black clothes appeared in front of him. He had noticed that someone had cast a deployment spell on that cave. Therefore, he hadn't tried to go in, he had just waited. He had been waiting for two months, and finally, Lin Feng was out.

He wanted to kill Lin Feng in one strike!

Lin Feng knew that a strong empty space attack was constricting him. The empty space strength contained Celestial Dao. He saw a hand moving towards his head. Lin Feng grunted coldly; if that hand hit his head, his skull would explode.

"God!" Lin Feng released God strength around himself. No Celestial Dao could pierce through it. He could use his God strength around himself. His enemy was a Half-Saint, but his Celestial Dao was useless against Lin Feng. Actually, Lin Feng could kill him easily, but he didn't; he waited for the hand to get closer and said, "Slow!"

The hand slowed down. His enemy's expression changed.

"Faster, faster..." How come his attack was so slow? His hand attack was moving at one-fifth of its normal speed. How scary! It was getting dangerous for him now!

"Slow!" Lin Feng's God Celestial Dao moved, he wanted to see how much he could slow down the attacker. Nothing the man did could escape from Lin Feng's perceptions. That Half-Saint wanting to fight against him came down to committing suicide!

"It's even slower, how is that possible!" The man's face paled as he drew closer to Lin Feng. They were three meters away from one another, it was nothing. In normal times, he would have needed a millisecond to reach Lin Feng, but at that moment, he was as slow a snail. It would take him twenty minutes to move over three meters!

"Please spare my life, Master!" shouted Lin Feng's opponent. He couldn't die, he was going to die!



How could Lin Feng spare his life?

“It’s over,” said Lin Feng. He pointed a finger at the man and millions of death stamps shot out. He also condensed God Death strength inside them.

“Fast!” said Lin Feng, and his attack moved even faster. The man was already grey, and died instantly.

Lin Feng had won more points easily. His figure flickered. He flew up into the night sky. The moon was out, and it was a bit cold. Lin Feng rose up into the clouds. He landed at the top of a mountain where people could easily see him.

He had become much stronger, he could easily kill Half-Saints. He didn’t need to hide in the border area. He was waiting for opponents now.

Since he needed many points to receive the spiritual beings’ instructions, he wanted to obtain points quickly. Nobody could do so like him. He appeared to be a Half-Saint, but he was much, much stronger than Half-Saints. Low-level Saints weren’t interested in him because killing Half-Saints didn’t bring them many points.

——

There were a few gigantic figures sitting in front of a mountain dwelling. The shortest ones were 260 cm tall. The tallest ones were over three meters. They looked incredible and terrifying. Their Qi was powerful and ancient.

“Eight hundred years, we’ve been here for such a long time. We’re the the four last cultivators of the Giant Gods Clan left. Even though we have many points, we still haven’t found a way to access the historical remains. How long will we have to wait here?” sighed one of the giants. They had been in here for eight hundred years already. Back then, there were thirteen of them. They were all Saints, now they were only four, the others had died. They had

been careless. They had realized there were too many Saints in this place. Some of the other prisoners had been there for thousands and even dozens of thousands of years.

“Third uncle, do gods exist?” asked a relatively young one. “Are there really historical remains?” He didn’t understand, he had the impression that the legends about the divinities were lies. Why didn’t they appear?

“In our world’s books, it said that there were gods in the ancient times, gods’ descendants created our clan. We’ll definitely find them,” said another giant. He had faith.

“Maybe. Gods watch us all the time, but they don’t appear and we can’t find them, why? We have to find them,” said another one. He didn’t understand.

“Why?” said the giant. According to legends, gods had created that world and controlled everyone, they were supreme beings. They didn’t show up because they wanted people to continue looking for them, if people were that determined, then they would be determined on the path of cultivation as well, that was the reason why. Otherwise, if gods showed up, cultivators would stop progressing at a certain cultivation level.

## Chapter 2390: Ju Shen Kui Shan

---

The four members of the Giant Gods Clan raised their heads and gazed into the distance. There was a fight going on.

“Third Uncle, should we continue getting points?”

“Let’s see... one of them is extremely strong, he controls slow strength. He can make people move very slowly. You’re not very fast, so if he uses that on you, he’ll kill you easily,” replied the giant.

“Our clan’s strength is incredible, we can break his slowness strength!” said the other one. He looked enthusiastic.

“Wait. His attacks are too fast, too. Such people are too strong. Maybe they’re not from our world!” whispered the third uncle.

“Do you think there are other worlds, third brother?” asked the middle-aged giant next to him.

“I do. Why wouldn’t I? Cultivators can create their own worlds when they break through to the Huang Qi layer, and when they become legendary gods, they don’t create small worlds anymore, they create great worlds! In the ancient times, there were several gods, not just one, so maybe our world is connected to other worlds. That’s precisely why I want to find the gods’ traces, to understand those things. Who controls the world, or the worlds? Eight hundred years have passed, I think that our world is not the main one. There must be a bigger world than ours.”

“How mysterious. Unless we become gods, we won’t be able to understand those things. If we became gods, we could make great worlds, too!”

“Third Uncle, I want to go and try!” said one of them. He started running, followed by thunder.

“That little boy, Yan! He’s not patient! Let’s go with him. We’re the only four members of the Giant Gods Clan left. None of us can

die,” They flashed after him. Their size didn’t influence their speed. They instantly appeared behind Ju Shen Yan.

“Eh?” Lin Feng was destroying a cultivator, demon strength emerging from his fingers. Then, he stopped and glanced around. He was stupefied when he saw the members of the Giant Gods Clan. Those people looked so strange, like ancient gods, and incredibly strong. In their third eyes, the Word STARLIT was written which meant they represented the Starlit Grave.

The Starlit Sky Shrine was the Fortune Shrine in the ancient days!

Apart from those four giants, more people appeared around them, all with an incredible Qi. They looked extraordinary. Many people were surprised when they saw the giants, but most of them were looking at Lin Feng. He had killed a few people just before this. He was very strong, and probably had a lot of points!

“Come here!” said someone. His figure flickered and he landed on the top of a mountain. He said to the giants, “You’re too strong, you can’t attack Half-Saints.”

That guy’s Qi was powerful. He looked extremely strong.

“Godly Imprint King Body!” Lin Feng was startled to see another Godly Imprint King Body! But this guy was a Saint, so it was incomparable.

“We won’t attack. We don’t attack people who are weaker than us. Of course, don’t kill our little one there,” said Ju Shen Kui Shan.

“So, if your little one loses, he can’t die; but if he wins, he can kill, what kind of rule is that?” said the one who had a Godly Imprint King Body, smiling coldly.

“We have no choice. We have to protect our species. We’re almost extinct. Since you want fair battles, you and me, let’s fight!” said Ju Shen Kui Shan, flashing forwards and releasing

terrifying lights. He looked like an ancient god, dignified and majestic. His Qi was overwhelming.

Stars appeared in the vault of Heaven and condensed. The atmosphere became oppressive. Lin Feng had the feeling he was going to suffocate.

“High-level Saint!” Lin Feng was astonished. The difference was impressive. If Lin Feng tried to fight against that giant, he’d die instantly!

The ground exploded, the explosions so loud that people’s ears hurt. Ju Shen Kui Shan raised his gigantic hand and thrust towards the one who had the Godly Imprint King Body. That gigantic hand contained star strength and illuminated everything with glittering lights.

“How strong!” The people around were astonished. Was that a Celestial Dao Saint’s technique containing Star Celestial Dao?

“Hmph!” the one who had the Godly Imprint King Body grunted coldly. He released brilliant lights, and the dark atmosphere of the night grew even more dazzling. Gigantic ancient imprints shot towards the massive hand.

“Those ancient imprints are made of dao strength, but since he’s a saint, his attacks are real. That means his energies have returned to the source, so he’s using real gold, which is perfect in terms of both offense and defense.” Lin Feng’s heart was shaking. These high-level Saints’ attacks were terrifying. They had really become a part of nature!

Back in the days, Lin Feng had learned the Nine Heavy Waves. It was one of the simplest attacks, but if a high-level Saint who understood gold strength used it, then the Nine Heavy Waves would be made of gold and truly awesome. With Celestial Dao, attacks were much, much more powerful...

Qin Shan used lots of attacks, but his favorite ones were

oppressive attacks. He liked to oppress and crush people. His Ancient Holy Techniques contained oppressive attacks which could flatten the sky!

Lin Feng's purest strength was God strength. Gold, wood, water, speed, slowing, and so on were all pure kinds of strength. With his God strength, Lin Feng could control all sorts of strength, or at least understand them. He had been able to understand speed and slow strength that way. He also understood Hell strength now, which was a kind of death strength. He could create many different Saint's techniques now!

The high-level Saint who had the Godly Imprint King Body had an incredible defense, but he still didn't manage to protect himself from the giant's hand. His ancient imprints exploded, and the gigantic hand continued moving forwards. An endless number of stars illuminated everything

"Eh?" The cultivator with the Godly Imprint King Body was amazed. Millions of godly imprints appeared around him.

"Sky Shaking Imprints! Die!" shouted the cultivator furiously. An endless number of Godly imprints blotted out the sky. The earth was trembling.

Terrifying explosions hammered the air. The crowd retreated swiftly. Everybody had the impression the earth and sky were going to collapse. How amazing!

"Gold, earth! He understands two sorts of basic strength, does he want to understand the five elements?" many people murmured while moving backwards. That cultivator's millions of imprints would be even more terrifying if he understood the five elements!

Lin Feng was watching the battle, it was an incredible sight when high-level Saints fought. He remembered when Tian Ruo Jian had fought back then. Tian Ruo Jian controlled a special kind of strength, like he could modify space and time. He had nearly killed Qiong Lin!

At this moment, these two cultivators gave him a similar impression, so he took advantage of the opportunity to watch carefully and learn. Who knows? Maybe it would help him improve his God strength.

“You can’t defeat me,” said Ju Shen Kui Shan, standing there with his hands clasped behind him. He looked at the man who had the Godly Imprint King Body and said, “You can go. I will not kill you. I don’t kill people who are weaker than me, as I told you.”

How aggressive!, thought the crowd. The millions of stars around him seemed to be a shield for him. His Saint’s attacks were definitely overpowered!

The cultivator who had the Godly Imprint King Body was startled. Even though what the giant said wasn’t very pleasant to hear, he also knew that the giant could have killed him.

“There are nine big guys at the top of the nine territories. I hope you won’t go against your promise, Giant Gods Clan,” said the one with the Godly Imprint King Body. He swiftly disappeared.

“Giant Gods Clan?” Lin Feng was astonished, he had never heard of them. Even though Lin Feng didn’t know much about the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he had read many books and he had never read about the Giant Gods Clan.

“You, me, let’s fight!” Ju Shen Yan said to Lin Feng!

# Chapter 2391: Historical Remains

---

Lin Feng looked at Ju Shen Yan. Even though the members of the Giant Gods Clan were extremely strong, Ju Shen Yan was just a half-Saint, and didn't really pose a threat to him. When Lin Feng had just become a Saint, he could easily kill those Fire Shrine's Saints, and now he was much stronger.

“Attack!” said Lin Feng to Ju Shen Yan indifferently. He looked perfectly calm and serene.

Ju Shen Yan flew up in the air. Stars floated around him and formed constellations, crackling and shattering as they did. He grew in size, and seemed as heavy as a mountain.

Ju Shen Yan then flashed forwards and raised one foot, as if he wanted to crush Lin Feng. His speed was impressive, despite his size.

Lin Feng raised his head and watched the incoming foot. Not only did he not retreat, he moved forwards while condensing God strength in his fist. Energies crackled and ruptured.

His gigantic foot held back, Ju Shen Yan was astonished, what an incredible physical strength!

Ju Shen Yan raised his hand, starlight flashing around it, and stretched it out towards Lin Feng, his fist contained terrifyingly explosive strength.

The members of the Giant Gods Clan all use that strength Saint's technique, thought Lin Feng. Suddenly, he released slow strength all around himself. The atmosphere undulated, and everything around him became slower.

When an attack slowed down, it also had less impact. The faster an arrow reached its target, the greater chance it had to pierce through the target's skin. But if it arrived extremely slowly, it had no effect, and couldn't pierce through.



Of course, Ju Shen Yan didn't shoot an arrow, and he still had an incredible strength. He released even more strength, fissures appearing in the space around him, thunder rumbling around his fist. The space around them exploded. After breaking some of the slow strength, he sped up again.

As expected, when an attack reaches a certain level, even slow strength is limited. Against a high-level Saint, my slow strength would be completely useless, thought Lin Feng. Ju Shen Yan was extremely strong, so Lin Feng's slow strength was less effective against him. He wasn't an ordinary half-Saint, he also had incredible fighting abilities, just like Lin Feng, and his defense was incredible, too. Lin Feng wondered how many years had he spent in here. Did the Giant have more points than him?

Lin Feng didn't use a Saint's Weapon. He had killed many low-level Saints with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and God's Sword. Now, he wanted to rely on his own strength to defeat Ju Shen Yan.

When Lin Feng saw Ju Shen Yan's attack, he realized his enemy's attacks were incredible. Lin Feng could carry out all sorts of attacks thanks to his God strength, but at that moment, he had the impression his Saint's techniques weren't sufficient against Ju Shen Yan. He could see that his own attacks hadn't reached the peak of perfection. Against someone like Ju Shen Yan, he needed to carry out perfect attacks.

Weapon Master Bing is a perfectionist, he helped me make the God's Sword, which contains five different sorts of incredible strength. But even without a Saint's Weapon, I can also use those kinds of strength!, thought Lin Feng. He released dazzling sword lights, which seemed able to cut anything.

Swords were like gods; they were destructive, they could destroy anything.

Lin Feng had created his Ruler's Sword technique, but now, he

had the impression he needed to improve it. He had the impression putting all sorts of strength in a sword wasn't something good, it just made it impure. Swords were neutral, they had no type.

Who said nobody could understand Dao using swords? A sword is pure, a Sword can be a god, a sword can be Dao itself!, thought Lin Feng, releasing a terrifying sharp Qi, like a hand of God. It contained a deadly power. It had absolutely no strength, it was just a pure sword.

The sword seemed to be a pure element of Celestial Dao. It was as if Celestial Dao could be replaced with sword strength!

That's a real God's Sword, thought Lin Feng. Then he flashed forwards, peerless sword lights flashing in his hand. Not only was it sharp, but it was also extremely fast, a dangerous attack!

Lin Feng's hand started destroying the stars in his path. It collided with the gigantic hand, there was a metallic grinding, and his hand pierced through it like a knife through butter and continued moving towards Ju Shen Yan. Lin Feng was a sword!

Ju Shen Yan was astonished, his face stiffened. What a sharp sword! Lin Feng's attack was astonishing!

"The Giant Gods Clan has never lost in close combat!" proclaimed Ju Shen Yan coldly. Millions of stars appeared behind him, he looked like a Star God as he shouted furiously. The millions of stars condensed as he raised his fist, now full of star strength, and then he punched towards Lin Feng. His fist looked like a shooting star, trailing fires and explosive power. His strength was incredible and oppressive.

"Crushing Meteorite!" shouted Ju Shen Yan furiously. Lin Feng's sword crashed onto the meteorite fist straight on, energies clashed like hammers striking. The meteorite broke apart and the sword continued moving forwards, but stars kept attacking Lin Feng at the same time. Lin Feng was trembling, but his attack was probably going to be enough, it was still very fast—

The meteorite was destroyed, and Lin Feng's sword reached Ju Shen Yan. At that moment, the Giant disappeared. Ju Shen Kui Shan had acted and dragged him away so Lin Feng's sword struck nothing. Ju Shen Yan looked astonished, his body covered with cold sweat.

"He destroyed my Crushing Meteorite attack with his sword!" Ju Shen Yan felt ashamed.

"There are many geniuses in the world. His sword attack was incredible, quite beautiful. It was a very pure sword attack," said Ju Shen Kui Shan indifferently. "Not to mention your Crushing Meteorite attack isn't very powerful yet, you need to improve it. Someday, if you master it, you'll be able to destroy billions of meteorites, you'll be like a terrifying god."

"Alright," sighed Ju Shen Yan. He looked over at Lin Feng and said, "You are extremely strong. I feel ashamed of being inferior."

"Your attacks are extremely powerful too, I understood how to create such a sword thanks to you," replied Lin Feng diplomatically. His sword strength disappeared and he smiled. He looked like an ordinary person at that moment. If he hadn't come up with such a sword, Ju Shen Yan would have killed him already!

"You just created it?" Ju Shen Yan was astonished, "How strong! Your comprehension abilities are much better than mine. I always use spells I've practiced for a very long time. You just created it, and you still broke my attack!"

"That was just luck," Lin Feng smiled. The people around were speechless. These two guys were weird...

As the two were chatting, an incredible and ominous oppressive strength filled the air. It felt like an ancient strength.

"Eh?" Ju Shen Kui Shan looked stunned. He raised his head and saw millions of stars in the sky, beautiful and dazzling, rotating above them. The sky looked like a painting at that moment.

“How beautiful. But what is going on?” wondered Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the impression he was flying in the middle of the Milky Way. Was it an illusion?

“What’s going on? Where are we?” asked someone suddenly. Their hearts started pounding. They realized that they were now in the sky, in the middle of the stars. The mountain ranges around them had disappeared.

“Historical remains, we found historical remains. Gods’ historical remains!” exclaimed someone in a shaking voice.

“Those are definitely divinities’ historical remains. Huge! Are they as big as the whole Godly Grave? Only gods could create such things.”

Lin Feng’s heart was racing. Were they in historical remains? At this moment, the sky looked like a painting, very mysterious. The whole Godly Grave was a historical site?

“We’re in a star-studded sky, it represents a star god, which means we succeeded in the Starlit Area. That’s why the historical remains of the Starlit Area appeared. The others haven’t appeared yet.”

“We passed the challenge of the Starlit Area then! Finally. As expected, star strength is enigmatic and unfathomable, but also very strong. The members of the Fortune Shrine all enter the Godly Grave through the Starlit Area.” Many voices could be heard there.

Some people seemed to be in a trance, one of them had long messy hair, he looked as if he had gone into a frenzy, he raised his head to the skies and shouted furiously, “Finally, the divinities’ historical remains have appeared! I’ve been in here for 180,000 years, but there aren’t enough cultivators of the same level in the Godly Grave for me to fight, so I would have been stuck in here forever because of my cultivation level! But now historical remains have appeared!”

Lin Feng heard that voice, it was probably a peerless cultivator, and since there weren't many peerless cultivators there, it was difficult to find opponents to fight against and win points. Winning enough points was one way to leave the Godly Grave, seeing the historical remains was apparently another one.

# Chapter 2392: Gods' Traces

---

Everybody was shaking. Some people slowly entered the star-studded sky. The stars illuminated everybody.

Many people were wondering whether the historical side was one unique area, or several? Was this place really the Starlit Area historical site? If they had won in another area, would they have ended up in another historical site? The Godly Grave was divided into nine areas, were there nine historical sites?

How had that historical site been triggered?

It was like the concept of god could explain everything. Who had created the world? Who was strong enough to create such things?

Some figures started moving, If that place contained gods' historical remains, it meant that there were opportunities to obtain things. They couldn't miss such opportunities!

"If you pass the challenge of the Starlit Area, then the Star God's historical site appears and everybody is dragged inside, but it means that the people of the Starlit Area have no advantage. But many people who enter the Godly Grave through the Starlit Area control star strength, maybe this area is the best for them?" mused Lin Feng. He slowly took flight and started flying around.

How spectacular, how beautiful, he thought as he flew higher up. Being able to see the stars from so close up was spectacular. They looked so close and so far at the same time.

"What are stars? What is this world?" he wondered suddenly. In his previous life, habitable stars were worlds, but what were stars in this world?

He moved towards a star, wanting to see what there was there, could he get close enough? He realized that he couldn't. He could see things on that star though; it was like an animated picture scroll, showing cities with people living there, it seemed like an

independent world.

He saw a picture of a child, he was in a mansion house practicing cultivation. His father and mother protected him and watched him practice, day after day. It was beautiful. After that, a figure appeared in the sky above the palace, and the parents hid their child. When he came out, he noticed many corpses, including his parents' corpses. It wasn't a happy story, it was a cruel one.

"What do these stories mean?" he wondered. He continued flying. After a short time, he arrived in front of another star. There was an animated picture scroll on it too' there was a hero, it was a child in a beast tribe. He was the tribe's leader, and quite talented; he left the tribe, became stronger, and went back home after becoming famous. That story was nice, but very short; what was going to happen afterwards?

There were many scrolls like that on the stars, each star had a different one. Lin Feng was watching and flying at the same time. Also, he was flying higher and higher.

"I can't go any higher," said a voice at that moment. Lin Feng raised his head and saw someone who couldn't go any higher.

"Eh?" Lin Feng was surprised. He continued rising higher and higher. He flew past that person and continued. There were many people who were much higher than him...

"Your Excellency," said someone at that moment. Lin Feng saw someone smiling approach him. Lin Feng looked at him coldly.

"This place is strange, we could explore together," said that person smiling at Lin Feng.

"I'm not interested," said Lin Feng coldly.

"What a pity," said that person regretfully. "Freeze!" Ice-cold energies surrounded Lin Feng, crackling as they formed ice. The atmosphere froze around the man, and an iceberg appeared. That person smiled at Lin Feng coldly, "You failed to appreciate my

kindness!”

He moved towards Lin Feng and raised his hand. The gigantic iceberg flew towards Lin Feng, it was extremely heavy.

Crackling sounds spread in the air. Lin Feng’s eyes became pitch-black and he said, “Slow!” A mysterious strength appeared around Lin Feng.

He could make everything slow down around him. The iceberg slowed down too, so Lin Feng dodged it easily. The strong cultivator was moving much slower, too, and grimaced in alarm.

“Die!” Millions of death stamps appeared and surrounded the man. He was moving very slowly, so he couldn’t compete with Lin Feng anymore. Lin Feng raised his hand and pointed at his enemy, hell death strength surged towards him.

Lin Feng’s figure flickered; he raised his hand and aimed at the man’s head. Death strength penetrated into his enemy’s skull and corroded his life.

“You attacked me for points?” asked Lin Feng coldly.

“Release me and I’ll tell you.”

“Die,” said Lin Feng releasing even more death strength. The man’s facial expression changed drastically and he said, “Your Excellency, why kill me? I just wanted points. I can’t fly higher up. Many people can. I think it’s because I don’t have enough points. Please spare my life.”

That person had gone through lots of hardships in life to become so strong, dying now would have been such a pity since he was a Saint. He hoped Lin Feng would spare his life.

“Die!” said Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with murder. He killed his enemy and stole his points, and let their body fell down from the sky. It was a Saint’s body, but it was of no importance to Lin Feng.



“So you need enough points to fly higher up... So points are useful before the historical remains appear, and inside too!” he murmured. Lin Feng raised his head. People had started fighting when they realized they needed more points to rise higher up in the sky, they had no choice. The higher they were, the more terrifying the battles were.

That gigantic star-studded sky looked like an ancient road. Lin Feng rose up and up, looking at the top from the bottom felt different from looking at the bottom from the top.

“Third Uncle, look, over there...” Not far from Lin Feng, Ju Shen Yan pointed at the sky, he was showing something to Ju Shen Kui Shan.

“I see. That pattern looks like a head,” said Ju Shen Kui Shan. Lin Feng was stupefied. He hadn’t looked carefully but when he heard Ju Shen Kui Shan, he looked carefully at the top and he noticed that some stars formed a pattern. Up above, there was a gigantic head, it looked like the head of a beast.

“It’s an ox’s head,” he noticed. That ox was staring at them, his two eyes looked like dazzling stars. His mouth looked like a constellation. How big! It was difficult to imagine its size...

“According to legends, the god who created the Giant Gods Clan had a pet, and that pet was an ox,” said Ju Shen Kui Shan. The three people with him were startled.

“Third Uncle, you mean that this world was created by our ancestor?” asked Ju Shen Yan. His heart was pounding. Had they found their ancestor’s traces?

“I didn’t say that. It’s a legend in our clan. According to the legend, our ancestor was an ordinary person, a cultivator’s child who raised an ox. Many people humiliated him, so he did all he could to become stronger. He started practicing cultivation, and he became stronger and stronger.

“But he still loved his ox. They started practicing cultivation together. The ox became strong enough to turn into a human too, but continued following his master. In the end, our ancestor stood at the top of the world and created our clan. that’s why we’re so big and so strong; he wanted to make us as strong as oxen,” said Ju Shen Kui Shan calmly.

Ju Shen Yan and the others were surprised. Ju Shen Yan said, “I’ve never heard of that legend.”

“Such a long time has passed, we can’t verify whether the legend is true or not. We avoid telling our descendants those stories now. We don’t need to transmit legends which can’t be verified,” said Ju Shen Kui Shan.

“Let’s continue on and see.” The few people continued rising, and soon arrived under the ox. At that moment, a dazzling beam of light streaked across the sky. They couldn’t open their eyes, those two stars really were eyes.

“It’s really a godly historical site!” said someone. That gigantic ox was alive!

# Chapter 2393: God's Exam

---

“That’s...” Lin Feng was speechless. A cosmic beast! All those picture scrolls and stars were a beast? What was that beast’s cultivation level?

Those eyes are impressive, thought Lin Feng, staring at those eyes. It was like they could make someone go insane.

“1,300,000 years! Finally, you managed to pass the test of the Starlit Area, and now you’re here in front of me,” said a voice at that moment. It was impossible to tell where it came from!

Nobody said anything. They just stared at the old ox.

1,300,000 years, what a long time..., thought Lin Feng.

“I hope that this time, someone will manage to make this star-studded sky disappear forever, don’t disappoint me,” the old ox sighed. So many years had passed, it had been such a long time, waiting for such a long time had caused him much suffering.

“Master, I’m a descendent of the Giant Gods Clan, may I ask you if you know our ancestor?” Ju Shen Kui Shan asked the old ox.

“Oh?” the ox looked surprised, and replied to Ju Shen Kui Shan, “You’re a descendent of the Giant Gods Clan? My master created the Giant Gods Clan in the ancient times during one of his lives, indeed.”

“It’s real!” The members of the Giant Gods Clan were astonished; the legend almost nobody believed was true!

Surprisingly, the Giant Gods Clan had been created by that ox’s master. How incredible! Only gods could create such wonders!

“Your master is a god?” asked Ju Shen Kui Shan. He was a high-level Saint, and very nervous. He couldn’t wait to hear the ox’s reply.

“God?!” the ox said. “Of course, he’s one of the strongest gods!”

There were gods?! Gods really existed! At that moment, people's hearts were pounding. Finally, they had an answer: gods existed, and at this moment, they were in a god's historical site and were talking to a god's servant, the old ox!

"Is he still alive?!" asked Ju Shen Kui Shan nervously.

Everybody wanted to know if gods were still alive!

"I think so. He should be," murmured the ox. People's hearts twitched... he wasn't sure. Nobody could be sure if the gods still existed. Maybe they had disappeared. This historical site... was just historical.

"Is our ancestor still alive in the form he used to create our clan?" asked Ju Shen Kui Shan.

The old ox sighed. Some stars were shaking. "Let's not talk about that right now. The star-studded sky is vast, there are many historical remains, you can continue rising. There are also some humans' historical remains. You can go and explore. If you're lucky, you'll find many things. But in some worlds, many people aren't as strong as you, you aren't allowed to kill them."

"The stars are all worlds!" The crowd was astonished, and they understood something; gods could create as many worlds as they wished, they were real gods.

In front of gods, Saints were like tiny little insects. Gods were the strongest beings in the world!

"Of course, you can also continue flying up and up and you'll be able to take the test my master created back then. If you pass the exam, you'll be rewarded; but if you fail, you might die. Now, it's up to you. If you want to continue flying up, you can fly into my mouth and continue rising," said the old ox.

They had two options: continue flying up, they would be able to obtain more, and it wasn't dangerous, or they could also take the god's exam, but it could be extremely dangerous, and they could

die.

Only people who had enough points could choose. Without enough points, people couldn't continue rising. But people who were already this high were all extremely strong.

Many people had been stuck in here for many years, there were more people who were stuck in here than people who could leave, so the number of strong cultivators accumulated with time.

"Third Uncle, we'll go and take the exam, right?" Ju Shen Yan asked Ju Shen Kui Shan.

"Of course, we have to try!" replied Ju Shen Kui Shan.

"Let's go," said Ju Shen Kui Shan. Then they entered the ox's mouth, starlight shone down, and they disappeared.

"They disappeared, they're going to take the exam!" The crowd was astonished, and many people decided to go and take the exam. They were Saints, they had all taken risks to become strong in their lives. Now they had the opportunity to become stronger, how could they miss it? Saints were determined and didn't fear death. Everybody that could entered the ox's mouth.

"Saints are wise and determined." whispered Lin Feng. He also entered the ox's mouth, and lights surrounded him.

"Hey?" whispered the old ox, he was surprised. "You have no cultivation level?" he asked. "Could it be that..."

"That Qi is extremely powerful, you're a very strong cultivator who has just become a Saint." The lights continued surrounding Lin Feng and he disappeared.

"Starry sky ancient road." When Lin Feng reappeared, there was an ancient starry road in front of him. There were dozens of Saints there, all of them were half-Saints.

"People of the same level take the exam together?" asked Lin Feng. So people of the same level had to take the exam together. It

wouldn't have been fair if they had been grouped with weaker or stronger people.

“Since you decided to sit the exam, you can't give up anymore. Walk to the end of this path. When you get there, it means you passed. If you think you can't pass, you can retrace your steps to avoid dying, but you'll forget everything you saw today,” said a voice.

The crowd was startled. If they couldn't pass the exam, they weren't qualified to know what happened there, and they would lose their memories. How cruel!

“Alright, you can go now,” said a voice.

Nobody left. They didn't know what awaited them. What was this god's exam going to be like? They had to be very careful.

“What's your name?” Ju Shen Yan asked Lin Feng.

“Mu Feng,” said Lin Feng. If there were people from Shrines around, they would know who Lin Feng was. He had to use another name to avoid trouble.

“Mu Feng, this god's exam will probably be very complicated, let's join hands?” said Ju Shen Yan. He had fought against Lin Feng, he knew he was very strong.

Lin Feng didn't find that strange. There were many people there, joining hands with other people was normal. There was no rule which stipulated joining hands was forbidden, the only task was to reach the end of the road.

“Alright,” Lin Feng nodded. Even though he was self-confident, it was a god's exam! Having a friend would be harmless, especially if anyone attacked them.

“Everybody, my name is Mu Kui, let's move forwards together. We can all join hands in case of danger!” said a strong cultivator at that moment. Everybody agreed and they started moving forwards on the path. They saw a star in front of them, they had to cross it

to move forwards.

“There are people on the star,” said someone flying. A dozen people were flying towards the star.

“There are so many strong cultivators, how come?” asked someone, surprised. There was a terrifying army on that star.

“Oh no, we can’t fly across! We can’t cross it.”

Lin Feng realized that, as they got closer to the star, the energies became more and more oppressive.

“Those people aren’t flying, the atmosphere of the star must be sealed. We have to get down to cross it,” said someone. They descended from the sky. Very quickly, a terrifying strength surrounded them. They saw many, many people looking at them. Those people didn’t look like humans, they didn’t look like ordinary humans either... they looked like dead souls or puppets, evil and terrifyingly strong!

# Chapter 2394: Cooperation

---

“They’re all Saints. Even though they don’t seem alive, they must be as strong as Saints. There are Saints everywhere, how are we supposed to get through?” said Mu Kui, pulling a long face. If the terrifying cultivators on the ground surrounded them, they’d all die!

“We can get many points here, but we’re only Half-Saints and our fighting abilities are limited. This place is restricted, we can’t fly. We can easily get encircled, how can we cross that ocean of strong cultivators?”

“This exam is too difficult, and it’s only the first part.”

It was difficult, but it was a god’s exam, how could it be easy?

“Everybody, take out your Saint’s Weapons. The old ox didn’t say we couldn’t use weapons, we have only one option, slaughter them and move forwards, we can’t stop at all, even for a second. We have to kill and kill and kill,” said Lin Feng. Everybody nodded. They all took out their Saint’s Weapons, knowing Lin Feng was right. They couldn’t stop, they had to kill!

But killing their way through would be extremely difficult. Nobody could imagine how hard it would be. Their bodies stiffened as they thought about it.

“We have no other option. Everybody, let’s gather, we need a strong formation, we can form a few small groups and alternate to help one another. Everybody talk about what they’re better at, defense or offense,” said Mu Kui. At this moment, they had to cooperate fully. Nobody could get through alone.

“So me, I practice wood cultivation, it’s one of the most basic elements. I can oppress people. It’s useful in battles,” said Mu Kui.

“I practice illusion cultivation, but in a long battle, my cultivation is limited.”



“I practice water cultivation, one of the most basic elements as well, my defense is great, at the same cultivation level, most people can’t pierce through my defense.”

Everybody told what their strength was, they had to join hands.

“Both my defensive and offensive abilities are great, and I can fight over extended periods,” said Ju Shen Yan. “But I can’t fight forever, so we’ll have to switch now and then.”

“I control slow and fast strength, I can help everyone,” said Lin Feng.

After everybody talked, Mu Kui said, “We’re forty-two people. We can form two groups of twenty-one people. As we move forwards, one group has to be in the front while the other one can rest in the back. After every round, we switch positions. If anyone dies, someone has to replace them.”

“Alright, perfect.”

“If we make two groups of twenty-one, ten people have to be in the front to attack, eight people can stay behind to protect them, while three people assist. Someone can control, for example me, one other can fight on the sides. Mu Feng, you can do that, then someone who controls life strength can assist. We need someone with a powerful life technique, but only one,” said Mu Kui.

“I also control life strength. I can do that,” said Lin Feng.

“Good, not only do you control slow and fast strength, but you also control life strength, you can play two people’s roles. Let’s divide now,” said Mu Kui. He probably had a very high position in his clan because he understood military strategies really well. The force was perfectly balanced this way.

They managed to organize very quickly. The first group would fight, the second would follow and recover.

“Alright, get onto Nie Wang’s warship. The second group can rest on the boat, but don’t relax your vigilance, anything could

happen! First group, get ready,” said Mu Kui. With so many people, it was easy to make mistakes, so rigor and organization were essential. He also understood control strength, so he’d be able to control the boat too. Lin Feng and Mu Kui were in charge of leading the way.

“Let’s go.”

“Get ready to fight!”

They all looked grim. The boat moved forwards; they couldn’t fly, so the boat had to be at ground level too, but it was still terrifyingly fast, they all turned into a broad beam of light.

We’re getting closer. The energies are increasing!, thought the crowd. Some people already appeared in front of them.

“Attack!”

The first one who attacked was Ju Shen Yan. He raised his gigantic hand, stars flashed and bombarded someone, who exploded. At the same time, some strong cultivators behind him also released terrifying attacks.

How strong. When many Saints attack at the same time, it’s awesome!, thought Lin Feng. But the puppets in front of them also looked daunting...

Terrifying Celestial Dao surged towards them. They were all shaking.

Dozens of blood spears shot towards the crowd as fast as lightning. The army of Saint puppets looked real, how was that possible?

“Slow!” said Lin Feng. Instantly, the blood spears slowed down, an arrow streaked across the sky and struck down a spear. A strong cultivator next to Lin Feng had a bow and arrows, it was a powerful Saint’s weapon. They had to be careful; if all the Saint puppets blocked them at the same time, it would be very bad luck. Now, they could only press forwards with indomitable will.

Everything happened extremely quickly. As soon as they killed puppets, they were already far beyond them.

“Until now, we haven’t faced real danger, let’s hope it’ll continue,” said Mu Kui.

“It’s not that easy, we have to continue and press on without letup. That’s how we made it here, but the star is really vast. We have to continue. We don’t know what awaits us,” said Lin Feng.

Mu Kui nodded, “You’re right, brother. It’s going to last for a long time. We haven’t seen anything yet.”

“Luckily we have many people. Imagine if only one or a few people had decided to take the exam, it would have been even more dangerous,” said Nie Wang. Nie Wang wasn’t fighting, because Lin Feng could play the role of two people, so Nie Wang drove the boat. His new role was to pay attention and try to drive through places where there were fewer blockers.

“It’s going to be difficult though. We’re using too much energy, we won’t be able to hold on very long like that,” murmured Lin Feng. Those who were in charge of attacking couldn’t stop for even a millisecond. They were probably going to be exhausted quickly.

“That’s why we have to switch every round,” said Mu Kui, “Yu Lin’s nine broadswords are incredible, his attacks become more and more powerful. A single Half-Saint can’t really stop those attacks.”

“They’re extremely powerful, indeed,” agreed Lin Feng. Yu Lin was a middle-aged man wielding nine swords, his fighting abilities were incredible.

The boat continued moving forwards, everything was fine, but the group was already exhausted.

“There are many strong cultivators there, should we switch?” asked Nie Wang.

“There are only a few, let’s kill them!” replied someone.

“Alright.” Nie Wang nodded. However, at that moment, there was a rumble, and the ground started trembling.

“A strong cultivator who controls earth strength, be careful!” said Yu Lin, while attacking with his nine broadswords. The ground rolled in waves like seawater, spewing dust into the air. The boat pierced through the cloud of dust, but walls appeared out of the ground to block them.

“Attack!” shouted a strong cultivator. A gigantic hand was moving towards them.

“Slow!” An arrow moved towards the hand and destroyed it. The cultivator who had the bow and arrows was called Liao Feng.

In the distance, a strong cultivator raced towards them. Mu Kui was surprised.

“Quick, quick, we can’t let him stop us or slow us down!” said Mu Kui. At the same time, he released vines which blotted out the sky and moved towards the enemy to constrict him.

“Oh no, the boat is going to lose its balance!” They had the impression the boat was going to turn over. Nie Wang could barely control it. A terrifying strength was pushing the boat.

Someone was attacking the boat, but it was a medium-level Saint’s Weapon. Destroying it wasn’t easy, but making it roll over was possible.

A gigantic blood-red hand descended from the sky towards Lin Feng.

“Oh no, we’re going to get stuck!” thought Lin Feng. They couldn’t get stuck here!

“Imprison!” Lin Feng’s eyes became pitch-black and a cage of darkness appeared, Lin Feng shot forwards. They had to solve the issue as soon as possible!

He took out his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation and suddenly

moved towards the wall in front of him as fast as lightning. The wall exploded, and at the same time, he crushed someone's head with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation.

“Stay in formation!” Mu Kui was very nervous; he looked like a creature with three heads and six arms, and had released an incredible quantity of vines to attack the puppets all around. It was like he was sweeping the battlefield.

“Come here quickly!” shouted Nie Wang. He could control the boat again! Everybody jumped onto it again; Lin Feng continued destroying puppets with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation while retreating to the boat. He glanced at the puppets with his pitch-black eyes. Many puppets started casting illusion spells, but he quickly destroyed them.

The boat accelerated and opened up the way.

“Wait for me!” shouted someone furiously. Someone was stuck behind. He hadn't had time to jump back to the boat.

“Accelerate, we can't wait!” shouted some people coldly. Nie Wang had no choice, he was under too much pressure.

That cultivator saw the boat disappear in the distance. Millions of Saint puppets jumped onto him, and he drowned in an ocean of monsters. He was doomed!

## Chapter 2395: Star Gate

---

Nie Wang was extremely vigilant. It was difficult to move forwards, there were many strong cultivators. It was very dangerous. They couldn't waste time. However, even if they moved as fast as they could, time passed quickly. They had already spent three months there. Everybody was exhausted and they had the impression it was never going to end.

They couldn't see the end of this world. Every day, they switched positions, even people who were resting couldn't really rest and recover because they had to be vigilant at all times. Out of the forty-two people they had at the beginning, only thirty-four remained.

Apart from their boat, there were other strong cultivators behind them. They had come to that star afterwards, and they also had a Saint's Weapon which enabled them to fly. It was a smaller boat, there weren't many people on it. However, their Qi was terrifying. Chu Chun Qiu and Kong Ming were on that boat, too.

The most incredible thing was that that boat was surrounded by dazzling Buddha's lights, 108 dazzling golden blades floated around the boat and blood kept splashing around them. That boat wasn't only a means of transportation, it was also a sharp weapon. It was much better than Lin Feng and the others' boat, and the cultivators on it were much more relaxed.

Nie Wang was at the front of the boat, he was getting impatient, "It's still not over."

"This world is too big."

At that moment, they heard a shout. They looked in the front and were stunned.

"We're doomed," said Nie Wang. His face turned deathly pale. Then, he made the boat turn around and they fled. However, in

front of them there were still many enemies. They were surrounded.

“We can’t break free!” Nie Wang pulled a long face. Everybody was scared. There were too many enemies. There were even more enemies than when they had arrived. How could they get through?

“What to do?” asked someone.

“We have to continue, move forwards and kill them. It’s an exam, we have no choice. We could also go back, the old ox said we would live,” whispered Mu Kui.

“We have to pass the exam. We won’t have such an opportunity ever again,” said a woman with unswerving determination. Her name was Xiao Yin, she was extremely strong and controlled water, fire, and soundwave strength. She had a very deep understanding of those energies, and with Celestial Dao, her attacks were terrifying.

“We have to kill them and continue,” said someone else. People felt even more motivated after what Xiao Yin had said.

“Alright, let’s kill then,” said Nie Wang. His arrow streaked across the sky, energies rolled in waves around them. His arrow whistled furiously before it pierced through someone’s head.

The boat continued moving forwards while destroying enemies. Their souls were shaking.

The destructive Saint’s attacks blotted out the sky and covered the earth. People raised their heads... it looked like the end of times.

“I hope we’ll be lucky,” said Yu Lin. He jumped off the boat, his nine blades rotating around him and emitting dazzling lights.

“Let’s go,” said Lin Feng and Ju Shen Yan. Ju Shen Yan’s emitted crackling and spluttering as star lights emerged from his body. He was an ancient giant bathing in starlight. He raised his hand, he was so tall, it was as if he had tried to grab the moon.

“Slow!” said Lin Feng, releasing powerful slowing energies. He raised his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, looking like an ancient demon king. After they attacked the enemies around them, the space around them was filled with corpses. However, someone exploded next to them, their only fate when someone was exhausted.

“Stop!” said someone coldly. A cultivator in golden clothes raised his finger and the atmosphere around slowed down, it was as if everything had been about to stop around him. He disappeared, teleporting himself away.

“Celestial Void cultivator, bastard,” shouted someone furiously. That cultivator had a Saint’s Weapon which could stop everything around him and he hadn’t used it before. Now he had used it to save his own life, he didn’t care about the others.

But everybody had their own trump cards, they all had all sorts of Saint’s Weapons, many people didn’t want to show all of them. Liao Feng also had a terrifying weapon, his arrows were murderous. He could almost destroy the sky with them.

Lin Feng’s God’s sword was floating above his head. He looked like a death god. Everything became slow around them.

Ju Shen Yan took out two gigantic star hammers. They contained star strength which filled the air. Lin Feng was impressed.

“Go!” said Lin Feng coldly. The ground was trembling as Ju Shen Yan flashed forwards. He attacked the puppets with his hammers and each time, small stars exploded all around. They managed to create a small hole in the wall of enemies in front of them.

“I’ll do left and front, you do front and right!” said Lin Feng attacking the enemies on his left with his God’s sword. A vortex of absorbing strength appeared, he wanted to try and absorb his foes. At the same time, he also released slow strength to slow them down. They couldn’t stop him!



Those puppets are Saints, but they're luckily stupid, otherwise, we wouldn't have a single chance, thought Lin Feng. He continued attacking them with his Great Demon Halberd of Desolation. He was moving flicker-quick, beheading them right and left.

He also released a golden deployment spell. A light curtain appeared. He made some of them enter his deployment spell.

"What a great deployment spell." Ju Shen Yan looked enthusiastic. That way there would be much less pressure. The gigantic hammer streaked across the sky and smashed apart another puppet's head.

"Follow me, don't leave the deployment spell," said Lin Feng. The deployment spell stayed around him, slow strength also stayed around him.

Ju Shen Yan looked even more enthusiastic, "How strong! Mu Feng, you're a real genius, your slow strength makes things much easier, nobody can compete with us this way."

Indeed, Lin Feng's abilities were beneficial for the whole crowd, but Lin Feng was also using up lots of strength. The enemies' attacks couldn't really reach his deployment spell. But keeping the deployment spell up and running while releasing slow strength the whole time was exhausting too!

There are still so many, it's endless!, he thought. How annoying! He stayed focused—

On the side, an enemy broke the deployment spell. Lin Feng knew it, the absorbing strength of his God's sword surrounded him.

"Piss off!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. Whistling sounds spread in the air, and deployment marks started intertwining again, sealing the breach.

——

Three days passed, and Lin Feng was exhausted, he had a terrible

headache. Even if he was a Saint, fighting constantly for days and days without stopping was exhausting. Only people who had special abilities or precious treasures could survive, and Saints continued dying.

“We’re there, finally! There’s nothing over there.” shouted Ju Shen Yan happily. Finally!

That guy is funny, thought Lin Feng with a weary smile. He was also very happy, though. Finally, they were out. Ju Shen Yan and Lin Feng had killed many enemies together, and used lots of energy. They were both incredible cultivators. No wonder Ju Shen Yan was a god’s descendent. Lin Feng was thinking that if Ju Shen Yan hadn’t been there to help, it would have been much more difficult.

“Go!” shouted Lin Feng. This time, he moved like the wind and destroyed cultivators with his God’s sword.

“My sword and my sword techniques are divine,” said Lin Feng. His Ruler’s Sword seemed unstoppable!

“Haha! How awesome,” said Ju Shen Yan. He sounded excited. Finally, they had arrived on the edge of the star! They continued walking onto the ancient path, turned around and saw the millions of puppets. But it was already over for them, they had succeeded.

“Mu Feng, you’re too strong! If we hadn’t joined hands, it would have been difficult,” Ju Shen Yan said to Lin Feng.

“We’re both in the same boat.” They both laughed. Lin Feng said, “Let’s go. Let’s see what the next exam is.”

“Alright,” Ju Shen Yan nodded. They continued on. There were many stars in front of them, and no exit. After a short time, Ju Shen Yan and Lin Feng stopped. In front of them, there were a large number of star gates. Some star gates were bright, some weren’t.

“Some people arrived before us, it seems, but only four,” said Ju

Shen Yan. He glanced at a bright gate and walked towards it, “Mu Feng, it’s the second test. Let’s go.”

He crossed the bright star gate and disappeared.

## Chapter 2396: Seven Years

---

Lin Feng also entered a portal. Lights surrounded his body and he appeared somewhere else. In front of him was a figure. The person was standing there calmly. He didn't react to Lin Feng, because it was not actually a person, but a painting of a person!

"He looks so real!" murmured Lin Feng, impressed at the sight.

The man-painting in front of him was wearing a star robe. He whispered, "Cultivating one's mind consists in retrieving one's true self. The strongest cultivators in the world control everything. Dao is like nature. When you understand Dao, you can transcend worldliness, you can break free from the chiliocosm of the Great Tao. The biggest..."

Lin Feng listened to that illusory voice, it sounded like a teacher giving a class.

"According to legends, when peerless cultivators give classes, many incredible and almost peerless cultivators listen to them. My clone has been in the Fortune Shrine for such a long time, and I've only heard one peerless Saint talk about Dao. This cultivator in front of me is fascinating, though. He talks slowly but that way I remember everything he says," whispered Lin Feng. The cultivator was extremely strong. Was he a god?

He was wearing a star robe and as he talked, he kept moving his hands. He continued talking about Dao.

"Celestial Dao is mysterious and difficult to understand, especially for me since my cultivation is different from everybody else. I practice cultivation in a completely different way," whispered Lin Feng, staring at the painted cultivator. He had spent much time with the Diviner, and he had also read many books. He knew lots of things, but he also knew that his cultivation was completely different from other people.

But maybe everything would be the same in the end? Lin Feng continued listening to the strong cultivator. He was captivated.

This time, the exam's goal was to test their comprehension abilities.

The first test was about strength, but it was also about what people owned. Those who were lucky or had precious items had an advantage. This time, those things were useless.

“Celestial Dao. He understands stars Celestial Dao. His strength is composed of stars coupled with Celestial Dao, so he controls the stars, analyzed Lin Feng. He was captivated and focused. He didn't know why, but he was staring at the cultivator.

I have my own world. I can control all sorts of strength. I understand so many of them: life, death, fast, slow, the five elements, cursing strength, and so on... I can also make any kind of strength fuse together with my own Celestial Dao, it's how I can create seasons in my world and trigger them whenever I want. It means that in my world, I am already a low-level Saint. That's also why I can kill low-level Saints in the outside world. Killing them in my own world is extremely easy. In the outside world, I should be a Half-Saint, but my body is special, thought Lin Feng.

---

Time passed. Four months later, someone slowly came out on the other side of a star. It was a woman.

How strange. I spent only four months in here, and now I'm a low-level Saint. I've spent years in this world, yet I just spent four months in here to become a low-level Saint. How great!, thought Xiao Yin.

She bowed before the star and said, “Thank you very much, Master, for showing me the path to enlightenment.”

Xiao Yin understood that without that extremely strong cultivator, she would have never been able to progress so quickly.

Of course, she had progressed because she had great comprehensive abilities, too, that's why she had broken through in only four months. She was extremely happy.

At the level of Saints, breaking through was something extremely difficult, as the distance between the different layers was as far apart as Heaven and Earth. Some people never managed to break through, and were stuck at the same cultivation level for a long time. Many people understood Celestial Dao and then became Saints, but many of them never managed to fuse their own strength together with Celestial Dao. Now, she had managed to overcome that incredible difficulty.

To transcend worldliness and attain holiness... In other words, to become a Saint, people had to understand Celestial Dao. Then, they could create Saint's attacks using Celestial Dao. But Saints at that level only had a very basic knowledge of Celestial Dao, so they couldn't use it in an optimal way. That was why they were called Half-Saints.

Low-level Saints could finally make their strength fuse together with Celestial Dao. They really started becoming one with Celestial Dao. It was also why low-level Saints' attacks were much, much more powerful than Half-Saints' attacks. Low-level Saints could easily destroy Half-Saints, but there were some strange people, like Lin Feng. In his own world, he was already a low-level Saint, that's why his attacks were as powerful as low-level Saints' attacks.

Xiao Yin slowly walked forwards. She was wondering what the next exams would be like. She had already passed two tests, and was a bit nervous. What would happen if she passed all the exams?

During the second exam, she had suddenly understood something and become a low-level Saint. It had definitely been worth it!

——

Three years later, someone else came out. It was Ju Shen Yan. He

burst into laughter and condensed star strength.

“Haha, awesome! Is it a reward from my ancestor?” shouted Ju Shen Yan. It felt awesome. He had been stuck at that cultivation level for three thousand years, and now he had finally broken through. He raised his head and released star strength.

“I’ll be able to carry out even more explosive attacks in the future!” His heart was pounding. He said, “I wonder whether Brother Mu Feng has come out or not. He should be fine though! Right, I’ll continue and see what the next test is.”

---

Lin Feng was still calmly standing behind the strong cultivator. He was whispering at the same pace as him. His voice resonated along with the strong cultivator’s voice, as if he had become a part of him. Everything around him had turned pitch-black. The atmosphere was filled with death strength. This time, he wasn’t in his own world, he was outside.

Next to the death strength, there was life strength. There was also fire strength, demon strength, and more, all sorts of strength. He was talking and his voice was resonating at the same pace as the Celestial Dao.

Lin Feng had made great efforts to achieve all this. He was focused, happy to have such an opportunity. He wanted to succeed in the outside world, not just in his own world. Now, he understood more and more things which would help him in the future, even in terms of God strength.

“Cultivating the mind consists of retrieving one’s true self. At the highest cultivation level, you can control the world...” whispered Lin Feng. He imagined what life would be like in the future, where he wouldn’t need to use Saint’s Weapons to kill low-level Saints anymore.

---

Time passed. In the Godly Grave, five or ten years, was a very short time. The Star Area was a historical site. Five years, six years, passed in the blink of an eye. Lin Feng finally came out. He had passed the exam. Actually, he could have come out much earlier, but he was happy to listen to the teacher. That was such an incredible opportunity.

Lin Feng stood on the starry path. He looked happy, relaxed, and light-hearted. If anyone had been there, they would have been able to determine Lin Feng's cultivation level instantly: low-level Saint!

"Seven years have passed. Seven years..." thought Lin Feng with a sigh. Time passed too fast at such cultivation levels.

Actually, he was already quite fast, many people needed ten thousand years, or even a hundred thousand years, to become true Saints!

"No wonder some people say it gets more and more difficult with time!" Laughed Lin Feng. People often got stuck at the same cultivation level for thousands and thousands of years. Younger people who were more talented than them then caught up with them, and the younger people became stronger than older people.

There were many, many examples of such cultivators. The worst thing for them was when some older people disdained others because they were stronger, and then time passed and those people caught up with them.

"Now, in the outside world, I'm a low-level Saint! I understand many sorts of basic strength, I fused them together with Celestial Dao. Even though I don't have an advanced understanding, killing low-level Saints is now extremely easy for me. However, it's still going to be difficult to kill low-level Saints who have an advanced understanding, or who have incredibly powerful Saint's techniques, they can still be difficult opponents." Lin Feng understood many sorts of strength, but if someone understood one sort of strength better than him, then he'd still be under pressure.



Of course, in the future, he would continue studying and would thus be able to avoid such situations.

“I wonder what the next test will be like.” He continued walking forwards.

# Chapter 2397: God's Beast

---

Lin Feng continued walking along the path. The light of the stars continued shining down on him. Lin Feng raised his head and whispered, "Is that the god's world?"

A grave was a place where dead people were put. Was it a grave? Why were people who had enough points the only ones allowed in here? Was there anything in particular?

After some time, Lin Feng saw some people he knew: Ju Shen Yan and Xiao Yin!

"Ju Shen Yan!" shouted Lin Feng.

Ju Shen Yan turned around and smiled, "Mu Feng, you also passed the second test."

"Yes." Lin Feng nodded and looked at Ju Shen Yan and Xiao Yin. There were nine figures in front of them, all of them beasts.

"What's that?" asked Lin Feng. Was that the third test?

"The third test. That god is really sly. The test is really very, very difficult. Becoming a low-level Saint was difficult, but this test is even more difficult. Those beasts are the nine beasts the gods rode back in the days, they are all low-level Saints, and terrifyingly strong. We just broke through; how could we fight against them? All those who fought against those beasts ended up in tragic conditions in the last few years," Ju Shen Yan told Lin Feng. "It's very difficult. It's driving me nuts."

When Lin Feng heard Ju Shen Yan, he was startled. Those beasts were all low-level Saints, and Ju Shen Yan was complaining, which meant those beasts were really terrifyingly strong. The gods had raised them!

"You're incompetent and ignorant, like a frog in a well. Do you know what awaits you if you pass the exam? But you're here and taking this exam now," said a voice. It was a beast, its third eye

flared with light. He looked evil and he looked at Ju Shen Yan in a disdainfully.

This was his master's exam, if they all passed, then... unfortunately, he was just his master's pet, he couldn't take the exam, he wasn't qualified. But even that way, he had to take his role seriously and try to fail people. Those two people had arrived early, but they hadn't taken risks. Otherwise, the beasts would have already killed them.

"You're a beast, watch your words! Don't talk to me that way, I'm a god's descendent! I'm a member of the Giant Gods Clan!" shouted Ju Shen Yan furiously. During those years, the beasts had kept making fun of him, which annoyed him a lot.

"Descendent? All the gods have many, many, many descendents. Even if you're really a god's descendent, you must be from a pitiful part of the family, I'm sure you've never even seen the god! Unlike me, who followed him for a long time at war," said the beast proudly. He was comparing himself with Ju Shen Yan.

"Ridiculous! We're not the only ones who took the exam. Before that, we were still Half-Saints and now we broke through. You're just a low-level Saint. If I'm not mistaken, the examinees who were low-level Saints before are now fighting against high-level beasts who are much stronger creatures than you," shouted Ju Shen Yan coldly.

"Insolent!" shouted the beast, howling furiously, "Come here, I'll crush you!"

"You're shamed into anger?" retorted Ju Shen Yan, smiling coldly. He said to Lin Feng, "Mu Feng, they can only move out there in the front. Therefore, when you try, if you can't fight against them, you can come back immediately, they can't touch us here."

"You have to defeat the nine beasts to pass the exam?" asked Lin Feng, staring at the beasts. They looked too strong.

“No, the path we’re on is our territory. If you can get past us, then you pass, but I’m warning you, we’ll do all we can to kill you, so be very careful,” said a beast coldly. The beast was wearing a white robe while in his human form, he looked extremely evil.

“You can’t teleport here, it’s forbidden, so be very careful,” said Xiao Yin to Lin Feng.

“Yes, you can’t, even though the goal is only to get through, it’s extremely difficult. We tried a myriad of times, we almost died. Those beasts are arrogant, but they are really incredible strong,” said Ju Shen Yan to Lin Feng telepathically. He used telepathy because he didn’t want the beasts to think he was too weak.

“I’ll try,” said Lin Feng. He slowly walked forwards. How strong were these beasts?

“The wolf’s first attack is the most terrifying one, he controls wind strength, he’s very fast. Don’t let him reach you,” said Ju Shen Yan.

“Alright!” replied Lin Feng. He flashed forwards and released Qi which filled the air. He also understood wind strength, so he fused it together with Celestial Dao. At that moment, Lin Feng had the impression he was a part of nature, he was the Celestial Dao itself.

The wolf howled, staring at Lin Feng. He looked fearsome and evil.

“I’m warning you, don’t use Saint’s Weapons, or you will suffer even more,” said the figure in white clothes.

Lin Feng was surprised but nodded. Saint’s Weapons? Those beasts belonged to an incredible god, didn’t they have weapons?

Lin Feng remained vigilant. Ju Shen Yan was extremely strong, especially since he had become a low-level Saint, but these beasts had nearly killed him.

“You’re still not attacking?” said Lin Feng, slowly walking forwards. The beasts were staring at him, especially the wolf. Lin

Feng guessed that that wolf would be merciless.

Finally, the wolf moved, so fast it was even difficult to follow him with one's eyes. He controlled wind, which was a fundamental energy, and he was a low-level Saint, so his wind strength had fused together with Celestial Dao.

The wolf was extremely fast thanks to his wind strength. It was difficult to imagine.

Lin Feng also condensed wind strength. His figure streaked across the sky. His trajectory was circular, trying to avoid the wolf.

Oh no, he wants to avoid them and break free like that!, thought Ju Shen Yan. Mu Feng was insane. It was impossible to escape from those beasts! It was necessary, in his opinion, to study them carefully, and then move.

As expected, Lin Feng moved past, and the wolf followed him.

“Bury!” shouted an old beast. Earth covered Lin Feng. The beasts controlled the most basic kinds of strength, and were all extremely strong. They were experts in one kind of strength. The one who controlled earth strength could use the earth as he wished.

It was difficult to master one kind of strength to perfection, though!

The ground exploded. Lin Feng was bathing in sword lights, it seemed like he could cut through anything.

The wolf moved his claws towards Lin Feng's head. He was so fast, it was incredible.

“Slow!” said Lin Feng. Instantly, everything around him became slower.

“What a powerful little boy!” The beasts were stupefied when they saw that. Lin Feng controlled three original types of strength which had returned to their source: wind, sword, and slowing. Three original kind of strength, and Lin Feng was just a low-level

Saint!

The beasts found Lin Feng really strong. Such a feat wasn't easy at all. Otherwise, not so many people would be stuck as Half-Saints. It was even more difficult to achieve with several types of strength.

It got more and more complicated with time, especially for those who wanted to master a type of strength to the extreme. When they achieved that, they became high-level Saints! Such cultivators were really terrifying because when a cultivator managed to understand one type of strength to its maximum level, their attacks became really powerful. Those who understood several types of strength were even more terrifying!

The reason why Lin Feng understood several types of original strengths was his particular body, his God Dao, and his own world. Therefore, it wasn't that difficult for him to understand several types of strength. However, reaching their full level would be difficult.

A type of original strength was completely different from abstruse energies or Dao. They could use original strength to create Saint's techniques!

The wolf was slowed down and looked at Lin Feng coldly.

He spat out sharp blades at Lin Feng, each blade contained a terrifying wind strength. The air hummed as he managed to break some of the slow strength.

However, Lin Feng didn't want to fight against him. He continued moving forwards. He released even more wind strength and turned into a beam of light.

"Where are you going?" Suddenly, Lin Feng had the impression a terrifyingly heavy strength was crashing onto him. His heart twitched. It was pure earth strength! At that cultivation level, it was better not to offend anyone!

# Chapter 2398: Difficult to Break Out

---

Original strength fused together with Celestial Dao, it was almost invisible and intangible. Lin Feng sensed how terrifying the energy was.

He felt heavy.

Whistling sounds spread in the air. The wolf moved towards him, he had managed to break free from Lin Feng's slow strength. If Lin Feng hadn't controlled slow strength, he wouldn't have been able to compete with the wolf.

A strong wind was blowing. Some wind blades moved towards Lin Feng, the wind turned into a hurricane.

Lin Feng released a terrifying sword energy which sliced through the atmosphere around him.

"Break!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. His God's Sword struck out at everything around, fissures appeared. However, a heavier strength oppressed him as an ape ran towards him. Each time the ape took a step, Lin Feng felt even more under pressure. If he had been an ordinary cultivator, he would have exploded!

A gigantic hand which blotted out the sky appeared above Lin Feng and descended, containing an awesome heavy strength. Lin Feng had the impression he was carrying the world on his shoulders. If that hand reached him, he'd be crushed into mush.

"Slow!" Lin Feng released slow strength. He fused it together with the Celestial Dao of the outside world, and his energies became even more powerful. Everything around him became slower.

"Back!" Lin Feng moved back. He turned into a beam of light. He retreated to where he was just before. The wolf's attack had almost reached him.

"Those beasts are so strong. Besides, only three of them attacked.

The others didn't even try anything. Only the wolf tried to kill me, the others didn't try anything, they must think I'm too weak to even pass the exam, so they just watched from the side!"

If they had attacked Lin Feng together, things would have been different, even more dangerous. Lin Feng looked at them, he was amazed. Only three beasts had attacked him and he felt so much pressure. How terrifying would it have been if the others had attacked him, too?

"Mu Feng, what do you think?" asked Ju Shen Yan to Lin Feng.

"They're strong. Those beasts are very strong. Passing this exam will be very difficult!" whispered Lin Feng.

"They didn't say we had to take the exam one at a time. We might be able to join hands," said Ju Shen Yan.

Lin Feng was surprised, join hands?

It was a good solution. The only problem was... if the three of them joined hands, they would have an opportunity to get through, but probably not all of them.

"Xiao Yin, what do you think?" asked Ju Shen Yan to Xiao Yin.

"We can join hands. But only one of us will get through. Who, though?" said Xiao Yin. She looked nervous.

If one of them managed to get through, it would mean they passed the exam. They were three, who would be willing to let anyone else get through?

"Mu Feng is stronger than me. I can let him go, especially since he controls fast strength, he has more chances to succeed," said Ju Shen Yan. "I don't stand any chance alone, anyway. If I can help one or two people, why not? Xiao Yin, if you think you can, no problem. I can let you pass too."

Xiao Yin was surprised. Ju Shen Yan was truly generous, he was willing to let them pass?



“Alright, since you are willing to help, one of us can try once, and we do our best to help each other. We’ll see who’s lucky,” said Xiao Yin.

Ju Shen Yan didn’t mind. “Alright!”

“One person, one try. That way, Ju Shen Yan can try too. One person, one round, the two others help. If anyone succeeds, we help them to the end,” said Lin Feng. Ju Shen Yan was willing to help them and sacrifice himself. Lin Feng wasn’t selfish, and Ju Shen Yan was strong too. If he could help him break through, he would be happy to do so!.

“Good. I’ll try first then,” said Xiao Yin, slowly walking forwards.

She’s determined, no wonder she made it so far in life, especially as a woman!, thought Lin Feng. He admired Xiao Yin, she was very determined.

Lin Feng and Ju Shen Yan stayed at her side.

“You think it’ll be easier if you join hands?” said the wolf, his eyes glittering. He looked at them coldly, then he said to the beasts behind him, “Dear friends, if you don’t do anything this time, those humans will get away, that’d be humiliating. How could we let a few tiny little insects get away?”

The beasts looked at Lin Feng and the others. Three people joining hands, so what?

“I’ll use fast strength on you,” Lin Feng told Xiao Yin telepathically. Suddenly, she became much faster.

“Mu Feng is really strong. He understands both fast and slow strength. Later, when he becomes a high-level Saint, if he makes the two energies fuse together, he’ll directly become a peerless Saint. And when fast and slow strength perfectly fuse together, you can also influence time.” She had heard that when slow and fast strength reached perfection, it became time.

During these seven years, Lin Feng had done more than her.

“Seal!” said Xiao Yin suddenly. Suddenly, the atmosphere was sealed by ice energies around her.

“Let’s go!” shouted Xiao Yin extremely loudly. She was prepared and moved as fast as lightning. Lin Feng and Ju Shen Yan followed her closely.

“Kacha!” The ice broke loudly. Xiao Yin opened her mouth and released terrifying soundwave energies. She was also a genius. She understood more than one original energy, too!

“Fast!” Lin Feng and the two others accelerated.

“Stop!” shouted someone. Water surrounded them.

“Water Constriction!” Xiao Yin was stupefied, she felt as if she were underwater, she couldn’t move as quickly anymore. She flashed forwards and released fire energies. Suddenly, she was bathing in flames.

“What a strong baby girl. Surprisingly, she understands water, fire, and soundwave strength, three original types of strength, and she made them all fuse together with Celestial Dao to become a low-level Saint,” said the beast in white clothes. He was surprised. Xiao Yin was really extraordinary.

A gigantic hand moved towards Xiao Yin.

“Seal!” Xiao Yin wanted to seal the atmosphere, but it was useless. No matter what she did, she couldn’t escape.

“I’m coming!” said Lin Feng, flashing towards her. A terrifying destructive strength pressed forwards with indomitable will. The gigantic hand exploded. Xiao Yin benefited from the opportunity and moved forwards.

“You can’t get out!” shouted a beast. Qi surrounded Xiao Yin, and the beast in white clothes released a howling hurricane which moved towards Xiao Yin and pushed her back violently.

“We failed, back!” Lin Feng and Ju Shen Yan moved backwards.

“How strong. I didn’t have a single chance. We’ve just become low-level Saints, those beasts have been low-level Saints for many years. We don’t stand a single chance. They’re just playing with us. They can even kill us if they want,” said Xiao Yin. She felt dispirited. It was so difficult.

“Yes, apart from that wolf, the others are merciful,” said Lin Feng. He had noticed that. The other beasts were terrifyingly strong, but they didn’t try to kill them, and they were much stronger.

After that, Lin Feng and Ju Shen Yan also tried but they all failed. Lin Feng had managed to go much farther than Ju Shen Yan and Xiao Yin, but he had failed too in the end.

Of course, Lin Feng didn’t use his full strength, it wasn’t the right time. He wanted the beasts to evaluate his strength first based on what he was doing, he wanted them to get used to it, and then he’d use his full strength.

---

Time passed, two years went by. They continued trying for two years, and none of them managed to break through. During those two years, someone else arrived: Liao Feng, the archer. The four of them joined hands over and over again, but they failed each time.

# Chapter 2399: Breaking Out

---

“Pfew...” Liao Feng looked at the beasts angrily. He said, “Those beasts are so strong. Even though they’re low-level Saints like us, our attacks can’t injure them, so we can’t pose a threat to them. Therefore, if we want to break out, we have to resort to trickery. However, those Saints have some incredible spells, so resorting to trickery is difficult, too.”

“This exam is too difficult. We’re only four people, if we were nine, it’d be much better,” said Xiao Yin. They had spent two years trying already. For such strong cultivators, two years was nothing, but they had been constantly fighting for two years and had naturally become much stronger.

“There’s someone.” Suddenly, a strong wind started blowing from behind them. Lin Feng and the others turned around and saw someone. He looked like a Buddha, bathing in Buddha lights. Lin Feng was surprised.

“Nine years, I finally came out.” Kong Ming slowly arrived, he floated up next to Lin Feng and glanced at him as if he had was trying to see through him.

“Eh?” Lin Feng was surprised.

Kong Ming said to Lin Feng telepathically, “Back then, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Chu Chun Qiu, you, and I were the best. I knew that you’d all reach the clouds someday, however, I did not think that the first one would remain the first the whole time. Now, you’re still first, you also became a low-level Saint before us.”

“Kong Ming recognized me.” Lin Feng was startled. Chu Chun Qiu could recognize him, Kong Ming could recognize him too, how? Those guys were incredible.

“I’d heard that the Fortune Shrine had taken you to the Buddha

Shrine. After the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, I was lucky, I met the right people and found the right things. That's how I became so strong. But you're extremely strong too, we still have the same cultivation level," replied Lin Feng, also telepathically. Kong Ming and Chu Chun Qiu were both incredible cultivators. Where was Zhou Rong Man? What was he doing those days?

"You were lucky in a way, I was lucky in my own way, too. It's not because you have a forbidden Body that you can practice faster than me it seems," said Kong Ming. These days, his body had become gigantic, his Qi and strength had become gigantically powerful, too.

"Ancient monk, those nine beasts used to be gods' beasts, they're extremely strong. The four of us have tried to break out, but we failed. Now, we're five. Let's see if that works," Ju Shen Yan said to Kong Ming. He even called Kong Ming 'ancient monk'.

"Bestial Saints." Kong Ming looked at them and smiled. "I know the Great Vajra Bodhi Mantra Saint's skill. It's useful against beasts."

"Great Vajra Bodhi Mantra?" The others were surprised. Buddhist monks researched the six great divisions in the wheel of karma, they knew many mantras. The Buddha Shrine was one of the three most powerful Shrines, enigmatic and unfathomable. They had existed since the ancient times. Back in the days, they were called the Countless Shrine.

"Great monk, attack!" Xiao Yin smiled. Kong Ming put his palms together, while he was floating in the air. Golden lights illuminated the space around them. A gigantic Bodhi appeared, a hundred zhang tall. He was chanting mantras in a magnificent Brahma voice. The Buddha's halos shone down on the nine beasts.

The beasts suddenly opened their eyes and looked at him coldly. The wolf looked furious and said, "That monk should die!"

The golden Bodhi continued chanting, the soundwaves of the mantra enveloped the beasts. Illusory golden Buddhas appeared behind them.

“How strong!” Was that Bodhi strength an original kind of strength? Maybe the Buddha Shrine was extremely strong because of their original kind of strength. With Celestial Dao and the strength they studied in Buddhist scriptures, they were awesomely strong.

According to legends, the Buddha Shrine had incredible and mysterious Bodhi Saints’ scriptures. Buddhist cultivators had incredible resources.

“Let’s go,” said Lin Feng. The Buddhist lights changed, Lin Feng said, “I’ll stay in the front. Kong Ming, you stay in the middle; Xiao Yin, you stay on the left; Ju Shen Yan, you stay on the right; Liao Feng, you stay in the back.”

“Alright,” said everyone, slowly walking forwards. The five people made a small band, Kong Ming protected them in the middle with his Great Vajra Bodhi Mantra.

A terrifying heavy strength oppressed them. They had the impression they had a mountain on their body. It wasn’t pleasant at all.

“It’s useless!” A water cage appeared around them.

“Deployment!” retorted Lin Feng coldly. Suddenly, the group appeared in an illusion, the water was outside.

Empty space original strength. Even though we can’t teleport, it’s still very useful. Mu Feng understands so many sorts of original strength, thought Ju Shen Yan and Xiao Yin. First, cultivators understood Dao strength, then they modified it, then it became Celestial Dao, then they could make Saint’s techniques. Most people only managed to understand one or two sorts of original strength. But Lin Feng understood so many and he could fuse them

all together with Celestial Dao, it was incredible.

The atmosphere crackled. The beasts easily destroyed Lin Feng's empty space deployment spell.

"Illusion!" shouted Lin Feng coldly. The atmosphere went dark.

"He fused that illusion strength together with Celestial Dao too!!!" Xiao Yin was astonished, her heart pounding violently. Lin Feng's understanding of those different sorts of original strength wasn't deep enough, otherwise, he wouldn't have needed the others at all, he could have passed the exam alone. The difference between someone who understood one kind of original strength and someone who understood three was huge. The only problem was that when understanding several, it was also important to understand one of them at a very high level. Kong Ming, for example, had reached an incredible level with his original strength.

"Eh?" The bestial Saints were stupefied. They were in an illusion and there were Lin Feng figures everywhere.

However, at that moment, one of the bestial Saints' eyes suddenly flashed, the illusion was ready to break apart.

"What a powerful bestial Saint!" whispered Kong Ming. Surprisingly, his Great Vajra Bodhi Mantra wasn't even very useful.

"Cross!" If they attacked the Saints directly, they didn't stand a chance, but if they managed to get through, it'd be enough to pass the test.

Lin Feng and the others moved.

"Hmph!" someone groaned coldly. It felt like the sky had been about to collapse, it was trembling. A gigantic hand appeared and moved towards them, it could crush all five people at once.

"Those bestial Saints have a very deep understanding of Celestial Dao. How do we fight against them? They're so strong. "

The five cultivators realized that the atmosphere had become chaotic, it was difficult to break out. The bestial Saints hadn't even used their full strength.

"I'll take the risk!" said Ju Shen Yan. He was annoyed. He slowly moved forwards alone. He raised his gigantic hands and stars appeared all around. The bestial Saints looked amused. It was a Great Starlight Hand Imprint attack, not bad.

But it was useless.

"Over there!" he shouted explosively. The atmosphere became explosive. His Great Starlight Hand Imprint was suddenly stuck on one side of the space. When Ju Shen Yan saw that, his face turned pale. If his third uncle had been there, he would have been able to pierce through. That was the difference between people who perfectly understood original strength, and those who didn't.

Lin Feng and the others also tried to break out. The four others moved in four different directions, convinced that the beasts wouldn't be able to block everyone.

"Go back!" A gigantic hand moved towards Lin Feng, it contained an incredibly heavy strength.

Lin Feng didn't stop, he accelerated, reaching an incredible speed.

"Slow!" he shouted furiously. The gigantic hand slowed down, Lin Feng released sword energy, rumbling and explosion sounds spread in the air. The gigantic earth hand exploded. Lin Feng pierced through and accelerated again.

"Interesting." The beast looked amused. Surprisingly, Lin Feng had managed to pierce through his earth hand attack. He slowly moved towards Lin Feng, looking like a gigantic tower.

"Imprison!" said Lin Feng suddenly. The beast was suddenly imprisoned in a cage. Even though he was stuck inside for a second only, when he broke free, he sensed a strong wind pass next to



him. Lin Feng flew past him.

“Moron!” Another Saint moved towards Lin Feng.

Only two Saints are left in front of me, if I fly past, I’ll be done!, thought Lin Feng. He condensed a powerful Celestial Dao.

“You can’t escape,” said a Saint coldly, sending Lin Feng into another illusion. Lin Feng pulled a long face; illusions were really convenient to imprison people.

# Chapter 2400: Last Test

---

Lin Feng had an advanced understanding of illusions. He had also studied illusions, but his illusions were more based on deployment spells and the Great Dream of Life strength. He didn't use pure illusion strength, therefore, he couldn't do like the beast and use illusion techniques directly.

In their simplest forms, illusions weren't a direct attack, but more powerful illusion techniques did have deadly attacks.

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and many clones appeared. At the same time, he closed his eyes. Wisdom Kings appeared around him, they looked alive, remaining as motionless as mountains.

“Eh?” At that moment, Lin Feng frowned, and his heart ached. He appeared in the Yun Hai Sect, in the former territory of the Yun Hai Sect, Yun Hai. The Chi Xie troops had surrounded the Yun Hai Sect and killed people.

Lin Feng was there, he couldn't do anything. He was powerless.

“Patriarch!” Lin Feng saw Nan Gong Ling battle to the death.

“Mister Kong! ”

The autumn wind blew and leaves rustled. Lin Feng felt very cold.

The scenery changed, the imperial family of Xue Yue surrounded his father, Meng Qing was injured and turned into a beast again.

“No...” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He was crying. How painful! His heart ached.

“A Mara-robber of the mind!” Lin Feng ground his teeth, trying to leave the illusion. It was an illusion in an illusion, its purpose was to make him suffer mentally. The illusion was extremely powerful, and it also influenced his willpower.

“I need to get out.” Enemies moved towards him to kill him, and

he felt extremely weak. In such illusions, cultivators felt so weak that it became easy to kill them.

“I have a Forbidden Body, I have my own world, I control god strength, I can control anything, including original strength! Now I’m a low-level Saint in the outside world, how could such an illusion stop me? I will reach up to Heaven and I’ll be able to destroy the world!” Lin Feng released god strength, which filled the air. It wasn’t restricted by outside strength.

Lin Feng went back into the initial illusion, he left the haunting one. His god strength surged out.

Lin Feng suddenly opened his eyes and rose up in the air, then he moved towards a gap. In front of him, a young man in white clothes appeared. He looked at Lin Feng sinisterly and said, “You can go, I won’t do anything to you.”

He moved away and opened the way for Lin Feng.

“Eh?” Lin Feng was surprised.

“Thank you very much,” said Lin Feng. The beast’s illusion skills were absolutely incredible. Ordinary low-level Saints couldn’t compete with him, they had no way to free themselves from his illusions. No wonder those beasts could follow gods.

The last beast smiled at Lin Feng, “He let you pass, but it won’t be that easy with me.”

He sounded cold, and looked dangerous.

Lin Feng didn’t say anything, he threw himself at him. The beast in black clothes was surprised. Lin Feng was amusing, but would he manage to escape from the last beast?

“You won’t get past me,” said the beast, smiling coldly. His eyes became pitch-black and vortexes appeared. The vortexes grew bigger and bigger, he wanted to absorb Lin Feng into them.

Lin Feng was startled for a moment. However, he continued

moving forwards and entered the vortexes. He looked quite calm.

Lin Feng didn't stop, he accelerated. He wanted to break free!

Lin Feng released a terrifying sword Qi and took out his God's Sword. He moved forward quickly.

The vortex broke apart, Lin Feng penetrated into the depths of the vortex. Blood splashed, and the beast roared.

"How audacious!" shouted the beast angrily. Lin Feng continued moving forwards. A path appeared in front of him, and he landed at the end of the road.

"Bastard, stupid human! I told you you can't use Saint's Weapons!" shouted the beast in black clothes furiously. His eyes were bloodshot as he glared at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled coldly and said, "I used one, though, so what? I'm already done. I passed the exam."

"Haha! How awesome!" Ju Shen Yan burst into laughter when he saw Lin Feng had broken out. He was back at their initial position. He burst into laughter and said, "Mu Feng, I won't be able to join you any time soon. I'll leave the rest to you."

"Alright, I'll go and see what is there first. I hope we can gather again soon," Lin Feng said to Ju Shen Yan and the others. He turned around and continued on.

——

All the starry paths seemed to converge. A big road appeared.

"Do you have to defeat strong cultivators of the four cultivation levels to pass?" he wondered, continuing on. There were star patterns all around him. After a very long time, Lin Feng finally saw someone.

"Someone arrived before me!" thought Lin Feng. He was surprised. There were a few people in front of him, but those people were just standing there calmly. There was a beast in front

of them, an ox.

Lin Feng was surprised. Was that the terrifyingly strong ox?

Someone turned around and glanced at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was astonished, the cultivator's gaze was impressively strong.

Those people must be high-level Saints at least!, thought Lin Feng. Ju Shen Yan's third uncle, Ju Shen Kui Shan, hadn't even arrived yet.

"That little boy is here, not bad," said someone. "Nine years passed and he's now a low-level Saint, not bad."

"Indeed, not bad," said someone else.

Lin Feng arrived at the crowd. The ox looked at Lin Feng and said, "Congratulations, can you see the great palace behind me?"

"Yes," Lin Feng nodded. He could see a sealed palace.

"The last exam is: you get past me, and you'll be able to go into the great palace," said the ox to Lin Feng.

"Master, what is in the palace?" asked Lin Feng.

"Something you can't imagine," said the ox indifferently, sounding quite calm and serene.

"Little boy, the four of us are some supreme beings of the Godly Grave. I am a supreme being of the Earth area, you can imagine how strong we are," said someone next to Lin Feng. He was wearing worn-out clothes.

Four of the nine supreme beings? They must all be peerless Saints, cultivators at the very top!, thought Lin Feng astonished. Such cultivators were here?

"You probably understand what's going on. We're like you, we want to pass the exam and go in there, but we failed. What do you think there is inside?" asked that person, smiling. Lin Feng's heart twitched. Peerless Saints were at the top of cultivation already, so what such cultivators wanted to achieve was obvious: they wanted

to become gods, spiritual beings, divinities!

The only people who were stronger than them were divinities, gods!

“I’ve heard that if someone controlled two sorts of original strength and managed to make them fuse together, they could become peerless Saints. Masters, is that true?” asked Lin Feng.

“Naturally. But it’s not easy. Many people control five or six sorts of strength which reach their maximum level, but still, they fail to become peerless Saints,” that person smiled. Lin Feng’s heart twitched again. He understood the gaps between the different cultivation levels were immense at such levels.

“It’s not about how many types of original strength you control actually, it’s about their function. If they’re special, then you can become a peerless Saint! For example: life and death, fast and slow, water and fire!”

“I understand. Thank you very much, Master,” Lin Feng nodded. He could imagine how terrifying these four supreme cultivators were!

# Table of Contents

## [Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 2299: Drunk and Sobering Up](#)

[Chapter 2300: Hunting!](#)

[Chapter 2301: Who Wants to Destroy the Ji Clan](#)

[Chapter 2302: The Ji Clan's Destruction](#)

[Chapter 2303: Opening a Sect](#)

[Chapter 2304: Nine Cauldrons For the Champion](#)

[Chapter 2305: Pressure](#)

[Chapter 2306: Astonishing Battle](#)

[Chapter 2307: Ancient World](#)

[Chapter 2308: Mo Jia's Battle Stage](#)

[Chapter 2309: Strong Cultivators from Everywhere](#)

[Chapter 2310: You Failed to Appreciate my Kindness!](#)

[Chapter 2311: Black Dragon](#)

[Chapter 2312: Daimon Draws Attention](#)

[Chapter 2313: Phoenix Blood Talisman](#)

[Chapter 2314: Paying a Visit to the Fire Shrine](#)

[Chapter 2315: Godly Fire Shield](#)

[Chapter 2316: Illusion Deployment Spell](#)

[Chapter 2317: Killing A Strong Cultivator of the Shrine](#)

[Chapter 2318: Suddenly Leaving](#)

[Chapter 2319: People from Everywhere](#)

[Chapter 2320: Invitation Letter](#)

[Chapter 2321: Mu Shan Clan](#)

[Chapter 2322: With Admiration](#)

[Chapter 2323: Exploring the Mystery of the Forbidden Territories](#)

[Chapter 2324: Aomo's Special Power](#)

[Chapter 2325: Negligence](#)

[Chapter 2326: The Grave of Black Phoenix Valley](#)

[Chapter 2327: Danger in the Grave Valley](#)

[Chapter 2328: A Saint?!](#)

[Chapter 2329: Absorbing!](#)

[Chapter 2330: Fighting Against the Black Phoenix Clan](#)

[Chapter 2331: Cage of Darkness](#)  
[Chapter 2332: Going to the Pit of Hell](#)  
[Chapter 2333: Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell](#)  
[Chapter 2334: Terrifying Demons](#)  
[Chapter 2335: Demon Kings in Cliff Caves?](#)  
[Chapter 2336: Great Demon Halberd of Desolation](#)  
[Chapter 2338: King's Grave Palace](#)  
[Chapter 2339: Back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds](#)  
[Chapter 2340: Canonization Area](#)  
[Chapter 2341: Saint Luck](#)  
[Chapter 2342: Fighting Over the Saint Luck](#)  
[Chapter 2344: Killing!](#)  
[Chapter 2345: Guarding the Gateway](#)  
[Chapter 2346: Leaving with the Saint Luck](#)  
[Chapter 2347: Canonization Mountain](#)  
[Chapter 2348: Understanding](#)  
[Chapter 2349: Gathering in the World Clan](#)  
[Chapter 2350: What a Turnaround!](#)  
[Chapter 2351: God Strength](#)  
[Chapter 2352: Studying Peacefully](#)  
[Chapter 2353: Meeting with the Void Phoenix Clan](#)  
[Chapter 2354: Fierce Battle](#)  
[Chapter 2355: If Anyone Dares Stop Me, I'll Kill Them!](#)  
[Chapter 2356: Mysterious Demon Skill](#)  
[Chapter 2357: Taking Control](#)  
[Chapter 2358: Lin Feng Crushes Saints](#)  
[Chapter 2359: Ancient World's Hidden Strength](#)  
[Chapter 2360: Enigmatic and Unfathomable](#)  
[Chapter 2361: Godly Weapon Master](#)  
[Chapter 2362: Three Great Disciples](#)  
[Chapter 2363: Provocation](#)  
[Chapter 2364: Revelation](#)  
[Chapter 2365: Gathering of Strong Cultivators](#)  
[Chapter 2366: Making a Sword](#)  
[Chapter 2367: Tian Ruo Jian](#)  
[Chapter 2368: Joining Hands to Finish the Sword](#)  
[Chapter 2369: Weapon Master Bing's Strength](#)  
[Chapter 2370: Stealing the Sword](#)  
[Chapter 2371: Blood Great Imperial City](#)



[Chapter 2372: Dragon Clan's King Clan](#)  
[Chapter 2373: Celestial Assassins Alliance](#)  
[Chapter 2374: Closely Following](#)  
[Chapter 2375: Arriving on Time](#)  
[Chapter 2376: Chasing](#)  
[Chapter 2377: Tear Into Each Other](#)  
[Chapter 2378: Great Battle Against Qiong Yu!](#)  
[Chapter 2379: Forbidden territory – Godly Grave](#)  
[Chapter 2380: Have the Gods Really Vanished?](#)  
[Chapter 2381: Invasion](#)  
[Chapter 2382: You Want To Die!](#)  
[Chapter 2383: War's Prologue](#)  
[Chapter 2384: Traveling Alone](#)  
[Chapter 2385: Traveling and Killing!](#)  
[Chapter 2386: Pāramitā](#)  
[Chapter 2387: Understanding Slowness](#)  
[Chapter 2388: Understanding Speed](#)  
[Chapter 2389: Giant Gods Clan](#)  
[Chapter 2390: Ju Shen Kui Shan](#)  
[Chapter 2391: Historical Remains](#)  
[Chapter 2392: Gods' Traces](#)  
[Chapter 2393: God's Exam](#)  
[Chapter 2394: Cooperation](#)  
[Chapter 2395: Star Gate](#)  
[Chapter 2396: Seven Years](#)  
[Chapter 2397: God's Beast](#)  
[Chapter 2398: Difficult to Break Out](#)  
[Chapter 2399: Breaking Out](#)  
[Chapter 2400: Last Test](#)